

The Library of



Crosby Hall

D.3. 942.05

FRO

5192


HISTORY OF ENGLAND

FROM

THE FALL OF WOLSEY
TO THE DEFEAT OF THE SPANISH ARMADA.

VOLUME VII.

ELIZABETH.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

HISTORY OF ENGLAND

FROM

THE FALL OF WOLSEY

TO

THE DEFEAT OF THE SPANISH ARMADA.

BY

JAMES ANTHONY FROUDE, M.A.

REGIUS PROFESSOR OF MODERN HISTORY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD.

VOLUME VII.

ELIZABETH.

New Edition.

LONDON:

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.

1893.

942.05

4067

RICHARD CLAY & SONS, LIMITED,
LONDON & BUNGAY.

CONTENTS OF VOLUME VII.

CHAPTER XII.

THE ENGLISH AT HAVRE.

	PAGE
Reform of the English Currency	2
Condition of England	9
Character of Cecil	10
Social Disorganization	12
State of the Clergy	14
Deans and Chapters	14
Ruinous condition of the Parish Churches	16
Temper of the Country Clergy	19
Difficulties of the Bishops	20
The English Catholics apply to the Pope for permission to attend the English Service	22
The Request is Refused	24
Sir N. Throgmorton is taken Prisoner by the Duke of Guise	26
The English Catholics are threatened with Persecution	29
Meeting of Parliament	30
Debate on the Succession	33
Penal Laws against the Catholics	35
Petition to the Queen to name a Successor	39
Trial of Bonner	44
Story of Châtellar	46
Murder of the Duke of Guise	48

	PAGE
Proposed Marriage between Mary Stuart and Don Carlos	51
Elizabeth wishes her to marry Lord Robert Dudley ..	52
Speech of the Queen in Parliament	56
Proceedings of Convocation	58
The Civil War in France is brought to an end ..	62
Elizabeth refuses to evacuate Havre	63
War with France	66
Siege of Havre	67
The Plague attacks the Garrison	68
Surrender of Havre	72
The Plague in London	74
Philip consents to the Marriage between the Queen of Scots and Don Carlos	77
Death of de Quadra	82
The Marriage of the Queen of Scots with a safe person is made a Condition of her Recognition	85
Knox protests against her Marriage with a Catholic ..	88
He sends warning to Cecil	90
Relations between England and Spain	93
The Carlos Project cools	96
Elizabeth again attempts to work on the Queen of Scots	97

CHAPTER XLII.

SHAN O'NEIL.

Ireland under Queen Mary	101
Habits and Character of the People	102
The especial Wretchedness of the Pale	104
Report of 1559	110
The King of Spain declines the Advances of the Irish Chiefs	111
The Scotch in Antrim	111
The O'Neil and his Children	112

CONTENTS.

vii

	PAGE
Election of Shan O'Neil by Tanistry	114
Schemes of Shan for the Ulster Sovereignty ..	116
Philip again discourages an Irish Rebellion ..	118
Loyalty of the Earl of Kildare	119
Letter of Shan O'Neil to Elizabeth	120
The English Government proposes to Invade Ulster ..	122
Shan carries off the Countess of Argyle	124
Skirmish at Armagh	125
Defeat of the Earl of Sussex	127
Attempt to procure the Assassination of Shan ..	131
Second Invasion of Ulster	133
Shan goes to London	135
Shan at the Court of Elizabeth	136
Murder of the Baron of Dungannon	140
Indentures between Shan and Elizabeth, and return of Shan to Ireland	142
Fresh Treachery of Sussex	143
Shan again Rebels	145
The Countess	148
Disagreements between the Irish Council and the Earl of Sussex	149
Campaign in Ulster	150
Irish Successes	152
Second attempt to Assassinate Shan	156
Triumph of Shan	160
Inquiry into the Disorders of the Pale	161
Sir Nicholas Arnold	162
Desolation of Munster	164

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE EMBASSY OF DE SILVA.

War with France	166
Negotiations for Peace	169

	PAGE
The Peace of Troyes	176
Conspiracies to Murder Elizabeth	177
Defences of England	178
The French Embassy at Bekesbourne	179
Improved Relations with Spain	181
The Succession	182
Mary Stuart and Lord Robert Dudley	183
The Earl of Bothwell	185
Mary Stuart prefers Darnley	188
Elizabeth urges Lord Robert	188
Book of John Hales on the Succession	191
Objections to Darnley in Scotland	193
Guzman de Silva comes to England	195
Reception of de Silva at the Court	196
A Party at Richmond	199
The Dudley Marriage	202
Elizabeth at Cambridge	203
Disorders in the Church	205
Fresh thoughts of the Archduke Charles	207
Sir James Melville	209
Lord Robert Dudley is created Earl of Leicester	213
Delay of Parliament	215
Mary Stuart's Friends in England	215
Conversation between Elizabeth and de Silva	217
The Scotch Succession	220
Instructions to Bedford and Randolph	221
State of Feeling in Scotland	224
Conference at Berwick	226
Final Demands of the Scots	229
Reply of Cecil	231
David Rizzio	233
Affected Compliance of Mary Stuart	234
Proposed Marriage between Elizabeth and the King of France	237
Darnley goes to Scotland	244

CONTENTS.

	ix
	PAGE
The Settlement of the Succession is postponed . .	246
Discipline of the Church of England	249
Marriage of the Clergy	250
The Queen and the Bishops	251
The Queen insists on the Observance of the Act of Uniformity	252
The Queen at Paul's Cross	256
Archbishop Parker remonstrates	257
Ecclesiastical Commission at Lambeth	259
Riots in London	260
Letter of Parker to Cecil	261
Alarm in Scotland	263
Scene at the Market Cross at Edinburgh . .	264
The Queen of Scots resolves to marry Darnley . .	265
Approbation of Philip and the Duke of Alva . . .	268
Agitation at the English Court	269
Attitude of Murray	272
Sir Nicholas Throgmorton at Stirling	276
Character of Darnley	279
Probable Consequence of the Darnley Marriage . .	281
Resolutions of Council	286
A Game at Chess	289
The Archduke again	291

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE DARNLEY MARRIAGE.

State of Parties in Scotland	292
Strength of Mary Stuart's Position	294
Lennox and Darnley are ordered to return to England	297
Elizabeth invites the Scotch Protestants to Rebel, and promises to assist them	299
Measures in the General Assembly	301
Renewed Promises of Support from England . .	303

	PAGE
Randolph expostulates with Mary Stuart	308
Lennox and Darnley throw off their Allegiance to Elizabeth	309
Marriage of Mary Stuart and Darnley	311
Mission of Tamworth	313
Irresolution of Elizabeth	317
The Lords of the Congregation in arms	318
Mary Stuart takes the Field	320
Retreat of the Lords	320
Elizabeth determines to Break her Promise	323
The Archduke	326
Marriage of Lady Mary Grey	327
Debate in the English Council	331
Resolution not to interfere in Scotland	334
The Lords of the Congregation at Dumfries	335
Flight of the Lords into England	338
Remonstrance of the Earl of Bedford	338
Murray goes to London	343
Reception of Murray by the Queen	344
Private Protest of Murray	349
Letter of Elizabeth to Mary Stuart	350
Questionable Instructions to Randolph	351
Anticipated consequence of Elizabeth's Conduct	353
Resentment of Argyle	355
Advice of Sir N. Throgmorton to Mary Stuart	357
Mischievous Influence of Rizzio	359
Mary Stuart applies for help to Philip	360
Philip communicates with the Pope	361
Elizabeth begins to recover herself	365
Catholic League in Europe	368
Differences between Mary Stuart and her Husband	370
The Crown Matrimonial	371
Mary Stuart and Rizzio	372
Divisions among the Scotch Protestants	374
Conspiracy to murder Rizzio and restore Murray	377

CONTENTS.

xi
PAGE

Randolph is expelled from Scotland	..	..	379
Sketch of the Plot	..	..	382
Intended Attainder of Murray	..	..	383
The Queen's Rooms at Holyrood	..	..	385
Murder of Rizzio	..	..	387
Return of Murray	..	..	396
Escape of Mary Stuart to Dunbar	..	..	401
Return in form to Edinburgh	..	..	404
Flight of the Conspirators	..	..	404
Letter of Morton and Ruthven to Cecil	..	..	405

CHAPTER XLV.

THE MURDER OF DARNLEY.

Popularity of Mary Stuart in England	..	..	407
General Character of Elizabeth's Policy	..	..	409
Prospects of the Queen of Scots	..	..	411
Treachery of Darnley	..	..	415
Argyle threatens to join Shan O'Neil	..	..	417
A Spy at Holyrood	..	..	420
Letter of Elizabeth to the Queen of Scots	..	..	422
Birth of James Stuart	..	..	424
The Archduke or Leicester	..	..	425
Increasing strength of Mary Stuart's Party	..	..	430
Elizabeth visits Oxford	..	..	432
Position of Darnley in Scotland	..	..	436
Mary Stuart and Bothwell	..	..	437
Intended Flight of Darnley to England	..	..	441
The Scotch Council at Holyrood	..	..	442
Meeting of the English Parliament	..	..	445
The Bishops' Bill	..	..	445
The Succession	..	..	448
The Queen Promises to Marry	..	..	449
The Queen and de Silva	..	..	451

	PAGE
Parliament resolves to Address the Queen on the Succession	454
Presentation of the Address	456
Reply of Elizabeth	458
Irritation of the House of Commons	461
Question of Privilege	463
Remonstrance	464
Speech of Mr Dalton	466
The Queen yields	468
Subsidy Bill	469
The Thirty-nine Articles	473
De Silva and Elizabeth	475
Proposed Covenant between the two Queens	481
Close of the Session	483
Speech of Elizabeth	484
The Queen of Scots at Jedburgh	488
Her dangerous Illness	489
Differences with Darnley	491
Consultation at Craigmillar	492
Bond for the Destruction of Darnley	496
Baptism of James, and recall of Morton	498
Illness of Darnley at Glasgow	499
Mary Stuart visits him	503
Letter to Bothwell	508
Plan of Kirk-a-Field	512
Darnley is removed thither from Glasgow	513
The Last Night	518
Murder of Darnley	521
Effect on the Catholics in England	523

CHAPTER XLVI.

DEATH OF O'NEIL.

The English Army in Ireland	525
Sir T. Stukeley	525

CONTENTS.

xiii

PAGE

Irish Policy of the Tudor Sovereigns	..	..	528
Projects for Irish Reform	..	..	529
The Primacy	..	..	531
Shan O'Neil defeats the Scots	..	..	533
Invasion of Connaught	..	..	534
Sir Henry Sidney appointed Deputy	..	..	536
The Presidency of Munster	..	..	539
Sidney lands in Ireland	..	..	541
Shan O'Neil at Home	..	..	544
Sidney demands Men and Money	..	..	546
Anger and Hesitation of Elizabeth	..	..	548
Alliance between O'Neil and Argyle	..	..	550
Shan O'Neil writes for Assistance to France	..	..	551
Sidney ineffectually demands his Recall	..	..	552
Plan for a Campaign	..	..	554
The Ormond and Desmond Controversy	..	..	557
Troops are sent from England under Col. Edward Randolph	..	..	558
Desmond refuses to join Shan	..	..	560
The Antrim Scots	..	..	560
Sidney Invades Ulster	..	..	562
Col. Randolph at Derry	..	..	564
Success of Sidney	..	..	565
Ill-humour of Elizabeth and Advice of Cecil	..	..	566
Defeat of Shan and Death of Col. Randolph	..	..	570
The Scots attack Shan	..	..	570
Pestilence at Derry	..	..	571
Final Ruin of the Settlement	..	..	574
Shan's Last Battle	..	..	575
Death of Shan	..	..	578

CHAPTER XLI.

THE ENGLISH AT HAVRE.

IN the face of enormous difficulties Elizabeth and her ministers had restored England to its rank in Europe. They had baffled Spain, wrested Scotland from the Guises, and played with accomplished dexterity on the rivalries and jealousies of the Romanist powers. By skill and good fortune they had brought the Catholics at home to an almost desperate submission; and now, with the country armed to the teeth, they were subsidizing a Protestant rebellion in France, and fastening themselves once more upon the French soil.

The expenses of so aggressive and dangerous a policy had been great, yet Elizabeth's talent for economy had saved her from deep involvements; and while courtiers whined over her parsimony, the burden of public debt bequeathed by Mary had received no increase, and was even somewhat diminished. The wounds were still green which twenty years of religious and social confusion had inflicted on the commonwealth; but here too there were visible symptoms of amendment: above all,

the poisonous gangrene of the currency, the shame and scandal of the late reigns, had been completely healed.

No measure in Elizabeth's reign has received more deserved praise than the reformation of the coinage. The applause indeed has at times overpassed her merit ; for some historians have represented it as accomplished at the cost of the Crown ; whereas the expense, even to the calling in and recoinng the base money, was borne to the last penny by the country. Elizabeth and her advisers deserve the credit only of having looked in the face, and of having found the means of dealing with, a complicated and most difficult problem.

When the ministers of Edward the Sixth arrived at last at the conviction that the value of a shilling depended on the amount of pure silver contained in it, and that the base money therefore with which the country had been flooded must be called down to its natural level, the people it was roughly calculated had lost something over a million pounds. An accurate computation however was impossible, for the issues of the Government, large as they were, had been exceeded by those of private coining establishments in England and abroad, where the pure coin left in circulation was melted down and debased.

The evil had been rather increased than diminished by the first efforts at reformation. The current money was called down to an approach to its value in bullion, and it was then left in circulation under the impression that it would no longer be pernicious ; but the pure

shillings of Edward's last years could not live beside the bad, and still continued either to leave the country or to be made away with by the coiners. The good resolutions of further reform with which Mary commenced her reign disappeared as her finances became straitened; the doctrinal virtues superseded the moral; and relapsing upon her father's and her brother's evil precedents, she poured out a fresh shower of money containing but three ounces of silver with nine of alloy, and attempted to force it once more on the people at its nominal value.

The coining system acquired at once fresh impetus; and Elizabeth on coming to the throne found prices everywhere in confusion. Amidst the variety of standards and the multitude of coins recognized by the law, the common business of life was almost at a stand-still. Of current silver there was such as remained of Edward's pure shillings, containing eleven ounces and two penny-weights of silver in the pound; the shillings of the first year of Mary containing ten ounces; and the old shillings of Henry the Eighth containing eleven ounces.

Of testers or sixpences, the coin in common use, there were four sorts: the tester of eight ounces of silver in the pound, the tester of six, the tester of four, and the tester of three; with groats, rose pence, and other small coins, of which the purity varied in the same proportion. The testers of eight, six, and four ounces had been issued originally as shillings, and had been called down to sixpences. These three kinds were all of equæ value, 'for

that which lacked in fineness exceeded in weight,'¹ and they were really worth fourpence halfpenny. The fourth kind, the tester of three ounces, was worth only twopence halfpenny; but 'the worst passed current with the best' in the payment of the statute wages of the artisan or labourer. The working man was robbed without knowing how or why, while the tradesmen and farmers, aware that a sixpence was not a sixpence, defied the feeble laws which attempted to regulate the prices of produce, charged for their goods on a random scale, and secured themselves against loss by the breadth of margin which they claimed against the consumer.

The earliest extant paper on the subject in the reign of Elizabeth is the composition of the Queen herself. With the rise in prices the landowners generally had doubled their rents, while the rents of the Crown lands had remained unchanged. The ounce of silver in the currency of the Plantagenets, instead of being coined into the five shillings of later usage, had been divided only into a quarter of a mark, or three shillings and four pence. Elizabeth proposed to return to the earlier scale, and retaining the same nominal rent of which she found herself in receipt, to allow 'the tenants of improved rents to answer their lords after the rate of the abatement of value for every pound a mark;'² while

¹ Paper on Coinage: endorsed in Cecil's hand, Mr Stanley's opinion: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xiii.

² 'Wherein,' she said, 'the lord shall not be much hindered, being

able to perform almost every way as much with the mark as he was with the pound.'—(Opinion of her Majesty for reducing the state of the coin, 1559): *Domestic MSS. Elizabeth*.

all out-standing debts or contracts might be graduated in the same proportion.

The objections to this project, it is easy to see, would have been infinite. It fell through—was heard of no more. But in their first moments of serious leisure, immediately after the Scotch war, in September 1560, the council determined at all hazards to call in the entire currency, and supply its place with new coin of a pure and uniform standard. Prices of all kinds could then adjust themselves without further confusion.

The first necessity was to ascertain the proportions of good and bad money which was in circulation. A public inquiry could not be ventured for fear of creating a panic, and the following rudely ingenious method was suggested as likely to give an approximation to the truth. ‘Some witty person was to go among the butchers of London, and to them rather than to any other, because they retailed of their flesh to all manner of persons in effect—so that thereby of great likelihood came to their hands of all sorts of money of base coin : and to go to a good many of them—thirty-six at least—and after this manner, because they should not understand the meaning thereof, nor have no suspicion in that behalf—requiring all of them to put all the money that they should receive the next forenoon by itself, and likewise that in the afternoon by itself, and they should have other money for the same ; promising every one of them a quart of wine for their labours, because that there was a good wager laid whether they received more money in the afternoon—whereof nine score pounds

being received of the butchers, after the manner aforesaid, being all put together, then all the shillings of three ounces fine and under, but not above, should be tried and called out—as well counterfeits after the same stamp and standard as others; and after the rest of the money might be perused and compared one with another.’¹

Either by this or some other plan, the worst coin in circulation was found to be about a fourth of the whole, while the entire mass of base money of all standards was guessed roughly at 1,200,000*l.* How to deal with it was the next question. Sir Thomas Stanley offered several schemes to the choice of the Government.

1. The testers, worse and better together, might be called down from sixpence to fourpence; a period might be fixed within which they must be brought to the Mint, and paid for at that price. The 1,200,000*l.* would be bought in for 800,000*l.*; the bullion which it contained, being recoined and reissued at eleven ounces fine, would be worth 837,500*l.*; and the balance of 37,500*l.* in favour of the Government, together with the value of the alloy, would more than cover the expenses of the process. If the Queen wished to make a better thing of it, the worst money might be sent to Ireland, as the general dirt heap for the outcasting of England’s vileness.

2. The bad coin might be called in simply and paid

¹ ‘A manner to make a proof how many sorts of standards are current commonly within this realm:’ *Lansdowne MSS.* 4.

for at the Mint according to its bullion value, a percentage being allowed for the refining.

3. If the Queen would run the risk she might relieve her subjects more completely by giving the full value of fourpence halfpenny for the sixpence, three halfpence for the half groat, and so on through the whole coinage, allowing three-quarters of the nominal value, and taking her chance—still with the help of Ireland—of escaping unharmed.¹

Swiftess of action, resolution, and a sufficient number of men of probity to receive and pay for the moneys all over the country, were the great requisites.² The people were expected to submit to the further loss without complaint if they could purchase with it a certain return to security and order. Neither of Stanley's alternatives were accepted literally. The standard for Ireland had always been something under that of England. But the Queen would not consent to inflict more suffering on that country than she could conveniently help. The Irish coin should share in the common restoration, and be brought back to its normal proportions.

On 27th of September the evils of an uneven and vitiated currency were explained by proclamation. The people were told that the Queen would bear the cost of refining and recoinng the public moneys if they on their side would bear cheerfully their share of the loss; and they were invited to bring in and pay over to persons

¹ Mr Stanley's opinion: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xiii. *Rolls House*.

² Bacon to Cecil, October 14, 1560: *MS. Ibid.* vol. xiv.

appointed to receive it in every market town the impure silver in their hands. For the three better sorts of tester the Crown would pay the full value of fourpence halfpenny, and for the half groats and pence in proportion. For the fourth and most debased kind, which was easily distinguishable, it would pay twopence farthing.

To stimulate the collection a bounty of threepence was promised on every pound's worth of silver brought in. Refiners were sent for from Germany; the Mint at the Tower was set to work under Stanley and Sir Thomas Fleetwood; and in nine months the impure stream was washed clean, and a silver coinage of the present standard was circulating once more throughout the realm.

Either a large fraction of the base money was not brought in, or the estimate of the quantity in circulation had been exaggerated. The entire weight collected was 631,950 lbs.; 638,000*l.* (in money) was paid for it by the receivers of the Mint, and it yielded when melted down 244,416 lbs. of silver, worth in the new coinage of eleven ounces fine 733,248*l.* So far therefore there was a balance in favour of the Crown of 95,135*l.*; but the cost of collection, the premiums, and other collateral losses reduced the margin to 49,776*l.* 9*s.* 3*d.* Thirty-five thousand six hundred and eighty-six pounds, fifteen shillings and sixpence (35,686*l.* 15*s.* 6*d.*) was paid for the refining and re-minting; and when the whole transaction was completed Elizabeth was left with a balance in her favour of fourteen thousand and seventy-nine

pounds, thirteen shillings, and ninepence (14,079*l.* 13*s.* 9*d.*)¹

Thus was this great matter ended, not as it has been represented by means of two hundred thousand crowns raised by Gresham in Flanders. The two hundred thousand crowns indisputably were raised there, but it was to buy saltpetre, and corselets, and harquebusses; and the reform of the coin cost nothing beyond the thought expended on it.

But the country was sick of other disorders less easy to heal. The silent change in the relations of rich and poor, the eviction of small tenants, the erection of a new race of men on the ruins of the abbeys, whose eyes were more on earth than heaven, the universal restlessness of mind, and the uprooting of old thought on all subjects divine or human, had confused the ancient social constitution of the English nation. Customs and opinions had vanished, and laws based upon them had become useless or mischievous. The under-roll of the peasant insurrection was still perceptible in the weakness of the Government and the anarchy of the country population.

The petty copyholders dispossessed of their tenures had contracted vagrant habits; the roads were patrolled by highwaymen who took purses in broad daylight in the streets of London itself; and against these symp-

¹ 'Charges of refining the base money received into the Mint since Michaelmas 1560 until Michaelmas 1561, and of the charges of the workmanship on coining to fine money thereof made; with a note of the provisions and other charges incident to the same, the waste of melting and blemishing being borne.' --*Lansdowne MSS.* 4.

toms was contending the reactionary old English spirit which had gathered strength under Mary, the single good result of her reign. Grass lands were again browned under tillage, farm-houses were re-built, and the small yeomen fostered into life again ; but a vague unrest prevailed everywhere. Elizabeth's prospects during her first years were so precarious that no one felt confident for the future ; and the energy of the country hung distracted, with no clear perception what to do or in what direction to turn.

The problem for statesmen was to discern among the new tendencies of the nation how much was sound and healthy, how much must be taken up into the constitution of the State before the disturbed elements settled into form again.

A revolution had passed over England of which the religious change was only a single feature. New avenues of thought were opening on all sides with the growth of knowledge ; and as the discoveries of Columbus and Copernicus made their way into men's minds, they found themselves, not in any metaphor, but in plain and literal prose, in a new heaven and a new earth. How to send the fresh blood permeating healthily through the veins, how to prevent it from wasting itself in anarchy and revolution—these were the large questions which Elizabeth's ministers had to solve.

In this as in all else Cecil was the presiding spirit. Everywhere among the State papers of these years Cecil's pen is ever visible, Cecil's mind predominant. In the records of the daily meetings of the council

Cecil's is the single name which is never missed. In the Queen's cabinet or in his own, sketching Acts of Parliament, drawing instructions for ambassadors, or weighing on paper the opposing arguments at every crisis of political action; corresponding with archbishops on liturgies and articles, with secret agents in every corner of Europe or with foreign ministers in every court, Cecil is to be found ever restlessly busy; and sheets of paper densely covered with brief memoranda remain among his manuscripts to show the vastness of his daily labour and the surface over which he extended his control. From the great duel with Rome to the terraces and orange groves at Burgbley nothing was too large for his intellect to grasp, nothing too small for his attention to condescend to consider.

In July 1561, under Cecil's direction, letters went round the southern and western counties desiring the magistrates to send in reports on the working of the laws which affected the daily life of the people, on the wages statutes, the acts of apparel, the poor laws, the tillage and pasture laws, the act for 'the maintenance of archery,' and generally on the condition of the population. A certain Mr Tyldsley was commissioned privately to follow the circulars and observe how far the magistrates either reported the truth or were doing their duty; and though the reports are lost Tyldsley's letters remain, with his opinion on the character of the English gentry.

If that opinion was correct the change of creed had not improved them. The people were no longer trained

in the use of arms because the gentlemen refused to set the example. 'For tillage it were plain sacrilege to interfere with it, the offenders being all gentlemen of the richer sort;' while 'the alehouses'—'the very stock and stay of false thieves and vagabonds,' were supported by them for the worst of motives. The peers had the privilege of importing wine free of duty for the consumption of their households. By their patents they were able to extend the right to others under shelter of their name; and the tavern-keepers 'were my lord's servants, or my master's servants; yea, and had such kind of licenses, and license out of license to them and their deputies and assignees, that it was some danger to meddle with them.'¹ The very threat of interference either with that or any other misdemeanour in high places caused Cecil to be generally detested.² Go

¹ The intention of the exemption had been the encouragement of 'hospitality' in the great country houses. Times were changing, and the old-fashioned 'open house' was no longer the rule. Without abolishing the privilege the council restricted the quantity which each nobleman was allowed to import. Dukes and archbishops were allowed ten pipes annually; marquises nine pipes; earls, viscounts, barons, and bishops, six, seven, and eight.—*Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xx.

² 'This be you most sure of, that as much evil as can be invented by the devilish wit of them that be nought is spoken against you.

'It is not yet four days past since one of my men said unto me,

'Sir, would to God ye would not meddle so much as ye do, nor be so earnest;' for, said he, 'if ye heard so much as I do hear, ye would marvel. For even they that do speak you most fairest to your face do name you behind your back to be an extreme and cruel man, with a great deal more than shall need to rehearse; and they say,' said he, 'that all these doings is long of Mr Secretary Cecil. I do know,' said he, 'all this to be truth, for I do hear it amongst their servants, and belike they have heard it of their masters at one time or another. And further,' said he, 'when I was last in London, there was a business in hand as touching what wages watermen should take going from

where he would, Tyldsley said, 'he could find no man earnestly bent to put laws in execution;' 'every man let slip and pass forth:' so that 'for his part he did look for nothing less than the subversion of the realm, to which end all things were working.'

Equally unsatisfactory were the reports of the state of religion. The constitution of the Church offended the Puritans; the Catholics were as yet unreconciled to the forms which had been maintained to conciliate them; and to the seeming cordiality with which the Liturgy was at first received, a dead inertia soon succeeded in which nothing lived but self-interest. The bishops and the higher clergy were the first to set an example of evil. The friends of the Church of England must acknowledge with sorrow that within two years of its establishment the prelates were alienating the estates in which they possessed but a life interest—granting long leases and taking fines for their own advantage. The council had to inflict upon them the disgrace of a rebuke for neglecting the duties of common probity.¹

The marriage of the clergy was a point on which the people were peculiarly sensitive.² A mistress might be

one place to another, which thing was much cried out upon; and they say that Mr Cecil was all the doer of that matter too. Surely,' said he, 'he is not beloved; and therefore for God's sake, sir, be you ware. I have not spoken any of this to the intent that I would have you either to leave off or to slack any part of all your godly doings, but rather if I could to sharp you further against

the devil and all his wicked instruments.'—Mr Tyldsley's Report, September 3, 1561: *Domestic MSS.*, *Elizabeth*, vol. xix.

¹ Articles for the Bishops' obligations, 1560: *Domestic MSS. Elizabeth*.

² The frequent surnames of Clark, Parsons, Deacon, Archdeacon, Dean, Prior, Abbot, Bishop, Frere, and Monk, are memorials of the con-

winked at; lawful marriage was intolerable, and especially intolerable for members of cathedrals and collegiate bodies who occupied the houses and retained the form of the religious orders. While therefore canons and prebends were entitled to take wives if they could not do without them, they would have done better had they taken chary advantage of their liberty. To the Anglo-Catholic as well as the Romanist a married priest was a scandal, and a married cathedral dignitary an abomination.

‘For the avoiding of such offences as were daily conceived by the presence of families of wives and children within colleges, contrary to the ancient and comely order of the same,’ Elizabeth, in 1560, forbade deans and canons to have their wives residing with them within the cathedral closes under pain of forfeiting ‘their promotions.’ Cathedrals and colleges, she said, had been founded ‘to keep societies of learned men professing study and prayer;’ and the rooms intended for students were not to be sacrificed to women and children.¹

The Church dignitaries treated the Queen’s injunction as the country gentlemen treated the statutes. Deans and canons, by the rules of their foundations, were directed to dine and keep hospitality in their common hall. Those among them who had married broke up

cubinage which was generally practised in England by the clergy so long as they were forbidden to marry.

¹ Proclamation by the Queen for the eviction of wives out of colleges (In Cecil’s hand): *Domestic MSS.*, *Elizabeth*, vol. xix.

into their separate houses, where, in spite of Elizabeth, they maintained their families. The unmarried ‘tabled abroad at the ale-houses.’ The singing-men of the choirs became the prebends’ private servants, ‘having the Church stipend for their wages.’ The cathedral plate adorned the prebendal side-boards and dinner-tables. The organ-pipes were melted into dishes for their kitchens; the organ-frames were carved into bedsteads, where the wives reposed beside their reverend lords; while the copes and vestments were coveted for their gilded embroidery, and were slit into gowns and bodices. Having children to provide for, and only a life-interest in their revenues, the chapters like the bishops cut down their woods, and worked their fines, their leases, their escheats and wardships, for the benefit of their own generation. Sharing their annual plunder, they ate and drank and enjoyed themselves while their opportunity remained; for the times were dangerous, ‘and none could tell what should be after them.’

‘They decked their wives so finely for the stuff and fashion of their garments as none were so fine and trim.’ By her dress and ‘her gait’ in the street ‘the priest’s wife was known from a hundred other women;’ while in the congregations and in the cathedrals they were distinguished ‘by placing themselves above all other the most ancient and honourable in their cities;’ ‘being the Church—as the priests’ wives termed it—their own Church; and the said wives did call and take all things belonging to their church and corporation as their own;’ as ‘their houses,’ ‘their gates,’ ‘their porters,’ ‘their

servants,' 'their tenants,' 'their manors,' 'their lordships,' 'their woods,' 'their corn.'¹

Celibacy had been found an unwholesome restriction; married clergymen might have been expected to do their duties the better rather than the worse for the companionship; and such complaints as these might be regarded as the inevitable but worthless strictures of malice and superstition. But it was not wholly so. While the shepherds were thus dividing the fleeces the sheep were perishing. In many dioceses in England a third of the parishes were left without a clergyman, resident or non-resident. In 1561 there were
 1561. in the Archdeaconry of Norwich eighty parishes where there was no resident incumbent; in the Archdeaconry of Suffolk a hundred and thirty parishes were almost or entirely in the same condition.² In some of these churches a curate attended on Sundays. In most of them the voices of the priests were silent in the desolate aisles. The children grew up unbaptized; the dead buried their dead. At St Helen's in the Isle of Wight the parish church had been built upon the shore for the convenience of vessels lying at the anchorage. The Provost and Fellows of Eton were the patrons, and the benefice was among the wealthiest in their gift; but the church was a ruin through which the wind and the rain made free passage. The parish-

¹ Complaints against the Dean and Chapter of Worcester: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xxviii.

² STRYPE'S *Annals of the Reformation*, vol. i.

ioners 'were fain to bury their corpses themselves.' And 'joining as it did hard to one of the chief roads of England, where all sorts of nations were compelled to take succour and touch, the shameful using of the same church caused the Queen's council and the whole realm to run in slander.'¹

'It breedeth,' said Elizabeth in a remonstrance which she addressed to Archbishop Parker, 'no small offence and scandal to see and consider upon the one part the curiosity and cost bestowed by all sorts of men upon their private houses; and on the other part the unclean and negligent order and spare keeping of the houses of prayer, by permitting open decays and ruins of coverings of walls and windows, and by appointing unmeet and unseemly tables with foul cloths, for the communion of the sacrament; and generally leaving the place of prayer desolate of all cleanliness and of meet ornament for such a place, whereby it might be known a place provided for divine service.'²

Nor again were the Protestant foreigners who had taken refuge in England any special credit to the Reformation. These exiled saints were described by the Bishop of London as 'a marvellous colluvies of evil persons, for the most part *facinorosi, ebriosi, et sectarii*.' Between prelates reprimanded by the council for fraudulent administration of their estates, chapters bent on

¹ Presentation of George Oglander: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth, Rolls House*.

² The Queen to the Archbishop of Canterbury, 1560 (Cecil's hand): *Domestic MSS.*, vol. xv.

justifying Cranmer's opinion of such bodies—that 'they were good vianders, and good for nothing else'—and a clergy among whom the only men who had any fear of God were the unmanageable and dangerous Puritans, the Church of England was doing little to make the Queen or the country enamoured of it. Torn up as it had been by the very roots and but lately replanted, its hanging boughs and drooping foliage showed that as yet it had taken no root in the soil, and there seemed too strong a likelihood that, notwithstanding its ingenious framework and comprehensive formulas, it would wither utterly away.

'Our religion is so abused,' wrote Lord Sussex to Cecil in 1562, 'that the Papists rejoice; the neuters do not mislike change, and the few zealous professors lament the lack of purity. The people without discipline, utterly devoid of religion, come to divine service as to a May-game; the ministers for disability and greediness be had in contempt; and the wise fear more the impiety of the licentious professors than the superstition of the erroneous Papists. God hold his hand over us, that our lack of religious hearts do not breed in the mean time his wrath and revenge upon us.'¹

Covetousness and impiety moreover were not the only dangers. The submission of the clergy to the changes was no proof of their cordial acceptance of them. The majority were interested only in their benefices, which they retained and neglected. A great many con-

¹ Sussex to Cecil, July 22, 1562; from Chester: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

tinued Catholics in disguise: they remained at their post scarcely concealing, if concealing at all, their true creed, and were supported in open contumacy by the neighbouring noblemen and gentlemen.

In a general visitation in July 1561 the clergy were required to take the oath of allegiance. The Bishop of Carlisle reported that thirteen or fourteen of his rectors and vicars refused to appear, while in many churches in his diocese mass continued to be said under the countenance and open protection of Lord Dacres: and the clergy of the diocese generally he described as wicked 'imps of Antichrist;' 'ignorant, stubborn, and past measure false and subtle.' Fear only, he said, would make them obedient, and Lord Cumberland and Lord Dacres would not allow him to meddle with them.¹

The Border of Wales was as critical as the Border of Scotland. In August of the same year 'the Popish justices' of Hereford commanded the observance of St Lawrence's day as a holyday. On the eve no butcher in the town ventured to sell meat; on the day itself 'no gospeller' durst work in his occupation or open his shop. A party of recusant priests from Devonshire were received in state by the magistrates, carried through the streets in procession, and so 'feasted and magnified as Christ himself could not have been more reverentially entertained.'²

In September, Bishop Jewel going to Oxford reported the fellows of the college so malignant that 'if he had

¹ The Bishop of Carlisle to Cecil: *Domestic MSS.*, vol. xviii.

² The Bishop of Hereford to Cecil: *Domestic MSS.*, vol. xix.

proceeded peremptorily as he might,' he would not have left two in any one of them ; and here it was not a peer or a magistrate that Jewel feared, but one higher than both, for the Colleges appealed to the Queen against him ; and Jewel could but entreat Cecil with many anxious misgivings to stand by him. He could but protest humbly that he was only acting for God's glory.¹

The Bishop of Winchester found his people 'obstinately grovelled in superstition and Popery, lacking not priests to inculcate the same daily in their heads ;' and himself so unable to provide ministers to teach them, that he petitioned for permission to unite his parishes and throw two or three into one.²

The Bishop of Durham called a clergyman before him to take the oath. The clergyman said out before a crowd, 'who much rejoiced at his doings,' 'that neither temporal man nor woman could have power in spiritual matters but only the Pope of Rome ;' and the lay authorities would not allow the Bishop to punish a man who had but expressed their own feelings ; more than one member of the Council of York had refused the oath and yet had remained in office ; the rest took courage when they saw those that refused their allegiance 'not only unpunished but had in authority and estimation ;' and distracted 'with the poisonful and malicious minds about him,' the Bishop said that 'where he had but little wit at his coming he had now almost none left him, and wished himself a sizar at St John's again.'³

¹ Jewel to Cecil: *Domestic MSS.*, vol. xix.

MSS. Ibid., vol. xxi.

³ *MSS.* Ibid., vol. xix.

Finally, in 1562, the Bishop of Carlisle once more complained that between Lord Dacres and the Earls of Cumberland and Westmoreland, ‘God’s glorious gospel could not take place in the counties under their rule.’ The few Protestants ‘durst not be known for fear of a shrewd turn;’ and the lords and magistrates looked through their fingers—while the law was openly defied. The country was full of ‘wishings and wagers for the alteration of religion;’ ‘rumours and tales of the Spaniards and Frenchmen to come in for the reformation of the same:’ while the articles of the secret league between the Guises and Spain for the extirpation of heresy circulated in manuscript in the houses of the northern gentlemen.¹

The Queen’s own conduct had been so uncertain, she had persisted so long in her determination to invite the Queen of Scots into England, with a view of acknowledging her in some form or other as her successor, she had given so marked an evidence of her retrogressive tendencies in appointing these very Earls of Westmoreland and Cumberland to receive Mary Stuart on the Border, that no one ventured to support a spiritual authority which in a year or two might vanish like a mist. And it was not till Elizabeth had been driven at last into the French quarrel, had given up the interview, and had sent her troops to Havre to co-operate with the Huguenots, that the reforming party recovered heart again; and the Romanists discovered that unless

¹ *Domestic MSS.*, vol’ xxi.

they were prepared for immediate rebellion they must move more cautiously.

1562.
August. The first effect of their disappointment was a curious one. On the 7th of August de Quadra wrote to the Spanish minister at Rome begging him to ask the Pope in the name of the English Catholics whether they might be present without sin at 'the common prayers.' 'The case,' de Quadra said, 'was a new and not an easy one, for the Prayer-book contained neither impiety nor false doctrine. The prayers themselves were those of the Catholic Church, altered only so far as to omit the merits and the intercession of the saints; so that, except for the concealment, and the injury which might arise from the example, there would be nothing in the compliance itself positively unlawful. The communion could be evaded: on that point they did not ask for a dispensation. They desired simply to be informed whether they might attend the ordinary services.' The Bishop's own opinion was that no general rule could be laid down. The compulsion to which the Catholics were exposed varied at different times and places; the harm which might arise to others varied; nor had all been equally zealous in attempting to prevent the law from passing or in afterwards obstructing the execution of it. While therefore he had not extenuated the fault of those who had given way to the persecution, he had in some cases given them a hope that they had not sinned mortally. At the same time he had been cautious of weakening the resolution of those who had been hitherto constant. If the Pope

had more decided instructions to give, he said he would gladly receive them. There was another class of cases also which there was a difficulty in dealing with. Many of the English who had fallen into heresy had repented and desired to be absolved. But the priests, who could receive them back, were scanty and scattered; and there was extreme danger in resorting to them. In some instances they had been arrested, and under threat of torture had revealed their penitents' names. The Bishop said he had explained to the Catholics generally that allowance was made for violence, but they wished for a general indulgence in place of detailed and special absolution; and although he said that he did not himself consider that this would meet the difficulty, he thought it right to mention their request.¹

The question of attendance on the English service was referred to the Inquisition, where the dry truth was expressed more formally and hardly than de Quadra's leniency would have preferred.

'Given a commonwealth in which Catholics were forbidden under pain of death to exercise their religion; where the law required the subject to attend conventicles; where the Psalms were sung and the lessons taken from the Bible were read in the vulgar tongue, and where sermons were preached in defence of heretical opinions, might Catholics comply with that law without peril of damnation to their souls?'

Jesuitism was as yet but half developed. The In-

¹ De Quadra to Vargas, August 7. *MS. Simancas.*

quisition answered immediately with a distinct negative.

Although the Catholics were not required to communicate with heretics, yet by their presence at their services they would assume and affect to believe with them. Their object in wishing to be present could only be to pass for heretics, to escape the penalties of disobedience; and God had said, 'Whosoever is ashamed of me and of my words, of him will I be ashamed.' Catholics, and especially Catholics of rank, could not appear in Protestant assemblies without causing scandal to the weaker brethren.

In giving this answer Pope Pius desired to force the Catholics to declare themselves, and precipitate the collision which Philip's timidity had prevented.

On the other point he was more lenient. He empowered de Quadra, as a person not amenable to the English Government, to accept himself the abjuration of heretics willing to forsake their errors, and to empower others at his discretion to do the same whenever and wherever he might think good.¹

Before the order of Pius had reached England, the impatience of the Catholics had run over in the abortive conspiracy of the Poles. In itself most trivial, it served as a convenient instrument in the hands of Cecil to irritate the Protestants. The enterprise in France appealed to the loyalty of the people, who flattered themselves with hopes of Calais, and the elections for the Parliament, which was to meet at the spring of the new

¹ Pius IV. to de Quadra: *MS. Simancas.*

year, were carried on under the stimulus of the excitement. The result was the return of a House of Commons violently Puritan; and those who were most anxious to prevent the recognition of the Queen of Scots found themselves opportunely strengthened by the premature eagerness with which her claims had been pressed.

Maitland's intended mission to London had been postponed till the meeting; but meanwhile Sir William Cecil had ominously allowed all correspondence between them to cease;¹ and Randolph, on the 5th of ^{1563.} January, wrote from Edinburgh of the general ^{January.} fear and uneasiness that 'things would be wrought in the approaching Parliament which would give little pleasure in Scotland.'² Diplomacy however still continued its efforts. Notwithstanding the rupture with the Guises, the admission of Mary Stuart's right was still played off before Elizabeth as a condition on which France might be pacified and Calais restored: and there was always a fear that Elizabeth might turn back upon her steps and listen. To end the crisis, Sir Thomas Smith advised her to throw six thousand men, some moonlight night, on the Calais sands. The garrison had been withdrawn after the battle of Dreux to reinforce the Catholic army, and not two hundred men were left to defend the still incomplete fortifications.³ But Eliza-

¹ Maitland to Cecil, January 3: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Randolph to Cecil: *MS. Ibid.*

³ Sir T. Smith to Elizabeth, January 2: FORBES, vol. ii. The beneficial effects of the French conquest had already been felt in the

Pale. Before the expulsion of the English it was almost a desert. Sir Thomas Smith held out as an inducement for its recovery, that it had become 'the plentifullest country in all France.'

both was as incapable as Philip of a sudden movement, and she had no desire to exchange her quarrel with the Guises—which after all might be peaceably composed—for a declared war with a united France. She knew that she had not deserved the confidence of the Huguenots, and she had already reason to fear that they might turn against her.

The day after the battle of Dreux, Throgmorton, unable to rejoin the Admiral, was brought in as a prisoner into the Catholic camp. The Duke of Guise sent for him, and after a long and conciliatory conversation on the state of France, spoke deprecatingly of the injustice of Elizabeth's suspicions of himself and his family, and indicated with some distinctness that if she would withdraw from Havre Calais should be given up to her.¹

Elizabeth, catching at an intimation which fell in with her private wishes, replied with a promise 'that nothing should be done in Parliament to the displeasure of the Queen of Scots.' Mary Stuart had recovered credit by her expedition to the north; and her confidence in Elizabeth's weakness again revived: not indeed that Elizabeth was really either weak or blind, but in constitutional irresolution she was for ever casting her eye over her shoulder, with the singular and happy effect of

¹ 'If they cannot accord among themselves, then I perceive they mind to treat with you favourably, and I believe to satisfy your Majesty about Calais, provided that from henceforth you do no more aid the Prince and the rebels.'—Throgmorton to Elizabeth, January 3: *Con-*

way MSS.

'These men have two strings to their bow—to accord with the Prince and to accord with her Majesty also; but not with both at once to both's satisfactions.'—Throgmorton to Cecil, January 3: *FORBES*, vol. ii.

keeping the Catholics perpetually deluded with false expectations, and of amusing them with hopes of a change which never came.

Her resolution about the Scottish succession promised a stormy and uneasy session ; and Cecil before its commencement, still uncertain how far he could depend upon her, made another effort to rid the Court of de Quadra. The Spanish ambassador was suspected without reason of having encouraged the Poles. He was known to have urged Philip to violence, and to be the secret support and stay of the disaffected in England and Ireland. Confident in the expected insurrection of the Low Countries, Cecil was not unwilling to risk an open rupture with Spain, which would force Elizabeth once for all on the Protestant side.

A few days before Parliament was to meet, an Italian Calvinist, in the train of the Vidame of Chartres, was passing Durham Place when a stranger, who was lounging at the gate, drew a pistol and fired at him. The ball passed through the Italian's cap and wounded an Englishman behind him. The assassin darted into the house with a crowd at his heels ; and the Bishop, knowing nothing of him, but knowing the Italian to be a heretic, bade his servants open the water gate. The fugitive sprung down the steps, leapt into a boat, and was gone. Being taken afterwards at Gravesend, he confessed under torture that he had been bribed to commit the murder by the Provost of Paris. De Quadra, who had made himself an accomplice after the fact, was required to surrender the keys of his house ; and his steward re

fusing to comply, the mayor sent workmen who changed the locks.

De Quadra went to the palace to complain ; but the Queen, without permitting herself to be seen, referred him to the council ; and Cecil at last told him that he could not be allowed to remain at Durham Place. All the Papists in London attended mass there ; every malcontent, every traitor and enemy of the Government, came there at night to consult him. The disturbance which had broken out in Ireland was due to the advice given by de Quadra when O'Neil was in London ; and but for the care which the Queen had taken of him he would probably have long before been murdered by the mob.¹

De Quadra was not a man to be discomposed by high words. He replied that whatever he had done he had done by his master's orders ; and complaints against himself were complaints against the King of Spain. If he had seemed to act in an unfriendly manner, the times were to blame ; if he did not profess the English religion, he professed the religion of Christendom ; and those noble and honourable men who came to his house to mass came where they had a right to come and did not deserve Cecil's imputations

Hot words passed to and fro. Cecil charged the Bishop with maintaining traitors and rebels. De Quadra

¹ De Quadra to Philip, January 10: *MS. Simancas*. The account of the matter sent by the English council to Sir Thomas Chaloner, agrees closely with that of de Quadra, dwelling only in fuller detail on the midnight conferences of conspirators and traitors held at Durham Place: *Spanish MSS.*, January 7: *Rolls House*.

said it was not he or his master who were most guilty of using religion as a stalking-horse to disturb their neighbours' peace.

Cecil said the Bishop had encouraged Pole and Fortescue. The Bishop answered truly enough that he had had nothing to do with them or their follies.

'The meaning of it all,' de Quadra wrote to Philip, 'is this: they wish to dishearten the Catholics whom the Parliament will bring together from all parts of the realm. I am not to remain in this house because it has secret doors and entrances which we may use for mischief. They are afraid, and they have cause to be afraid. The heretics are furious at seeing me maintain the Catholics here with some kind of authority, and they cannot endure it; but a few days ago the Lord Keeper said that neither the Crown nor religion were safe so long as I was in the realm. It is true enough, as Cecil says, that I may any day be torn in pieces by the populace. Ever since this war in France, and the demonstrations in Paris against the heretics, the Protestant preachers have clamoured from the pulpit for the execution of 'Papists.' Even Cecil himself is bent on cruelty; and did they but dare they would not leave a Catholic alive in the land.

'But the faithful are too large a number, and if it comes to that they will sell their lives dear. London indeed is bad enough: it is the worst place in the realm: and it is likely—I do not say it in any fear, but only because it is a thing which your Majesty should know—that if they force me to reside within the walls

of the city something may happen to me. The council themselves tell me that if I am detected in any conspiracy my privilege as ambassador shall not save me. They wish to goad me on to violence that they may have matter to lay before the Queen against me.’¹

Believing or pretending to believe that de Quadra, notwithstanding his denial, was really implicated in the affair of the Poles, Cecil overshot his mark. Chaloner was instructed to demand the Bishop’s recall; and meanwhile he was allowed still to reside in Durham Place, but with restrictions upon his liberty. The water gate was closed, sentinels were posted at the lodge, the house was watched day and night, and every person who went in or out was examined and registered.²

While this fracas was at its heat, on the 12th of January Parliament opened, and with it the first Convocation of the English Church. The sermon at St Paul’s was preached by Day, the Provost of Eton; that at Westminster by Dr Nowell. The subject of both was the same: the propriety of ‘killing the caged wolves’—that is to say, the Catholic bishops in the Tower—with the least possible delay.³

The session then began. The Lord Keeper in the

¹ De Quadra to Philip, January 10: *MS. Simancas*.

² De Quadra to Philip, January 27: *MS. Ibid.*

³ ‘El Martes se abrió el Parlamento, y lo que se predicó tanto en Westminster en presencia de la Reyna como en San Pablo en el sínodo ecclesiástico fué principal-

mente persuadir que se matasen los lobos encerrados; entendiendo por los obispos presos.’—De Quadra to —, January 14: *MS. Ibid.* It is mournful to remember that Nowell was the author of the English Church Catechism in its present form. See note at the end of this chapter.

usual speech from the throne dwelt on the internal disorders of the country, the irreligion of the laity, the disorder and idleness of the clergy. He touched briefly on the events of the three last years; and in speaking by name of the House of Guise, he said that if they had not been encountered in Scotland they must have been fought with under the walls of York.

Then passing to France, he said that the Queen by the same cause had been compelled to a second similar interference there. He alluded pointedly to a disloyal faction in England, by whom the foreign enemies were encouraged. He spoke shortly of the late devilish conspiracy, and then concluded with saying that reluctant as they knew the Queen to be to ask her subjects for money, they would be called upon to meet the expenses which she had incurred in the service of the Commonwealth.

Sir Thomas Williams, the Speaker of the Lower House, followed next in the very noblest spirit of English Puritanism. With quaint allegoric and classical allusions interlaced with illustrations from the Bible, he conveyed to the Queen the gratitude of the people for a restored religion and her own moderate and gentle Government. He described the country however as still suffering from ignorance, error, covetousness, and a thousand meaner vices. Schools were in decay, universities deserted, benefices unsupplied. As he passed through the streets, he heard almost as many oaths as words. Then turning to the Queen herself he went on thus—

‘We now assembled, as diligent in our calling, have thought good to move your Majesty to build a fort for the surety of the realm, to the repulsing of your enemies abroad: which must be set upon firm ground and steadfast, having two gates—one commonly open, the other as a postern, with two watchmen at either of them—one governor, one lieutenant, and no good thing there wanting; the same to be named the Fear of God, the governor thereof to be God, your Majesty the lieutenant, the stones the hearts of your faithful people, the two watchmen at the open gate to be called Knowledge and Virtue, the two at the postern gate to be called Mercy and Truth.

‘This fort is invincible if every man will fear God; for all governors reign and govern by the two watchmen Knowledge and Virtue; and if you, being the lieutenant, see Justice and Prudence, her sisters, executed, then shall you rightly use your office; and for such as depart out of this fort let them be let out at the postern by the two watchmen Mercy and Truth, and then shall you be well at home and abroad.’¹

All that was most excellent in English heart and feeling—the spirit which carried England safe at last through its trials—spoke in these words. Those in whom that spirit lived were few in number: there was never an age in this world’s history when they were other than few; but few or many they are at all times the world’s true sovereign leaders; and Elizabeth,

¹ Speech of Sir Thomas Williams: *DEWES’ Journals*, pp. 64, 65.

among her many faults, knew these men when she saw them, and gave them their place, and so prospered she and her country. The clergy cried out for the blood of the disaffected; the lay Speaker would let them go by the postern of Mercy and Truth.

These introductions over, the House proceeded to business. The special subject, of which all minds were full, had been passed over both by Bacon and Williams; but the Commons fastened upon it without a moment's delay. There were no signs of the Queen's marrying, notwithstanding her half promise to her first Parliament. She had been near death, and the frightful uncertainty as to what would follow should she die indeed was no longer tolerable.

On the 18th the question was talked over: the different claimants and their pretensions were briefly considered, and as had been anticipated the tone of feeling was as adverse as possible to the Queen of Scots. The Scottish nobles had not been forgiven for having supported her in refusing to ratify the treaty. To secure their sovereign the reversion of the English crown they were held to have repaid the assistance which had saved them from ruin with the basest ingratitude. Sir Ralph Sadler broke out with a fierce invective upon the 'false, beggarly, and perjured' nation, whom 'the very stones' in the English streets would rise against.¹ Another speaker challenged Mary Stuart's pretensions on the ground of English law.

¹ *Sadler Papers*, vol. iii. p. 303.

It was admitted on all sides, this person said, that the Queen of Scots' succession had been 'barred' by the will of Henry the Eighth; but some people pretended that the will had not been signed with his hand, some that he had never made a will at all; there was no mention of it on the Patent Rolls;¹ and if the original had existed why was it not produced? This last question could not be answered;² but there was proof enough of the reality of the will; there were abundant entries of this and that detail of it which had been acted upon; and of the executors there were still many who survived. The dispute however was not narrowed to that single issue. The Queen of Scots was an alien, and no person could inherit in England who was not born of English parents on English soil. Lady Lennox was an alien also; for though she was born at York it was but in a passing visit; her father Angus was a Scot, and when he married her mother he had another wife living. The only legal heir was the heir appointed by Henry the Eighth—Lady Catherine Grey, the injured and imprisoned wife of Hertford.³

¹ This is true. Neither is there any record of the will on the Roll, nor any sign of erasure where the entry ought to have been.

² This mysterious concealment can only be explained as the deliberate act of Elizabeth, who was determined to maintain Mary Stuart's rights, and who felt that it would be impossible if the will was produced.

³ Oration spoken in Parliament.

—*Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xxvii. Lady Catherine Grey's popularity had been increased by an accident which had redoubled Elizabeth's displeasure. Sir Edmund Warner, taking pity on his young prisoner, had allowed her husband to have access to her room; the result was a second infant; and fecundity was a virtue especially valued in an English princess. 'Este negocio de Catalina,' wrote De

The result of the first discussion was the resolution to prepare an address to the Crown. But de Quadra was able to learn that the question would not be settled; the Queen was determined to keep her promise to Mary Stuart; and Cecil, on the 14th, wrote to Sir Thomas Smith that however Parliament might press her 'the unwillingness of her Majesty to have a successor known' would prevent a conclusion.¹ The strength of Elizabeth's resolution would soon be tried. Meanwhile, on the 20th, Cecil explained to the Commons the cause of the interference in France.² On the 25th he was heard at the bar of the House of Lords on the same subject; and his speech was chiefly directed against Philip, whom he accused of having entangled England in war while its titular king, and then of having betrayed it at Cambray; of having taken part with the Queen's enemies in every difficulty in which she had been involved; and of having lent his strength to make the Duke of Guise sovereign of France and Mary Stuart Queen of England — 'Queen of England,' 'as she was already styled by her household at Holyrood.'³

A penal Bill against the Catholics was next laid before the Upper House. It was described as 'a law against those who would not receive the new religion,' bloody in its provisions as the preachers desired, and

Quadra on the 27th of January, 'va cobrando fuerças entre estos de la nueva religion, y el parir la hace bien quista del pueblo.' — De Quadra to Philip. *MS. Simancas.*

¹ Cecil to Sir T. Smith, January

14: WRIGHT'S *Elizabeth and her Times*, vol. i.

² DEWES' *Journals*.

³ De Quadra to Philip, January 27: *MS. Simancas.*

contrived rather as a test of opinion than of loyalty.

At once and without reserve or fear the Catholic Lords spoke out: Northumberland said the heretics might be satisfied with holding other men's bishoprics and benefices without seeking their lives; when they had killed the clergy they would kill the temporal lords next: the Earl swore that he would speak as his conscience bade him; he would protest against the law; and he believed that most of the Lords who heard him were of the same opinion with himself.¹

Montague followed on the same side and at greater length:—

‘A law was proposed,’ he said, ‘to compel Papists, under pain of death, to confess the Protestant doctrine to be true. Such a law was neither necessary nor was it just. The Catholics were living peaceably, neither disputing nor preaching nor troubling the commonwealth in any way. The doctrine of the Protestants, if they had a doctrine, had been established against the consent of the ecclesiastical estate; and it was absurd, so long as the world was full of disputes and the opinions of those best able to judge were divided, for one set of men to compel another to accept their views as true or to pretend that there was no longer room for doubt.

¹ De Quadra to Philip: *MS. Simancas*. The Supremacy Bill, which ultimately passed, was brought into the House of Lords on the 25th of February. De Quadra's letter, describing Northumberland's speech, was written on the 27th of January, and must therefore refer to some other Bill—unnoticed in the meagre journals—which was thrown out. The ambassador distinctly says that there was a vote—‘*viniedo á votard los Señores.*’

The Protestants might be content with what they had got without forcing other men to profess what they did not believe and to make God a witness of the lie. To take an oath against their consciences or else to be put to death was no alternative to be offered to reasonable men ; and if it came to that extremity the Catholics would defend themselves. A majority might be found to vote for the law if the bishops were included ; but the bishops were a party to the quarrel and had no right to be judges in it. The bishops had no business with pains and penalties ; they should keep to their pulpits and their excommunications and leave questions of public policy to the lay Lords.’¹

Had Montague been despotic in England the Protestants would have had as short a shrift as the Huguenots were finding in France ; but even a Catholic of the sixteenth century, when in opposition, could be more temperate than a Protestant in power. The Bill was lost or withdrawn to reappear in a new form : and the Peers who had checked the zeal of Bonner and Gardiner had the credit of staying in time the less pardonable revenge of their antagonists.

On the French question there were analogous differences of opinion. When the temper of Parliament had been felt it was found that, notwithstanding the Puritan constitution of the Lower House, the feeling was in favour only of the recovery of Calais. The Lords and Commons ‘resolved to yield their whole power in goods

¹ *Annals of the Reformation* : STRYPE, vol. i.

and bodies to recover Calais, to maintain Newhaven and any war which might arise thereof;’ but they were not so ready to contribute to the charge ‘of supporting the army of the Protestants.’¹ The disposition of the people was the same as the disposition of the Queen; and Elizabeth, warned on many sides that she could not trust Condé, and only half trusting Coligny, wrote to Sir Thomas Smith that in a doubtful quarrel she could not press her subjects too far. He need not hint to the Admiral that there was ‘any slackness’ on her part; but ‘she would be glad if some indirect means could be devised’ to compose the religious difficulties—though ‘toleration was not stablished so universally as the Admiral desired’—provided England could have ‘its right in Calais and the members thereof,’ and the money which she had lent Condé partially, if not wholly, repaid.²

Both Queen and country were falling back on the ‘hollow dealing’ which she had regretted so bitterly on the fall of Rouen; and then as ever it was found dangerous to follow private objects behind an affected zeal for a noble cause. Six thousand Englishmen paid with their lives for this trifling with Coligny, while the coveted Calais was forfeited for ever; the Huguenots obtained the half-toleration which Elizabeth desired for them; and they found the value of it on the day of St Bartholomew.

But to return to the succession.

¹ Elizabeth to Sir T. Smith, January 25; FORBES, vol. ii.

² Ibid.

In the interval of these discussions the address of the Commons was drawn ; and on the 28th the Speaker with the whole House attended to present it in the gallery of the palace. Commencing with an elaborate compliment on the Queen's services to the country, Sir Thomas Williams proceeded to say that the nation required for their perfect security some assurance for the future. Her Majesty had been dangerously ill, and the Commons had supposed that in calling them together so soon after her recovery she had intended to use their assistance to come to some conclusion. He reminded her of Alexander's generals ; he reminded her—more to the purpose—of York and Lancaster ; and the realm, he said, was beset with enemies within and without. There was 'a faction of heretics in her realm—contentious and malicious Papists—who, most unnaturally against their country, most madly against their own safety, and most treacherously against her Highness, not only hoped for the woful day of her death, but also lay in wait to advance some title under which they might revive their late unspeakable cruelties. The Commons saw nothing to withstand their desires but her only life ; they feared much to what attempt the hope of such opportunity—nothing withstanding them but her life—might move the Catholics ; and they found how necessary it was that there should be more set and known between her Majesty's life and the unkindness and cruelty they intended to revive.' Ignorant as they were to whom the crown ought to descend, and being unable to judge of the limitation of the succession in King Henry's will, their

first desire was that her Majesty would marry, their second that she would use the opportunity of the session to allow some successor in default of heirs of her body 'to be determined by Act of Parliament;' while they, on their part, 'for the preservation and surety of her Majesty and her issue,' would devise 'the most penal, sharp, and terrible statutes to all who should practise against her safety.'

February. By the nomination of a Protestant successor Elizabeth had everything to gain; while, if Mary Stuart was acknowledged, her life would not be safe for a day. Her policy in every way was to acquiesce in the prayer of the Commons; and yet she listened with ill-concealed impatience. She said briefly that on a matter of such moment she could give no answer without further consideration, and she then abruptly turned her back on the deputation and withdrew.¹

If de Quadra was rightly informed she had been half prevailed on to name the Earl of Huntingdon, with the condition that she herself should have Lord Robert. But Dudley had made no advances in the favour of the Peers, and Huntingdon was a Puritan and Dudley's brother-in-law; Lord Arundel, with the Howards, still inclined to Lady Catherine Grey, of whom the Queen could not endure to hear; and thus all parties were at issue.

The Upper House followed the Lower with an ad-

¹ 'Con tanto les volvió las espaldas y se entró en su aposento.'—De Quadra to Philip, February 6: *MS. Simancas*.

dress to the same purpose. Elizabeth said bitterly that 'the lines which they saw in her face were not wrinkles but small-pox marks; God had given children to St Elizabeth, and old as she was he might give children to her; if she appointed a successor it would deluge England in blood.'¹

Both Houses were profoundly angry. The Protestants supposed that the Queen was sacrificing the Reformation and the country to her secret passion for Lord Robert; and that she was studiously allowing the Scottish Queen's pretensions to drift into tacit recognition. Day after day throughout the session the subject continued to be harped upon. A Bill was proposed by Cecil by which, if the Queen died, the privy council were to continue in office with imperial authority till Parliament could decide on the future sovereign. But this too came to nothing,² and the Queen continued to give evasive answers till the prorogation of Parliament should leave her free again.

And yet the Protestant party were determined to carry something which should answer their purpose; and at once—though the first penal law had been lost—enable them to hold down the Catholics, and in case of Elizabeth's death, to prevent Mary Stuart's succession.³ To check the exultation of Montague and his friends at their first success in Parliament, Cecil contrived another

¹ De Quadra to Philip, February 6: *MS. Simancas*.

² Draft of an Act of Parliament, in Cecil's hand: *Domestic MSS.* vol. xxviii.

³ 'Esta ley contra los Católicos no se ha hecho con otra fin mas principal que de excluir la de Escocia desta sucession por via indirecta.'—De Quadra to Philip, February 20.

demonstration against de Quadra. On the day of the Purification the foreign Catholics in London came as usual in large numbers to hear mass at Durham Place. The guard at the gate took their names as they passed in; and before the service was over an officer of the palace guard entered from the river, arrested every Spaniard, Fleming, and Italian present, and carried them off to the Fleet. They were informed on their release that thenceforward no stranger, not even a casual visitor to the realm, should attend a service unsanctioned by the laws.¹

On the 20th of February a Bill was introduced, by which, without mention of doctrine, Protestant or Catholic, all persons who maintained the Pope's authority or refused the oath of allegiance to the Queen, for the first offence should incur a premunire, for the second the pains of treason. Should the Bill pass it was believed to be the death-warrant of the imprisoned bishops; and even in the Lower House voices were raised in opposition. Cecil in a passionate speech declared that the House was bound in gratitude not to reject what was necessary for the Queen's security. Her life was in danger because she was the defender of English liberty; the King of Spain desired her to send representatives to Trent; she had refused, and he was threatening her with war; and the Pope was offering millions of gold to pay the cost of an invasion of England. The Queen herself would die before she would yield, but her subjects must stand

¹ De Quadra to Philip, February 6 and February 20.

by her with laws and lives and goods. There was no help elsewhere. The Germans used fine words, but they failed at the pinch. The Emperor had been gained over by the Pope. Their reliance must be on themselves and their own arms, and nowhere else.

After Cecil, rose Sir Francis Knowles, who said that there had been enough of words: it was time to draw the sword. The Commons were generally Puritan. The opposition of the Lords had been neutralized by a special provision in their favour, and the Bill was carried. The obligation to take the oath was extended to the holder of every office, lay or spiritual, in the realm. The clergy were required to swear whenever their ordinary might be pleased to tender them the oath; the members of the House of Commons were required to swear when they took their seats; members of the Upper House were alone exempt, the Act declaring, with perhaps designed irony, that the Queen was otherwise assured of the loyalty of the Peers.¹ Without this proviso de Quadra was assured that they would have refused to consent; and even with it he clung to the hope that the Catholic noblemen would be true to themselves. But he was too sanguine, and Cecil carried his point.

Heath, Bonner, Thirlby, Feckenham, and the other prisoners at once prepared to die. The Protestant ecclesiastics would as little spare them as they had spared the Protestants. They would have shown no mercy themselves, and they looked for none.

¹ 5 *Elizabeth*, cap. 1.

Nor is there any doubt what their fate would have been had it rested with the English bishops. Immediately after the Bill had received the royal assent, the hated Bonner was sent for to be the first victim. Horne, Bishop of Winchester, offered him the oath, which it was thought certain that he would refuse, and he would then be at the mercy of his enemies. Had it been so the English Church would have disgraced itself; but Bonner's fate would have called for little pity. The law however stepped in between the prelates and their prey—as Portia between Shylock and Antonio—and saved them both. By the Act archbishops and bishops might alone tender the oath; and Bonner evaded the dilemma by challenging his questioner's title to the name. When Horne was appointed to the See of Winchester his predecessor was alive; the English bishops generally had been so irregularly consecrated that their authority, until confirmed by Act of Parliament, was of doubtful legality; and the judges of the Court of Queen's Bench caught at the plea to prevent a needless cruelty. Bonner was again returned to the Marshalsea, and Horne gained nothing by his eagerness but a stigma upon himself and his brethren.¹

The remaining business of the session passed over without difficulty: the grant of money was profusely liberal; ² an Act was passed for the maintenance of the navy, which will be mentioned more particularly in a

¹ *Annals of the Reformation*: | personal property, and an income
STRYPE, vol. i. part 2, pp. 2 to 8. | tax of ten per cent. for two years.

² 'Two fiftecnths and tenths on |

future chapter; a tillage Act revived the statutes of Henry the Seventh and Henry the Eighth for the rebuilding of farm-houses and breaking up the large pastures.¹ The restoration of the currency made a wages Act again possible, but the altered prices of meat and corn required a revision of the scale. The magistrates in the different counties were empowered to fix the rate according to the local prices, their awards being liable to revision by the Court of Chancery, to which returns were to be periodically made.² Other remarkable provisions were added to restore the shaken texture of English life. During the late confused time the labourer had wandered from place to place doing a day's work where he pleased. Masters were now required to hire their servants by the year, neither master to part with servant nor servant with master till the contract was expired, unless the separation was sanctioned by two magistrates.

These acts all indicated a recovered or recovering tone. The solid English life, after twenty years of convulsion, was regaining consistency.

¹ 5 *Elizabeth*, cap. 2.

² 5 *Elizabeth*, cap. 4. Wages varied with the time of year, and the rates were read out every month in the parish churches. The average in 1563 may be gathered with tolerable accuracy from the scale which was ruled for the county of Bucks before the passing of the Act. The price of food after the restoration of the currency was found to have risen a third. The penny, which in terms

of bread, meat, and beer, had been worth under Henry the Eighth twelve pence of our money, was now worth eight pence. The table of wages in Bucks in 1561 was for the common labourer sixpence a day from Easter to All Hallow; five pence a day from All Hallows to Easter; and eight pence a day in the hay and corn harvest.—Tyldsley's Report: *Domestic MSS.*, vol. xix.

The well-being of the people however turned on the success of Elizabeth's policy, and hung on the thread of her single life; while neither Lords nor Commons had as yet received an answer to their addresses. On the 16th of February she sent a message by Cecil that she had not forgotten them, and entreating their patience: but ten days passed and nothing was done; and by that time Maitland had arrived from Scotland with an offer from his mistress—of course as a condition of recognition—to make herself 'a *moyenneur* of a peace' with France, which would give back Calais to England. There was a hope that by such an offer even the unwillingness of Parliament might be overcome; and Maitland was prudently feeling his way when one of those strange adventures occurred which so often crossed the path of the Queen of Scots, and gave her history the interest—not perhaps of tragedy, for she was selfish in her politics and sensual in her passions—but of some high-wrought melodrama.

In the galley in which she returned to Scotland there was present a young poet and musician named Châtelar. Gifted, well-born, and passionate, the handsome youth had for some months sighed at her feet in Holyrood. He went back to France, but he could not remain there. The moth was recalled to the flame whose warmth was life and death to it. He was received on his return with the warmest welcome. Mary Stuart admitted him to her labours in the Cabinet, and he shared her pleasures in the festival or the dance. 'So familiar was he with the Queen early and late that scarcely could any

of the nobility have access to her.'¹ She leant upon his shoulder in public, she bewitched him in private with her fascinating confidence;² and interpreting her behaviour and perhaps her words too favourably, he one night concealed himself in her bedroom. He was discovered by the ladies of the bedchamber before the Queen retired; and the next morning she commanded him with a sharp reprimand to leave the Court. But Mary Stuart pardoned easily the faults of those whom she liked. Châtelar was forgiven, and again misconstruing her kindness, four nights later the poor youth repeated his rash adventure. He came out upon the Queen while she was undressing, and 'set upon her with such force and in such impudent sort that she was fain to cry out for help.'

Hearing her shrieks Murray rushed into the room. Châtelar was of course seized and carried off and tortured. Confessing the worst intentions with wild bravado, he was executed a week after in the Market Place at St Andrew's, chanting a love-song as he died; and the Queen after some natural distress recovered her spirits.

¹ KNOX.

² Randolph, who was describing what he had himself seen, said in a letter to Cecil, 'Your Honour heareth the beginning of a lamentable story, whereof such infamy will arise as I fear, howsoever well the wound be healed, the scar will for ever remain. Thus your Honour seeth what mischief cometh of the over-great familiarity that any such personage

showeth unto so unworthy a creature and abject a varlet, as her Grace used with him. Whatsoever colour can be laid upon it, that it was done for his master's sake (Châtelar had been in the train of M. d'Amville), I cannot but say it had been too much to have been used to his master's self by any princess alive
—*Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

She had probably nothing worse to accuse herself of than thoughtlessness; and the truth might have been told without danger of compromising her. It is strange that Maitland, in a fear that it might affect the success of his mission, thought it worth his while to cover the story with an incredible lie. Maitland had two objects in London—one, to secure the succession for his mistress by assuring Elizabeth that she had nothing to fear from so true a friend; the other, to consult the Spanish ambassador on the marriage with the Prince of Spain, which of all things on earth Elizabeth most dreaded for her. It was this last object chiefly which he thought the Châtellar affair might hinder; he therefore told de Quadra that Châtellar before his death had declared that he had been employed by the Huguenots to compromise Mary Stuart's reputation; he had concealed himself in her room, intending to be seen in leaving it, and then to escape.¹

Two days after Châtellar was executed Mary Stuart lost a far nobler friend. A pistol-ball fired from behind a hedge closed the career of the Duke of Guise under the walls of Orleans. The assassin Poltrot was a boy of nineteen. Suspicion pointed to the Admiral and Theodore Beza as the instigators of the crime; and

¹ 'Las personas,' de Quadra adds, 'que le enviaron á esta tan gran traycion, dice Ledington que han sido mas de una; pero la que principalmente le dió la instruccion y el recaudo fué Madame de Curosot.'—De Quadra to Philip, March 28.

Madame de Curosot was probably Charlotte de Laval, the wife of the Admiral. This preposterous story passed current with the Spaniards, and reappears in a despatch of de Chantonnay to Philip.—TEULET, vol. v. pp. 2, 3.

Chatillon never wholly convinced the world of his innocence, for Pol rot himself accused him while the horses were tearing him in pieces. However it was, that single shot shattered the Catholic confederacy and changed the politics of Europe. The Guise family fell with their head into sudden ruin. The Duc d'Aumale, badly wounded at Dreux, lived but to hear of his brother's murder, and followed him in a few hours. The Grand Prior died of a cold caught in the same

March.

battle.¹ Of the six brothers, who but a few months before held in their hands the fortunes of France, three were dead; of the three remaining the Marquis d'Elbœuf was shut up in Caen Castle, closely besieged by Chatillon; the Cardinal of Lorraine was absent at Trent; and the Cardinal of Guise was the single member of the family who had no capacity. The other great leaders of France had disappeared with equal suddenness: Montmorency was a prisoner in Orleans, Condé a prisoner in Paris; St André was dead, Navarre was dead; Catherine found herself relieved of rivalry and able to govern as she pleased. The Queen of Scots had no longer a friend in France who cared to stand by her; and well indeed after this blow might she lament to Randolph the misery of life, and say with tears 'she perceived now the world was not that which men would make it, nor they the happiest that lived the longest in it.'²

Mary Stuart's prospects in England had been on the eve of arrangement, when Elizabeth, relieved of the

¹ VABILLAS.

² Randolph to Cecil, April 1: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*

dread of the Duke of Guise, believed herself again at leisure to trifle, or to insist on new conditions before she need consent to the recognition.

The following letters and abstracts of letters for a moment lift the veil of diplomacy, and reveal the inward ambitions, aims, and workings of the different parties :—

SUMMARY OF A LETTER FROM THE BISHOP OF AQUILA
TO THE KING OF SPAIN.¹

March 18.

The Bishop of Aquila understanding that Maitland the Secretary of the Queen of Scots desired to speak with him, invited the said Secretary to dinner. The conversation turned chiefly on two points—the succession of his mistress to the English crown and her marriage.

On the first Maitland said that with the Queen of England's permission he had discussed with Cecil the terms on which the Queen of Scots would relinquish her present claim on the English crown, provided the succession was secured to her in the event of the Queen of England's death without children.

The conditions he said had been arranged ; and the two Queens were to have met to conclude the agreement ; when the death of the Duke of Guise changed all, and he could no longer hope that his mistress's right would ever be admitted.

¹ The original letter of de Quadra is not preserved. The translation is from a contemporary abstract.

The Bishop, seeing that Maitland was perplexed, and wishing to learn whether he had anything more on his mind, said that if his mistress would marry where the Queen of England wished she might then no doubt have all that she desired.

Maitland replied that to this there were two objections: in the first place the Queen of Scots would never marry a Protestant; in the second place she would marry neither Catholic nor Protestant at the will of or in connection with the Queen of England, not though the succession could be absolutely made sure to her. The husband whom Elizabeth would give her would be but some English vassal; and if she married below her rank her difficulties would remain as great as ever. To be nominated as successor would be of no use to her unless she had power to enforce her rights;¹ while she would forfeit the good will of the Catholics by seeming to give way. The Earl of Arran she abhorred; the Duke of Ferrara, whom the Queen-mother of France proposed to her, she despised. She would sooner die than marry any one lower in rank than the husband whom she had lost.

The Bishop asked what she would think of the Archduke Charles of Austria.

Maitland replied that the Archduke would satisfy neither his mistress nor her subjects. He was a mere dependent on the King of Spain, and could not be thought of unless the King of Spain—as was not likely

¹ 'Porque sin fuerças proprias nunca podria executar la declaration que se hiciese.'

—would interfere in England on a large scale, emphatically and effectually.

The Secretary then spoke at length of the fears of the Queen of England lest the Prince of Spain should marry his mistress. The Queen-mother too, he said, feared it equally and with good reason, for if the King of Spain would consent he might add England, Ireland, and Scotland to his dominions. Nothing could be more easy, so great was the anxiety of the English Catholics for that marriage and for the union of the Crowns. When the Bishop objected that the Scots might oppose it on the ground of religion, the Secretary admitted that the nobility of Scotland were generally Protestant; but they were devoted to the Queen, and would be content that she should marry a Catholic if it was for the interests of the realm. Means could be found to work upon them. The Catholics at first might be allowed mass in their private houses—by and by they would have churches. Lord James was most favourable to the marriage, and if the Bishop wished he would come to London and speak with him.

As to the feeling in England, the Bishop confirms Maitland's account from his own knowledge. One nobleman offers, if it can be brought about, to serve the King of Spain with a thousand horse; others are almost as forward; and the state of the realm is such that the union of the island under a single powerful and Christian prince is the sole means by which religion can be reformed. The whole body of the English Catholics desire the Bishop to represent this in their names to the

King of Spain as spoken from their very heart and soul; they assure him that it is their universal wish, and that no obstacle can prevent it from being carried into effect if his Majesty will only consent.

DE QUADRA TO PHILIP II.

London, March 28.

‘Maitland tells me that four or five days ago, speaking of the affairs of France and of the Queen of Scots’ marriage, the Queen of England said that if his mistress would be guided by her she would give her a husband that should be all which she could desire; the Queen of Scots should have Lord Robert, on whom God had bestowed so many charms that were she herself to marry she would prefer him to all the princes in the world.

‘Maitland by his own account replied that her Majesty was giving a wonderful proof of her affection for the Queen his mistress in offering to bestow upon her an object so dear to herself. If his mistress came to love Lord Robert as much as her Majesty loved him, he feared even so she might not marry him for fear of depriving her Majesty of what she so much valued.

‘After more of these courtesies the Queen said, ‘Would to God the Earl of Warwick was as charming as his brother—we might then each have had our own.’ Maitland would not understand the hint; but she kept to the subject and went on, ‘Not that my Lord Warwick is ill-looking or ungraceful, but he is rough, and lacks the sweet delicacy of Robert; he is brave

enough and noble enough to deserve the hand of a princess.'

'Maitland did not like the ground on which he found himself, so to end the conversation he said that the Queen his mistress was still young; her Majesty had better first marry Lord Robert herself; if she had children it would be all which the realm required of her; should no such event happen, and should God call her to his mercy, his mistress might inherit both crown and husband; and with one or the other of them there could be no doubt of a family. The Queen laughed, and the subject dropped.

'There has been a proposal in the Upper House to limit the succession to the heads of four or five English families, leaving the Queen to choose among them. The plan was Cecil's, and the object was of course to secure the crown to some one of his own party; while the pride of the great houses named would be flattered with the distinction, whether her choice rested on them or not. The Queen herself wishes to be allowed to bequeath the crown by will. They will perhaps pass a resolution excluding women to make sure of keeping out the Queen of Scots.'

SUMMARY OF A LETTER FROM DE QUADRA TO THE
KING OF SPAIN.

April 3.

'The Queen is really anxious for this marriage between the Queen of Scots and Lord Robert; but she is

¹ Contemporary abstract.

not likely to succeed. Maitland demands the recognition, and threatens great things if it is not conceded. With the succession secured to her, he tells the Queen that she will be content to remain on good terms. If she is left in uncertainty, he says that she must seek other friends abroad.

‘Cecil answers that if means can be found to provide for his mistress’s safety during her lifetime, and to prevent a religious revolution from following afterwards, the claims of the Queen of Scots shall be admitted forthwith. Maitland rejoins that this is nothing but words. He has now gone to France. At parting he told me that if his mistress could not have our Prince she would do what she could to obtain the King of France. The Archduke Charles she will not hear of. Her own subjects and the English Catholics alike object to the Archduke, and would prefer Lady Margaret’s son Lord Darnley.

‘Rawlet, the Secretary of the Queen of Scots, assures de Quadra that the Lord James and the whole Scotch nobility, Protestant as well as Catholic, wish for the Prince of Spain. Ten or twelve English peers and knights also have memorialized the Bishop about it, and some of them are willing to swear fealty to the Prince and the Queen of Scots together.’¹

Unaware of the pit which threatened to open under her feet, and warming herself with the project of the Lord Robert marriage, which would elevate her favourite

¹ *MS. Simancas.*

and, as she supposed, would be a shelter to herself, Elizabeth meanwhile felt herself able to dismiss the Parliament and to answer the addresses of the Houses before they separated.

On Saturday the 10th of April she went down to the Lords to give her assent to the Acts of the session. Sir Thomas Williams paid her the usual compliments, comparing her to the great queens of fable or history—to ‘*Paltestina*,’ who reigned before the deluge, to *Ceres* who followed her, and other benefactresses of mankind real or imaginary; without entering again upon painful subjects, he contented himself with expressing a wish at the close of his speech to see her happily married.

A formal answer of a corresponding kind was read by Bacon—and then Elizabeth rose and in her own style spoke as follows:

‘Since there can be no duer debt than prince’s word, to keep that unspotted, for my part, as one that would be loth that the self thing that keeps the merchant’s credit from craze, should be the cause that prince’s speech should merit blame, and so their honour quail: an answer therefore I will make, and this it is:

‘The two petitions that you presented me, in many words expressed, contained these two things in sum as of your cares the greatest—my marriage and my success—or—of which two, the last I think is best to be touched; and of the other a silent thought may serve; for I had thought it had been so desired as none other tree’s blossoms should have been minded ere hope of my fruit had been denied you. But to the last, think not that

you had needed this desire, if I had seen a time so fit, and it so ripe to be denounced. The greatness of the cause therefore and need of your returns doth make me say that which I think the wise may easily guess—that as a short time for so long a continuance ought not to pass by rote, as many telleth tales, even so as cause by conference with the learned shall show me matter worthy utterance for your behoof, so shall I more gladly pursue your good after my days, than with my prayers be a means to linger my living thread.

‘And this much more will I add for your comfort. I have good record in this place that other means¹ have been thought of than you mentioned, perchance for your good as much, and for my surety no less, which if presently could have been executed had not been deferred. But I hope I shall die in quiet with *Nunc Dimittis*, which cannot be without I see some glimpses of your following after my graved bones. And by the way, if any doubt that I am as it were by vow or determination bent never to trade that life (of marriage), put out that heresy; your belief is awry—for as I think it best for a private woman, so do I strive with myself to think it not most meet for a prince—and if I can bend my will to your need, I will not resist such a mind.’²

¹ *i. e.*—The Lord Robert marriage as the condition of the recognition.

² A manuscript version of this speech, at Hatfield, leaves little doubt that the text as given by D'Ewes is substantially correct. The few varieties of reading do not affect

the more complicated passages, and we are obliged to conclude that Elizabeth really spoke with these intricate and strange involutions. A date upon the MS., April 10, 1563, fixes the occasion on which the speech was delivered.

With this oration Parliament was prorogued; and Elizabeth had kept her word to the Queen of Scots.

With the Parliament ended also the first Convocation of the English Church—of the doings of which something should be said—although what Convocation might decide affected little either the stability or the teaching of the institution which it represented.

The Church of England had been reproached with teaching no definite doctrine. It was proposed that ‘Nowell’s Catechism,’ ‘Edward’s Articles,’ and ‘Jewel’s Apology,’ lately written at Cecil’s instigation, should be bound together and receive authoritative sanction—‘whosoever should speak against the same to be ordered as in cases of heresy.’ An effort was made to get rid of vestments and surplices, organs and bells—‘the table to stand no more altarwise;’ the sign of the cross to be abolished in baptism; and kneeling at the Communion to be left indifferent, or discountenanced as leading to superstition.

The more advanced Calvinists demanded the reinvigoration of that aged iniquity, the Ecclesiastical Courts, with a new code of canon law; the clergy meanwhile to have power to examine into the spiritual condition of their parishioners; to admonish them if their state was unsatisfactory; to excommunicate them if admonition failed; and excommunication to mean the loss of civil rights, imprisonment, fine, and the secular arm. Adulterers and fornicators were to be put to open shame, flogged at the cart’s tail, banished or imprisoned for life; and moral offences generally were to be dealt with by similar means.

It was no doubt well that English people should understand the faith which they professed; it was well that they should be prevented so far as possible from committing sin; but it would not perhaps have contributed in the long run to the end desired, if the clergy had been again empowered to deal with these things in their own peculiar manner.

This last ambition was quenched and did not reappear. Six formulas committing the Church to ultra-Protestantism were lost by the near majority of fifty-nine to fifty-eight, while the discussion generally resulted in the restoration of thirty-nine of the original forty-two articles of Edward as a rule of faith for the clergy. The Bishop of Worcester introduced a measure to prevent his order from making away with the Church property. Petitions were presented for a more strict observance of Sunday, which came to nothing. This, in the main, was the work aimed at or accomplished by Convocation: more moderate than might have been expected from the spirit in which the session had opened. The clergy were learning their position, and as a body were willing to work heartily on the narrow platform to which their pretensions had been limited. They too disappeared with the Parliament, and the Queen was left to extricate herself as she could from the embroglio in France.

Although she knew nothing of the overtures of the Scots to Spain, there was much in Philip's attitude which was seriously menacing. His ambassador in Paris was advising the Government to refuse the restoration of Calais, while he himself professed to Chaloner his hope that England would recover it. Many thousand Span-

iards were serving in the French army, while more were preparing to join them; and it seemed as if his chief anxiety was to stimulate the war.

The King of Spain had deeply resented the treatment of his ambassador. The Bishop of Aquila, he told Elizabeth, had been placed in England to preserve the alliance between his subjects and hers; and in what he had done had but obeyed the orders which he had received with his appointment.¹ Gresham reported from Flanders, as the belief on the Bourse, that 'there would be much ado with the summer for religion, when King Philip would disturb all he could to maintain Papistry;' and Gresham's own uniform advice to Elizabeth was to buy saltpetre, cast cannon, and build ships.²

More important and far more alarming was the likelihood of a peace in France in which England, as the phrase went, 'was to be left out at the cart's tail.' To the extent to which Elizabeth had been seeking objects of her own behind her affectation of a desire to help the Huguenots, the Huguenot leaders felt themselves entitled to desert her could they obtain the toleration which was of moment to themselves. Elizabeth had been ready to sacrifice them could she recover Calais by it. The Prince of Condé must have felt his conscience easy in repaying her in her own coin.

On the 7th of March Sir Thomas Smith believed that he had obtained what Elizabeth wanted; and that he

¹ Philip II. to Elizabeth, April 2, 1563: *Spanish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Gresham to Cecil, March 21: *Flanders MSS.*

would have peace and Calais in a month.¹ The Queen-mother had been ingeniously deluding him, that she might have evidence of treachery to lay before Condé, whom, on the 8th of the same month, she met with the Constable on an island in the Loire.

The eclipse of the Guises enabled the interest of France once more to be preferred to the interest of Rome. Catherine offered Condé his brother's place as Lieutenant-General, with a moderate toleration—something perhaps in advance of that of which Elizabeth had advised the acceptance—for the Calvinists. The Calvinists should pray to God as they pleased if they would cease to molest the Catholics. The 'strangers' on both sides should be sent home; the Spaniards should retire from the south, the English should evacuate Normandy. The Prince had promised Elizabeth that he would agree to no terms without giving her notice—and he kept his word. He wrote both to her and to Sir Thomas Smith, saying that he had taken arms for the freedom of conscience, which was now conceded; he assumed, without mentioning Calais, that Elizabeth had assisted him for the same object; and the object being secured there was no longer occasion for continuing the war.²

In vain Elizabeth required him to remember his honour and promise; in vain she bade him beware 'how he set an example of perfidy to the world.' She was but receiving the measure which she had prepared for

¹ Smith to Cecil, March 7: FORBES, vol. ii.

² Condé to Elizabeth, March 8; Condé to Sir T. Smith, March 11: FORBES, vol. ii.

her allies. Peace was signed in France on the 25th of March, and notice was sent to Warwick that the purpose of the war being happily accomplished, he was expected to withdraw from Havre.¹

April. The Prince however was unwilling to press matters to extremity. On the 8th of April he protested in a second and more gracious message, that neither by him nor by the Admiral had the town been placed in English hands; but he offered, in the name of himself, the Queen-Regent, and the entire nobility of France, to renew solemnly and formally the clause in the Treaty of Cambray for the restoration of Calais in 1567; to repay Elizabeth the money which she had lent him, and to admit the English to free trade and intercourse with all parts of France.

Could Elizabeth have temperately considered the value of these proposals she would have hesitated before she refused them; but she was irritated at having been outwitted in a transaction in which her own conduct had not been pure. The people, with the national blindness to everything but their own injuries, were as furious as the Queen. The garrison at Havre was only anxious for an opportunity of making 'the French cock cry cuck.'² They promised Elizabeth that 'the least molehill about her town should not be lost without many bloody blows;' and when a few days later there came the certainty that they would really be besieged, they prayed 'that the Queen would bend her brows and

¹ Warwick to the Council, March 31: FORBES, vol. ii.

² Pelham to Throgmorton, April 5: *Conway MSS.*

wax angry at the shameful treason;’ ‘the Lord Warwick and all his people would spend the last drop of their blood before the French should fasten a foot in the town.’¹

The French inhabitants of Havre had almost settled the difficulty for themselves. Feeling no pleasure, whatever they might affect, in having ‘their antient enemies’ among them, they opened a correspondence with the Rhingrave. A peasant passing the gates with a basket of chickens was observed to have something under his clothes. A few sheets of white paper was all which the guard could discover; but these, when held to the fire, revealed a conspiracy to murder Warwick and admit the French army.² The townspeople, men, women, and children, were of course instantly expelled; and the English garrison in solitary possession worked night and day to prepare for the impending struggle.

It was with no pleasure that Condé felt himself obliged to turn against Elizabeth the army which her own money had assisted him to raise. She had answered his proposals by sending to Paris a copy of the articles which both the Prince and the Admiral
May.
had subscribed. ‘No one thing,’ she said, ‘so much offended her as their unkind dealing after her friendship in their extremity;’ while Sir Thomas Smith, on the other side, described Condé as a second King of Navarre going the way of Baal Peor, and led astray by ‘Midianitish women.’ Yet, had Elizabeth’s own deal-

¹ Pelham to Throgmorton, April 15: *Conway MSS.*

² Henry King to Chaloner: *Spanish MSS.*

ings been free from reproach, it was impossible for Condé, had he been ever so desirous of it, to make the immediate restoration of Calais a condition of the peace. Had the war been fought out with the support of England in the field till the Catholics had been crushed, even then his own Huguenots would scarcely have permitted the surrender. Had he held out upon it when the two factions were left standing so evenly balanced, he would have enlisted the pride of France against himself and his cause, and identified religious freedom with national degradation. Before moving on Havre he made another effort. He sent M. de Bricquemaut to explain his position and to renew his offers enlarged to the utmost which he could venture. The young King wrote himself also accepting Elizabeth's declaration that her interference had been in no spirit of hostility to France, entreating that she would continue her generosity, and peace being made, recall her forces.¹ The ratification of the treaty of Cambray was promised again, with 'hostages at her choice' for the fulfilment of it, from the noblest families in France.

But it was all in vain. Elizabeth at first would not see Bricquemaut. She swore she would have no dealings with 'the false Prince of Condé,' and desired, if the French King had any message for her, that it should be presented by the ambassador Paul de Foix. When de Foix waited on her with Charles's letter she again railed at the Prince as 'a treacherous, inconstant, per-

¹ Charles IX. to Elizabeth, April 30: FORBES, vol. ii.

jured villain.’¹ De Foix, evidently instructed to make an arrangement if possible, desired her if she did not like the Prince’s terms to name her own conditions, and promised that they should be carefully considered. At first she would say nothing. Then she said she would send her answer through Sir Thomas Smith ; then suddenly she sent for Bricquemaut, and told him that ‘her rights to Calais being so notorious, she required neither hostages nor satisfaction ; she would have Calais delivered over ; she would have her money paid down ; and she would keep Havre till both were in her hands.’

Bricquemaut withdrew, replying briefly that if this was her resolution she must prepare for war. Once more de Foix was ordered to make a final effort. The council gave him the same answer which Elizabeth had given to Bricquemaut. He replied that the English had no right to demand Calais before the eight years agreed on in the treaty of Cambray were expired. The council rejoined that the treaty of Cambray had been broken by the French themselves in their attempt to enforce the claims of Mary Stuart, that the treaty of Edinburgh remained unratified, and that the fortifications at Calais and the long leases by which the lands in the Pale had been let proved that there was and could be no real intention of restoring it ; ‘so that it was lawful for the Queen to do any manner of thing for the recovery of Calais ; and being come to the quiet

¹ De Quadra to Philip, May 9 : *MS. Simancas*.

possession of Havre without force or any other unlawful means, she had good reason to keep it.’¹

On Bricquemaut’s return, Catherine de Medici lost not a moment. The troops of the Rhingrave, which had watched Havre through the spring, were reinforced. The armies of the Prince and of the Guises, lately in the field against each other, were united under the Constable, and marched for Normandy.

In England ships were hurried to sea; the western counties were allowed to send out privateers to pillage French commerce; and depôts of provisions were established at Portsmouth, with a daily service of vessels between Spithead and the mouth of the Seine. Recruits for the garrison were raised wherever volunteers could be found. The prisoners in Newgate and the Fleet—highwaymen, cutpurses, shoplifters, burglars, horse-stealers, ‘tall fellows’ fit for service—were drafted into the army in exchange for the gallows;² and the council determined to maintain in Havre a constant force of six thousand men and a thousand pioneers, sufficient, it was hoped, with the help of the fleet and the command of the sea, to defy the utmost which France could do.

Every day there was now fighting under the walls of the town, and the first successes were with the English. Fifty of the prisoners taken at Caudebecque, who had since worked in the galleys, killed their captain and carried their vessel into Havre. A sharp action followed

¹ ‘A conference between the French King’s ambassador and certain of her Majesty’s Council, June 2.’—*Conway MSS.*, Cecil’s hand.

² *Domestic MSS.*, *Elizabeth*, vol. xxviii.

with the Rhingrave, in which the French lost fourteen hundred men, and the English comparatively few.

Unfortunately young Tremayne was among the killed, a special favourite of Elizabeth, who had distinguished himself at Leith, the most gallant of the splendid band of youths who had been driven into exile in her sister's time, and had roved the seas as privateers. The Queen was prepared for war, but not for the cost of war. She had resented the expulsion of the French inhabitants of Havre: she had 'doubted' if they were driven from their homes 'whether God would be contented with the rest that would follow;'¹ she was more deeply affected with the death of Tremayne; and Warwick was obliged to tell her that war was a rough game; she must not discourage her troops by finding fault with measures indispensable to success; for Tremayne, he said, 'men came there to venture their lives for her Majesty and their country, and must stand to that which God had appointed either to live or die.'²

The English had a right to expect that they could hold the town against any force which could be brought against them; while the privateers, like a troop of wolves, were scouring the Channel and chasing French traders from the seas. One uneasy symptom alone betrayed itself: on the 7th of June Lord Warwick reported that a strange disease had appeared in the garrison, of which nine men had suddenly died.³

June.

¹ The Queen to Warwick, May 22: FORBES, vol. ii.

² Warwick to Cecil, June 9: *Domestic MS.*

³ Warwick to Cecil, June 7: *MS. Ibid.*

But the intimation created little alarm. For three more weeks the English Court remained sanguine, and talked not only of keeping Havre, but of carrying the war deeper into Normandy. 'I was yesterday with the Queen,' wrote de Quadra on the 2nd of July. 'She said she was about to send six thousand additional troops across the Channel, and the French should perhaps find the war brought to their own doors. Cecil and the Admiral said the same to me. They have fourteen ships well armed and manned besides their transports, and every day they grow more eager and exasperated.'¹

But on that day news was on the way which abridged these large expectations. 'The strange disease' was the plague; and in the close and narrow streets where seven thousand men were packed together amidst foul air and filth and summer heat, it settled down to its feast of death. On the 7th of June it was first noticed; on the 27th the men were dying at the rate of sixty a day; 'those who fell ill rarely recovered; the fresh water was cut off, and the tanks had failed from drought. There was nothing to drink but wine and cider; there was no fresh meat, and there were no fresh vegetables. The windmills were outside the walls and in the hands of the enemy; and though there was corn in plenty the garrison could not grind it. By the 29th of June the deaths had been five hundred. The corpses lay unburied or floated rotting in the harbour. The officers had chiefly escaped; the common men, worse fed and worse

¹ De Quadra to the Duchess of Parma. July 2: *MS. Simancas.*

lodged, fell in swathes like grass under the scythe, and the physicians died at their side.'

The Prince of Condé, notwithstanding the last answer to de Foix, had written on the 26th of June a very noble letter to Elizabeth. 'To prevent war,' he said, 'the King and Queen, the Princes of the blood, the Lords of the Council, the whole Parliament of Paris, would renew the obligation to restore Calais at the eight years' end. It was an offer which the Queen of England could accept without stain upon her honour, and by agreeing to it she would prove that she had engaged in the quarrel with a chief eye to the glory of God and the maintenance of the truth.'¹

Elizabeth had fiercely refused; and when this terrible news came from Havre she could not—would not—realize its meaning. She would send another army, she would call out the musters, and feed the garrison from them faster than the plague could kill. Cost what it would Havre should be held. It was but a question of men, money, and food; and the tarnished fame of England should be regained.²

And worse and worse came the news across the water. When June ended, out of his seven thousand men Warwick found but three thousand fit for duty, and the enemy were pressing him closer, and Montmorency had joined the Rhingrave. Thousands of workmen were throwing up trenches under the walls, and thousands of

¹ Condé to Elizabeth, June 26: FORBES, vol. ii.

² The Council to Warwick, June 29; Elizabeth to Warwick, July 4.
FORBES

women were carrying and wheeling earth for them. Of the English pioneers but sixty remained alive, and the French cannon were already searching and sweeping the streets. Reinforcements were hurried over by hundreds and then by thousands. Hale, vigorous English countrymen, they were landed on that fatal quay: the deadly breath of the destroyer passed upon them, and in a few days or hours they fell down, and there were none to bury them, and the commander could but clamour for more and more and more.

On the 11th of July but fifteen hundred
July. men were left. In ten days more at the present death rate Warwick said he would have but three hundred alive.¹ All failed except English hearts. 'Notwithstanding the deaths,' Sir Adrian Poynings reported, 'their courage is so good as if they be supplied with men and victual they trust by God's help yet to withstand the force of the enemy and to render the Queen a good account thereof.'² Those who went across from England, though going, as they knew, to all but certain death, 'kept their high courage and heart for the service.'³

Ship after ship arrived at Havre with its doomed freight of living men, yet Warwick wrote that still his numbers waned, that the new comers were not enough to repair the waste. The ovens were broken with the

¹ Warwick to the Council, July 11: FORBES, vol. ii. Endorsed 'Haste, post haste for thy life! Haste, haste, haste!'

² Sir Adrian Poynings to Cecil, July 6: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth.*

³ Sir Adrian Poynings to Cecil, July 9: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth.*

enemy's shot, the bakers were dead of the plague. The besiegers by the middle of the month were closing in upon the harbour mouth. A galley sent out to keep them back was shot through and sunk with its crew under the eye of the garrison. On the 19th their hearts were cheered by large arrivals, but they were raw boys from Gloucestershire, new alike to suffering and to arms. Cannon had been sent for from the Tower, and cannon came, but they were old and rusted and worthless. 'The worst of all sorts,' wrote Warwick, 'is thought good enough for this place.' It was the one complaint which at last was wrung from him.

To add to his difficulties the weather broke up in storms. Clinton had twenty sail with him, and three thousand men ready to throw in. If the fleet could have lain outside the harbour the ships' guns could have kept the approaches open. But a south-west gale chained Clinton in the Downs; the transports which sailed from St Helen's could not show behind the island, and there was a fear that the garrison, cut off from relief, might have been overpowered in their weakness and destroyed.

Too late for the emergency, and still with sullen unwillingness to yield, the Queen on the 20th sent over Throgmorton to accept Condé's terms. But the French Court was with the besieging army, and knew the condition of Warwick's troops too well to listen. The harbour was by that time closed; the provisions were exhausted; the French understood their power and meant to use it. Warwick, ordered as he had been to hold the place under all conditions, 'was prepared to

die sword in hand' rather than surrender without the Queen's permission ; but in a few days at latest those whom the sword and pestilence had spared famine would make an end of. Fortunately Sir Francis Knowles, who was in command at Portsmouth, had sent to the Court to say that they must wait for no answer from France ; they must send powers instantly to Warwick to make terms for himself. A general attack had been arranged for the morning of the 27th. Lord Warwick knew that he would be unable to resist, and with the remnant of his men was preparing the evening before to meet a soldier's death, when a boat stole in with letters, and he received Elizabeth's permission to surrender at the last extremity.

War, plague, and storm had done their work, and had done it with fatal efficacy. Clinton was chafing helplessly at his anchorage 'while the French were lying exposed on the beach at Havre.' He could not reach them, and they could but too effectually reach Warwick. Knowing that to delay longer was to expose the handful of noble men who survived with him to inevitable death, and himself wounded and ill, the English general sent at once to the Constable to make terms. The Constable would not abuse his advantage, and on the 29th of July Havre was restored to France, the few English troops remaining being allowed to depart with their arms and goods unmolested and at their leisure.

The day after, the weather changed, and Clinton arrived to find that all was over, and that Warwick him-

self was on board a transport ready to sail. The Queen-mother sent M. de Lignerolles on board Clinton's ship to ask him to dine with her. He excused himself under the plea that he could not leave his men; but he said to de Lignerolles 'that the plague of deadly infection had done for them that which all the force of France could never have done.'¹

Thus ended this unhappy enterprise in a disaster which, terrible as it seemed, was more desirable for England than success. Elizabeth's favouring star had prevented a conquest from being consummated which would have involved her in interminable war. Had it not been for the plague she might have held Havre; but she could have held it only at a cost which, before many years were over, would have thrown her an exhausted and easy prey at the feet of Philip.

The first thought of Warwick, ill as he was, on reaching Portsmouth, was for his brave companions. They had returned in miserable plight, and he wrote to the council to beg that they might be cared for. But there was no occasion to remind Elizabeth of such a duty as this: had she been allowed she would have gone at once at the risk of infection to thank them for their gallantry.² In a proclamation under her own hand she commended the soldiers who had
August.
 faced that terrible siege to the care of the country; she entreated every gentleman, she commanded every official, ecclesiastical or civil, in the realm to see to their

¹ Clinton to Cecil, July 31: *Domestic MSS.*, *Elizabeth*.

² Lord Robert Dudley to the Queen, August 7: *Domestic MSS.*, vol. xxix.

necessities 'lest God punish them for their unmercifulness;' she insisted with generous forethought 'that no person should have any grudge at those poor captains and soldiers because the town was rendered on conditions:' 'she would have it known and understood that there wanted no truth, courage, nor manhood in any of them from the highest to the lowest;' 'they would have withstood the French to the utmost of their lives; but it was thought the part of Christian wisdom not to tempt the Almighty to contend with the inevitable mortal enemy of the plague.'¹

Happy would it have been had the loss of Havre ended the calamities of the summer. But the garrison, scattering to their homes, carried the infection through England. London was tainted already, and with the heat and drought of August the pestilence in town and village held on its deadly way.

The eruption on the skin which was usual with the plague does not seem to have attended this visitation of it. The first symptom was violent fever, burning heat alternating with fits of shivering; the mouth then became dry, the tongue parched, with a pricking sensation in the breast and loins; headache followed and languor, with a desire to sleep, and after sleep came generally death, 'for the heart did draw the poison, and the poison by its own malice did pierce the heart.' When a man felt himself infected 'he did first commend himself to the highest Physician and craved mercy of him.'

¹ Proclamation by the Queen, August 1: *Domestic MSS.*

Where he felt pain he was bled, and he then drank the 'aqua contra pestem'—the plague water—buried himself in his bed, and if possible perspired. To allay his thirst he was allowed sorrel-water and verjuice, with slices of oranges and lemons. Light food—rabbit, chicken or other bird—was taken often and in small quantities. To prevent the spread of the contagion the houses and streets and staircases were studiously cleaned; the windows were set wide open and hung with fresh green boughs of oak or willow; the floors were strewed with sorrel, lettuce, roses, and oak leaves, and freely and frequently sprinkled with spring water or else with vinegar and rose-water. From cellar to garret six hours a day the houses were fumigated with sandalwood and musk, aloes, amber, and cinnamon. In the poorest cottages there were fires of rosemary and bay. Yet no remedy availed to prevent the mortality, and no precaution to check the progress of the infection. In July the deaths in London had been two hundred a week; through the following month they rose swiftly to seven hundred, eight hundred, a thousand, in the last week of the month to two thousand; and at that rate with scarcely a diminution the people continued to die till the November rains washed the sewers and kennels clean, and the fury of the disorder was spent.

The bishops, attributing the calamity to supernatural causes, and seeing the cause for the provocation of the Almighty in the objects which excited their own displeasure, laid the blame upon the theatres, and petitioned the Government to inhibit plays and amuse-

ments.¹ Sir William Cecil, not charging Providence till man had done his part, found the occasion rather in the dense crowding of the lodging-houses, 'by reason that the owners and tenants for greediness and lucre did take unto them other inhabitants and families to dwell in their chambers;' he therefore ordered that 'every house or shop should have but one master and one family,' and that aliens and strangers should remove.²

The danger alarmed the council into leniency towards the State prisoners. The Tower was emptied. The Catholic prelates were distributed among the houses of their rivals and successors; Lady Catherine Grey was committed to the charge of her father's brother, broken in health, heart, and spirit, praying, but praying in vain, that 'her lord and husband might be restored to her,' and pining slowly towards the grave into which a few years later she sank.³

The victims who died of the plague were chiefly obscure; one person however perished in it whose disappearance the reader will perhaps regret.

The story must go back for a few pages.

The King of Spain, after receiving de Quadra's letter which contained the proposals of the Queen of Scots for the Prince of Spain, took time to consider his answer, and at length on the 15th of June
 June. replied as follows:—

¹ Grindal to Cecil, February 22, 1564: *Lansdowne MSS.* 7.

² Sir Wm. Cecil's Injunction: *MS.* Ibid.

³ Letters of Lord John and Lady Catherine Grey: *Lansdowne MSS.*

PHILIP II. TO THE BISHOP OF AQUILA.

June 15.

‘I have pondered over the conversation which has passed between you and Maitland on the marriage between his mistress and the Prince my son, and I am much pleased with the discretion which you showed in your replies.

‘Perceiving as I do that if this marriage can be brought about it may be the beginning of a better state of things in England, I am willing to admit the consideration of it; and if you believe that those who have spoken with you on the subject are persons whom you can trust, you will use their assistance to bring the thing about.

‘You will learn from Maitland and from the Queen of Scots what friends they most rely upon in England. You will judge whether the names which they mention are of sufficient weight, and you will at once communicate with me. Above all you will be secret, for the good to be looked for depends on the marriage being completed before anything is heard of it. If the French know that I have given my consent there is no step to which their fears will not drive them to prevent the consummation of it, or, if we persist in spite of them, to hinder the good fruit which may be otherwise looked for. As to the Queen of England and the heretics, you can imagine for yourself what they are likely to do. You must therefore be most cautious with whom you speak on the subject, and in your choice of

agents through whom to communicate with the Queen of Scotland.

‘The Emperor also, you will observe, after what has passed between the Cardinal of Lorraine and himself,¹ can know nothing of the wishes of the Queen of Scots herself or of her subjects; he looks on his son’s affair as already settled; and I may say for myself that were there any likelihood of that marriage taking effect I should prefer it to the other.² I should not move in the matter at all till the Emperor was undeceived were it not for what you tell me of the unwillingness of that Queen and her advisers to accept the Archduke, and of the small advantage which they anticipate from the Austrian connection.

‘I am alarmed especially at the possibility of her marrying a French King again, for I cannot but remember the trouble which her last alliance in that quarter occasioned me. Should she marry in that quarter, I know but too well that at no distant time I shall be forced into war to protect the Queen of England from an invasion such as was intended before; and you can judge yourself whether that is an event to which I can look with pleasure.

¹ The Cardinal of Lorraine, in a personal interview with Ferdinand, had proposed a marriage between his niece and the Archduke Charles.

² A note in the margin of the letter, in Philip’s autograph, shows his extreme slowness and caution:—

‘De punto en punto me vieis avisando

de lo que en esto pasará, sin venir á convencion ninguna; mas de entender lo que arriba se dice, hasta que yo os avise de lo que en ello se me ofriciese y se hubiese de hacer; aunque podreis asegurarlos que mi intencion es la que aqui se dice.’

‘ You will ascertain what support the Scots can count upon in England, and you will not prevent them from increasing their party ; but you will not involve yourself with any particular person further than you have already done. Let them do the work by themselves, let them gain what friends they can among the Catholics and others whom they trust. If anything is discovered it must be their affair and not mine.

‘ As for what you say of the dependence of the English Catholics upon me, I am anxious to do the very utmost which I can for them. You will animate and console them as usual ; only of all things in the world you must be careful not to let your own hand be seen. You know what would follow.

‘ I am very sorry for the Act which the Queen has obtained from Parliament against those who will not accept her as Head of the Anglican Church. The bishops and other Catholics are now in danger of death. They have begun already, you tell me, with the Bishop of London.

‘ I am glad to hear that the Emperor has remonstrated, though I fear it will do little good. I have myself also written to the Queen ; and you will yourself do and say whatever promises to be most effective to make them change their purpose. I know that I can depend on you in this, feeling as you do so acutely about it.’¹

¹ Ferdinand, immediately on the passing of the Act, wrote to beg that no violence might be used towards the Catholic bishops. The ingenuity of the lawyers might have been less successful had not Elizabeth been

To Philip's letter a few lines were added by the Duke of Alva :

ALVA TO THE BISHOP OF AQUILA.

June 16.

'Although his Majesty in his own letter has told you how important it is to be secret in the affair of the marriage of the Queen of Scots, I cannot but myself reiterate the same caution. The world must know nothing till all is actually over, or no good will come of it.

'You will therefore charge those with whom you have to deal to allow no hint of our purpose to transpire. You will let us know step by step how the negotiation proceeds, and his Majesty will take measures accordingly.'

No answer could have promised better for Mary Stuart's hopes; but it had been long in coming, and the diplomacy of conspiracy was restless and feverish.

Maitland, after his visit to France, returned to July.

London in July to learn what de Quadra had heard. He had as yet heard nothing, and Maitland's views meanwhile had been qualified by a conversation with Catherine de Medici. The Queen-mother, as

able to shield herself behind Ferdinand's and Philip's letters. Archbishop Parker also lent his assistance. In a circular to his brother bishops he desired them, with the Queen's and Cecil's connivance, not to offer the oath to any one a second time without referring to himself;

'not,' he said, 'that he had warrant to stay the execution of impartial laws,' but being ready 'to jeopard his private estimation if the purpose which the Queen would have done, might be performed.'—STRYKE'S *Life of Parker*, vol. i. pp. 249, 250.

Philip had foreseen, dreaded nothing so much as this Spanish marriage: and to prevent it she had promised that if the Queen of Scots would remain unmarried for two years, Charles the Ninth and the crown of France would again be at her service. Construing Philip's silence unfavourably, Maitland allowed de Quadra to see that he thought well of the French connection. In vain de Quadra spoke of the Archduke Charles. Maitland would not hear of him unless with a distinct understanding that Philip would make his mistress Queen of England. It was yet possible too for the Queen of Scots to extort favourable terms from Elizabeth.

Before Maitland returned to Scotland, Elizabeth in her parting interview bade him tell Mary Stuart that if she married into the houses of Austria, France, or Spain, she would take it as an act of war.¹ She would prefer a marriage at home for her. But there were the Protestant Princes; there was the King of Denmark; there was the Duke of Ferrara: any one of these she might choose, or any French nobleman not of royal rank, and she should be named successor at once.

Maitland entered too far into these views for de Quadra's peace. He feared that Mary Stuart herself in her passionate desire for recognition might consent after all to some marriage detrimental to the interests of Catholicism,² and in dread of such a catastrophe, and

¹ 'No podría de dejarla de tener por enemiga.'—De Quadra to Philip, June 26: *MS. Simancas*.

² 'Es de temer que la golosina de ser declarada sucesora deste Reyno

no haga aquella Reyna condescender en algun casamiento menos conveniente á las cosas de la religion.'—De Quadra to Philip, June 26: *MS. Simancas*.

not trusting Maitland, the Spanish ambassador, on his own responsibility, sent an English friend to lay before her the wishes of the Catholics, and to assure her that whether she obtained the Prince of Spain, or accepted the Archduke Charles, Philip in either case would support her claims in England by arms.¹

At this crisis the letters of Philip and Alva reached London. De Quadra regretted that his commission was so cautiously worded; but he lost not a moment in despatching his own secretary, Luis de Paz, to Holyrood. As a blind to the English Government he sent him first to Chester, under pretence of inquiring into the seizure of a Spanish ship by pirates. At Chester de Paz found that the pirates in question were Scots—and went on as if to seek redress at Edinburgh. There he saw Mary Stuart, Maitland, and Murray. His message was received with delight by all of them. The Queen of Scots wrote to the Duchess of Parma, relinquishing with eager gratitude every other prospect for herself. The Bishop of Ross hurried off to London to de Quadra to agree to all conditions which Philip might ask.² The long and dangerous labours of the indefatigable ambassador were at last, it seemed, about to prosper and bear fruit—when in the moment of success he was taken away. Luis de

August. Paz returned to London on the 26th of August to find him dying. ‘He knew me,’ Luis

¹ ‘Que tenga fuerzas para conseguir su derecho á este Reyno.’—*MS. Simancas*.

² Note of the mission of Luis de Paz to Scotland, by Diego Perez. *MIGNET'S Life of Mary Stuart*. Appendix C.

wrote, 'and answered bravely when I spoke to him. He was grieved to end his services at a moment when he hoped to be of use. His last words were, 'I can do no more.''¹

So died a good servant of a falling cause—faithful even unto death. The Bishop of Aquila had the character of his race and his profession. In the arts of diplomatic treachery he was an accomplished master. Untiring and unscrupulous, skilled in the subtle windings of the heart, he could stimulate the conscience into heroism, or play with its weakness till he had tempted it to perdition—as suited best with the ends which he pursued with the steadiness of a sleuthhound. He would converse in seeming frankness from day to day with those whom with his whole soul he was labouring to blast into ruin. Yet he was brave as a Spaniard should be—brave with the double courage of an Ignatius and a Cortez. He was perfectly free from selfish and ignoble desires, and he was loyal with an absolute fealty to his creed and his King. It was his misfortune that he served in a cause which the world now knows to have been a wrong cause; but qualifications in themselves neither better nor worse than those of Alvarez de Quadra won for Walsingham a place in the brightest circle of English statesmen.

How it might have fared with Mary Stuart and Don Carlos had de Quadra lived to complete the work for which he was so anxious, the curious in such things

¹ 'No puedo mas.'—*Memoir of Luis de Paz*: MS. Simancas.

may speculate. The Prince of Spain had the intellect and the ferocity of a wolf; the Queen of Scots had a capacity for relieving herself of disagreeable or inconvenient companions. Yet they would scarcely perhaps have made their lots more wretched than they actually were: we wonder at the caprices of fortune; we complain of the unequal fates which are distributed among mankind—but Providence is more even-handed than it seems; Mary Stuart might have been innocent and happy as a fishwife at Leith; the Prince of Spain might have arrived at some half-brutal usefulness breaking clods on the brown plains of Castile.

Philip's orders had been so well observed that no hints had transpired of what was intended. The Archduke Charles was the supposed candidate in the Spanish and Imperial interest. The Cardinal of Lorraine had arranged the marriage with Ferdinand. It had been talked of in the Council of Trent. It had been argued upon in a Parliament which met at Edinburgh in the preceding June. The name of the Prince of Spain was mentioned from time to time, but rather as a vague surmise; and the last thought which entered the mind of any one was that Philip would seriously substitute his son for his cousin. The Austrian match was the object of Elizabeth's fears; and what she had said to Maitland she directed Randolph to submit formally to the Queen of Scots herself.

To settle the succession in some way, and if possible to settle it in Mary Stuart's favour, she said, was her most ardent desire. She had combated hitherto the wish

of Parliament to disinherit Mary. On public grounds she was anxious for the union of the realms—and privately she considered the Queen of Scots' claim to be the best. But the Queen of Scots, if she was to succeed to the English crown, must make up her mind to accept the Reformation, if not as her own conviction yet as the public law of the realm. If she chose to marry a Catholic prince, if she chose to make herself the representative of a Catholic party and policy, Parliament would unquestionably renew the attempt to bar her title; the country would not submit again to the Pope and the Inquisition, and Elizabeth would herself be unable to take her part further.¹

'She did not believe,' Elizabeth continued—and the clause is in her own handwriting; 'she did not believe that the Queen of Scots meant anything against herself;' and 'she might perhaps be borne in hand that some number in England might be brought to allow' her general schemes. But she warned her sister not to be 'abused' by

¹ 'To consider her own particular which, in the way of friendship towards her, we do most weigh, we do assure her by some present proof that we have in our realm, upon some small report made thereof (of the Austrian marriage), we well perceive that, if we do not meddle and interpose her authority, it will not be long before it shall appear that as much as wit can imagine will be used to impeach her intention for the furtherance of her title. And considering the humours of such as

mind—except our authority or the fear of us shall stay them—their own particular, what can our sister think more hurtful to her than by this manner of proceeding by her friends that be not of her natural nation nor of her kingdom—first, to endanger the amity betwixt us; secondly, to dissolve the concord between the two nations; thirdly, to disappoint her of more than ever they shall recover.'—Elizabeth to Randolph, August 20: *Cotton. MSS., CALIG.B. 10.*

foolishness. 'If she tried that way she would come to no good.' For both their own sakes and for the sake of both the countries she implored the Queen of Scots to avoid a course which might 'become a perpetual reproof to both of them through all posterity.' If she married the Archduke, England must and would accept that act as a declaration of hostility. If she would take advice which she might assure herself was well meant towards her, she would marry some one to whom no suspicion could be attached. Her title should then be examined, and should receive the fullest support which she herself could give it—'her own natural inclination being most given to further her sister's interest and to impeach what should seem to the contrary.'

As to the person—an English nobleman would best please the English nation; and measuring the attractiveness of the offer by her self-sacrifice in making it, Elizabeth said that 'she could be content to give her one whom perchance it could be hardly thought she could agree unto.' But she would not bind the Queen of Scots to this choice or to that; England required only that she should not marry any one 'of such greatness as suspicion might be gathered that he might intend trouble to the realm;' she might take a husband where she pleased 'so as he was not sought to change the policy' of the English nation, which it was certain 'that they would in no wise bear.'¹

What right, it has been asked impatiently, had Eliza-

¹ Instructions to Randolph, August 20: *Cotton. MSS.*, CALIG. B. 10. Matter committed to Thomas Randolph, August, 1563: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

beth to interfere with Mary Stuart's marriage? As much right, it may be answered, as Mary Stuart had to pretend to the succession of the English crown. Those who aspire to sovereignty must accept the conditions under which sovereignty can be held. The necessities of State which at the present day bar the succession of a Roman Catholic, were stronger a thousandfold when a Catholic sovereign might bring back with her the fires of Smithfield: and the fault of Elizabeth was rather in forbearing to insist upon a change of creed than in being willing to accept a successor with a less effective security for her harmlessness.

Nor was it Elizabeth only who had a right to be alarmed. Murray, Argyle, and Maitland had been led astray by vanity and idle ambition. In their eagerness to give a sovereign to England they had half lost their interest in the Reformation, or had closed their eyes to the dangers to which they exposed it. But there were those in Scotland to whom the truth of God was more than crowns and kingdoms—to whom the revolution which had passed over their country was too precious to be fooled away by courtiers' weakness or a woman's cunning. Knox knew as well as Mary knew the fruit which would follow if she married a Catholic prince. He had laboured to save Murray from the spell which his sister had flung over him; but Murray had only been angry at his interference, and 'they spake not together familiarly for more than a year and a half.'¹

¹ KNOX'S *History of the Reformation*.

The falling off of his friends threw the weight of the battle upon Knox. In 'the Parliament time,' when the Lords, thinking then only of the Austrian Charles, had been congratulating one another on the great match intended for their Queen, Knox rose in the pulpit at St Giles's and told them all 'that whenever they, professing the Lord Jesus, consented that a Papist should be head of their sovereign, they did as far as in them lay to banish Christ from the realm; they would bring God's vengeance on their country, a plague on themselves, and perchance small comfort to their sovereign.'

It was language which should not have been needed, for it was language which they should themselves have used. It was language which with the necessary change of diction any English statesman would have used from the Revolution till the present day. It contained but a plain political truth of which Knox happened to be the exponent.

Mary recognized her enemy. Hitherto she had failed to work upon, and believing herself sure of the Lords she gave her anger its course.

In imagination Queen of Scotland, England, Ireland, Spain, Flanders, Naples, and the Indies—in the full tide of hope and with the prize almost in her hands, she was in no humour to let a heretic preacher step between her and the soaring flights of her ambition. She sent for Knox, and her voice shaking between tears and passion, she said that never had prince been handled as she; she had borne his bitterness, she had admitted him to her presence, she had endured to be reprimanded, and

yet she could not be quit of him ; ‘ she vowed to God she would be avenged.’

Quiet, collected—seeing through and through her, yet with a sound northern courtesy, the Reformer answered that when it pleased God to open her eyes she would see that he had done nothing to offend her ; in private he had been silent ; ‘ in the preaching place ’ he must obey God Almighty.

‘ But what,’ she asked, ‘ have you to do with my marriage ? ’

He said his duty was to preach the Evangel : the nobility were so much addicted to her affections that they had forgotten their duty, and he was therefore bound to remind them of it.

‘ But what,’ she repeated, ‘ have you to do with my marriage ? what are you within this commonwealth ? ’

‘ A subject born within the same, madam,’ he replied ; ‘ and one whose vocation and conscience demands plainness of speech ; and therefore, madam,’ he went on, ‘ I say to yourself what I spake in yonder public place—whenever the nobility shall consent that you be subject to an unfaithful husband, they renounce Christ and betray the realm.’

The Queen again sobbed violently.

Knox stood silent till she had collected herself. He then continued—‘ Madam, in God’s presence I speak ; I never delighted in the weeping of any of God’s creatures ; yea, I can scarcely abide the tears of my own boys whom my own hand corrects ; but seeing I have but spoken the truth as my vocation craves of me, I must sustain

your Majesty's tears rather than hurt my conscience.'

Soon after this conversation Randolph brought Elizabeth's message. In his account of the interview he gives a noticeable sketch of Mary Stuart's personal habits.

Active and energetic when occasion required, this all-accomplished woman abandoned herself to intervals of graceful self-indulgence. Without illness or imagination of it she would lounge for days in bed, rising only at night for dancing or music; and there she reclined with some light delicate French robe carelessly draped about her, surrounded by her ladies, her council, and her courtiers, receiving ambassadors and transacting business of State. It was in this condition that Randolph found her. She affected the utmost cordiality; she listened graciously to his communication; she professed herself grateful for Elizabeth's interest in her; she desired him to be cautious to whom he spoke, and referred him for her answer to Maitland and Murray. But with all her address she could not conceal from him that more was intended than she allowed to appear. Her want of interest in the Austrian marriage was evident, and Randolph himself feared 'she might be more Spanish than Imperial.'¹ A month later John Knox had discovered the secret and made haste to tell Cecil what was impending. It was no Austrian prince on whom Mary's eyes were fixed. The King of Spain had consented to give her his son. The Queen of France offered

¹ Randolph to Cecil, September 4: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

her the hand of Charles the Ninth. She would take Don Carlos if Philip kept his word. If Don Carlos failed her she would take the French King. The majority of her council had consented to what would be their own destruction, and 'the greater part would before long draw the better after them.' The Queen of England would be amused with smooth answers; but the mask would soon be laid aside. There was still hope of the constancy of the Earl of Murray. But if Murray followed the rest 'the rage of the storm would overthrow the force of the strongest'—'all through the inordinate affection of her that was born to be a plague to the realm.'

'Thus,' Knox concluded, 'you have the plainness of my troubled heart; use it as ye will answer to God and as ye tender the commonwealth; the Eternal assist you with His Spirit.'¹

October.

In the midst of these encompassing perils Elizabeth bore herself bravely. The death-rate in London at the end of December was still two hundred a week; the country was smarting under the disaster at Havre; the French difficulty was likely to lead to a general war² in which Spain would take part; and Mary Stuart married to a Catholic prince formed the

December.

¹ Knox to Cecil, October 5: *Scotch MSS.* A postscript adds—'The Inch between Leith and Kinghorn is left void. What strange fowl shall first alight there God knoweth.'

² 'By many intelligences here, I see none other but war to ensue be-

tween us and the French King ere it be long. God send grace that King Philip's subjects be not also our enemies, for we suspect as much.'—Francis Chaloner to Sir Thomas Chaloner, December 18: *Spanish MSS. Rolls House.*

ominous centre round which the clouds were forming. Yet Elizabeth to the world appeared to be given up to amusement, caring for nothing but pleasure, and wasting her fondness upon idle and tawdry favourites. 'The Queen,' wrote Francis Chaloner to his brother, 'thinks of nothing but her love affairs; she spends her days with her hawks and hounds and her nights in dances and plays. Though all things go ill with England she is incapable of serious thought. The Court is as merry as if the world were at our feet; and the ingenious fool who can devise the best means of trifling away time is the man most admired and prized.'¹

Yet Elizabeth was but concealing her real nature behind a mask of levity. Her spirits rose with trouble, and her high qualities were never more thoroughly awake.

Notwithstanding the struggle in Normandy, peace still existed in name between England and France; but Catherine demanded as an indemnity for the aggression on French territory a formal surrender of the English claim on Calais. Elizabeth answered that she would brave all consequences before she would submit 'to that dishonour:'² and a declaration of war was daily expected. Philip had offered to mediate, but with the key

¹ 'Regina tota amoribus dedita est, venationibusque aucupiiis choreis et rebus ludicris insumens dies noctesque; nihil serio tractatur, quantum omnia adverse cedant; tamen jocamur hic, perinde ac si orbem universum debellati fuerimus. Et

qui plures nugandi modos ridiculo studio excogitaverit, quasi vir summo pretio dignus suspicitur. — *Spanish MSS.*

² Elizabeth to Chaloner, December, 1563: *MS. Ibid.*

to Philip's policy in her hand she left him unanswered till his ministers complained to her ambassador of her scanty courtesy;¹ and then for reply she bade Chaloner tell Philip that in her past difficulties, though he had many opportunities of helping her, she had received nothing from him but 'good words:' he desired to have her at his feet, acting under his orders, and humbly petitioning for his support; but never in that position should Philip see her: she doubted whether a protracted residence of an ambassador at the Court of Spain was any longer expedient; she had half resolved to continue her diplomatic intercourse with him only through the Regent in Flanders; better an open enemy than a treacherous friend; if the worst came she could encounter it.²

In her bearing towards Mary Stuart she showed at the same time large forbearance and a clear foreseeing statesmanship. She knew the Queen of Scots' intentions beyond all uncertainty, but she still hoped to win her over to a safer course with the prospect of the succession;³ while Mary Stuart, on her part, would not risk a quarrel till the Spanish affair had gone further. De Quadra's death had broken the link of her com-

¹ Chaloner to Elizabeth, December 19: *Spanish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Elizabeth to Chaloner: *MS.* Ibid.

³ Luis de Paz, who was left in charge at the Spanish embassy after de Quadra's death, wrote to Philip on the 3rd of December that Elizabeth had been speaking of the mar-

riage between the Queen of Scots and the Prince of Spain, and had said positively it should never be. 'No, no!' 'que no se hará.' It was thought, he said, that she would tempt the Queen of Scots to give it up by the largeness of her offers on the other side.—*MS. Simancas*.

munication with Philip, and since the visit of Luis de Paz she had heard no more from him.

After a delay of some weeks she had replied to Randolph's message, thanking Elizabeth for her advice; to gain time and to avoid committing herself to a refusal, she desired to be told explicitly which of the many candidates for her hand would be 'allowed' in England and which would not; and again with more distinctness what would be done for her if she married as Elizabeth wished.

It is quite certain that the Queen of Scots had no real intention of being guided by Elizabeth.
November. Maitland had told de Quadra that she would not marry a Protestant even if her recognition was an accomplished fact. The inquiry therefore could only have been finesse. Elizabeth, with less temptation to insincerity, replied 'that the principal marriage which would make all other marriages fortunate, happy, and fruitful was the conjunction of the two countries and the two Queens;' but she warned the Queen of Scots that 'whatever mountains of felicity or worldly pomp' she might promise herself by going her own way, she would find her hopes in the end deceive her; the fittest husband for her would be some English or Scottish nobleman; but if she preferred to look elsewhere all Christendom was open, excepting only—as the Queen of Scots desired her to be explicit—the royal Houses of Spain, France, or Austria. A marriage into either of these could be construed only into a renewal of the schemes which she had entertained 'in her late marriage with the

French King ; but no other restriction should be placed upon her choice and no other difficulty raised.' Elizabeth trusted only that her selection 'might be such as should tend to the perpetual weal of the two kingdoms—the conjunction whereof she counted the only marriage of continuance and blessedness—to endure after their own lives to posterity to the pleasure of Almighty God and the eternal renown of themselves as queens and good mothers of their countries.'

To the last question of the Queen of Scots—what should be done for her if she complied—Elizabeth answered that she would 'proceed forthwith to the inquisition of her right by all good means in her favour ; and finding it fall to her advantage, upon plain understanding had what manner of marriage she should make, she would proceed to the denunciation of her title as she would do for her own natural daughter.'¹

It was long before Randolph was allowed an audience to give this second message. The Queen of Scots had quarrelled again with Knox, whom she attempted to provide with lodgings in Edinburgh Castle ; the Lords had interfered, and anger and disappointment had made her ill.

Moreover she was still waiting for letters from Spain which would not arrive. She was waiting and would have long to wait ; for the fire of resolution no longer fanned by de Quadra's letters had grown faint again, and other schemes and other anxieties

¹ Elizabeth to Randolph, November 17 : *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10. Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

were distracting Philip's mind from Scotland. The death of Guise and the compromise between Condé and Catherine had destroyed the party which he had raised in France. Ferdinand of Austria was on the edge of the grave. There was a project for marrying the daughter of Maximilian, who would succeed to the Empire, to Charles the Ninth; and this alliance might serve to renew the broken league among the Catholic powers, or at all events might relieve him of his fear that the prize might be secured by Mary Stuart. A grave difficulty lay in the character of Don Carlos himself. 'The cruel and sullen disposition of the Prince of Spain' was becoming more dangerous as he grew towards manhood. His brain had been hurt by a fall. His appetite was so furious that no gluttony could satisfy it. His passions were so violent that the King himself durst not thwart him lest he should die in the suffocation of his rage.¹ Such a youth was no promising subject of a matrimonial intrigue—no safe foundation on which to build a policy.

Towards England Chaloner described Philip as 'uncertain whether the ancient league or present personal respects should most prevail with him.' The best-informed Spaniards held a war to be eventually inevitable; but they did not expect it immediately. The Pope was labouring to bring about a cordial action between the Catholic sovereigns, and it was thought he would eventually succeed; but the critical condition of Flanders—fermenting on the edge of rebellion—would

¹ Minutes of Sir Thomas Chaloner, December 19: *Spanish MSS.*

probably postpone for the present the rupture with Elizabeth. Philip, Chaloner said, was 'a prince of good disposition, soft nature, and given to tranquillity,' who if left to himself would leave England in peace; but Alva, Ruy Gomez, de Feria, and others by whom he was surrounded were men of another temperament; and Elizabeth's wellwishers in Spain advised her to make peace with France in time, and reserve her strength for the future struggle.¹

The condition of Don Carlos however forbade the further mootings of the Scotch or any other marriage for him, and Mary Stuart's hope of sharing the Crown of Spain, whatever else she might expect from Philip, faded away. It was necessary for her to turn her thoughts elsewhere; and uncertain what to do she at length admitted Randolph to her cabinet once more.

She was again in bed. It was after dinner. Murray, Maitland, Argyle, and a number of other noblemen were present.

'Now, Mr Randolph,' she said, kissing as she spoke a diamond heart—a present from Elizabeth—which hung about her neck: 'Now, Mr Randolph, I long to hear what answer you have brought me from my good sister. I am sure it cannot be but good.'

Randolph delivered his message.

She listened without interest till he spoke of her recognition, when she became at once attentive. She

¹ Minutes of Sir Thomas Chaloner, December 19: *Spanish MSS.*

expected however to hear some person named as the husband desired for her.

‘You have more to tell me,’ she said, ‘let me hear all.’

Randolph answered that his commission extended no further.

Lord Argyle approached the bed. ‘My Lord,’ she said to him, ‘Randolph here would have me marry in England. What say you?’

‘Is the Queen of England become a man?’ said Argyle.

‘Who is there, my Lord,’ said she, ‘that you would wish me to marry?’

‘Whoever your Majesty can like well enough,’ the Earl answered. ‘I would there was so noble a man in England as you could like.’

‘That would not please the Hamiltons,’ said the Queen.

‘If it please God and be good for your Majesty’s country,’ Argyle rejoined, ‘what matter it who is displeased?’

She passed the subject off.¹

She dismissed Randolph without an answer, and weeks passed before she sent for him again. He spoke to Murray and Maitland, to all those lords who were under the deepest obligations to England, but they were cold and reserved.

‘The Lord everlasting bring it to pass,’ he wrote to

¹ Randolph to Cecil, December 13, December 21, and December 30 : *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

Elizabeth, 'that we may rather rejoice in the birth of your Majesty's body before any other without the same, whom God may put in your heart to yield your right unto after your Majesty's days.'¹

¹ Randolph to Elizabeth, January 21, 1564: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

NOTE TO p. 30.

EXTRACT from the Sermon of Dr Nowell made at the opening of Parliament, January 12, 1562-3, from a manuscript in the library of Caius College, Cambridge:—

'Furthermore, where the Queen's Majesty of her own nature is wholly given to clemency and mercy, as full well appeareth hitherto; for in this realm was never seen a change so quiet and so long since reigning without blood (God be thanked for it); howbeit those which hitherto will not be reformed, but obstinate and can skill by no clemency or courtesy, ought otherwise to be used. But now will some say, 'Oh, bloody man that calleth this the house of right, and now would have it made a house of blood.' But the Scripture teacheth us that divers faults ought to be punished by death, and therefore following God's precepts it cannot be accounted cruel; and it is not against this house, but the part thereof; to see justice ministered to them who will abuse clemency. Therefore the goodness of Her Majesty's clemency may well and ought now therefore to be changed to justice, seeing it will not help. But now to explicate myself, I say, if any man keeping his opinion, will, and mind, close within himself, and so not open the same, then he ought not to be punished, but when he openeth it abroad then it hurteth and ought to be cut off: And especially, if in anything it touch the Queen's Majesty; for such errors of heresy, ought not, as well for God's quarrel as the realm's, to be unlooked unto, for clemency ought not to be given to

the wolves to kill and devour as they do the lambs, for which cause it ought to be foreseen ; for that the Prince shall answer for all that so perish, it lying in her power to redress it, for by the Scriptures murderers, breakers of the holy day, and maintainers of false religion ought to die by the sword.

‘Also some other sharp laws for adultery, and also for murder, more stricter than for felony—which in France is well used, as the wheel for the one, the halter for the other, which if we had here I doubt not within few years would save many a man’s life.’

CHAPTER XLII

SHAN O'NEIL.

THE currency speculations of the Government of Edward the Sixth had not recommended to the Irish the morals of the Reformation; the plays of Bishop Bale had failed to convert them to its theology. On the accession of Mary the Protestant missionaries had fled from their duties, being unambitious of martyrdom, and the English service which had been forced into the churches disappeared without sound or effort. The monasteries of the four shires, wherever the estates had remained with the Crown, were rebuilt and re-inhabited; beyond the border of the Pale the Irish chieftains followed the example, wherever piety or superstition were stronger than avarice. In the south the religious houses had been protected from spoliation by the Earl of Desmond, and the monks had been secretly supported; with the change of government they were reinstated in their homes, and the country reverted to its natural condition. The English garrisons ceased and pillaged the farmers of Meath and Dublin; the

chiefs made forays upon each other, killing, robbing, and burning. When the war broke out between England and France there were the usual conspiracies and uprisings of nationality; the young Earl of Kildare, in reward to the Queen who had restored him to his rank, appearing as the natural leader of the patriots.

Ireland was thus happy in the gratification of all its natural tendencies. The Brehon law readvanced upon the narrow limits to which, by the exertions of Henry the Eighth, the circuits of the judges had been extended; and with the Brehon law came anarchy as its inseparable attendant. 'The Lords and Gentiles of the Irish Pale that were not governed under the Queen's laws were compelled to keep and maintain a great number of idle men of war to rule their people at home, and exact from their neighbours abroad — working every one his own wilful will for a law—to the spoil of his country and decay and waste of the common weal of the same.' 'The idle men of war ate up all together;' the lord and his men took what they pleased, 'destroying their tenants and themselves never the better;' 'the common people having nothing left to lose,' became 'as idle and careless in their behaviour as the rest,' 'stealing by day and robbing by night.' Yet it was a state of things which they seemed all equally to enjoy, and high and low alike 'were always ready to bury their own quarrels to join against the Queen and the English.'¹

¹ The disorders of the Irishry, 1559: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

At the time when the crown passed to Elizabeth the good and bad qualities of the people were thus described by a correspondent of the council.

‘The appearance and outward behaviour of the Irish sheweth them to be fruits of no good tree, for they exercise no virtue, and refrain and forbear from no vice, but think it lawful to do every man what him listeth.

‘They neither love nor dread God nor yet hate the devil. They are worshippers of images and open idolaters. Their common oath they swear is by books, bells, and other ornaments which they do use as holy religion. Their chief and solemnest oath is by their lord’s or master’s hand, which whoso forswearth is sure to pay a fine or sustain a worse turn.

‘The Sabbath day they rest from all honest exercises, and the week days they are not idle, but worse occupied.

‘They do not honour their father or mother so much as they do reverence strangers.

‘For every murder they commit they do not so soon repent; for whose blood they once shed, they lightly never cease killing all that name.

‘They do not so commonly commit adultery; not for that they profess or keep chastity, but for that they seldom or never marry, and therefore few of them are lawful heirs, by the laws of the realm, to the lands they possess.

‘They steal but from the strong, and take by violence from the poor and weak.

‘They know not so well who is their neighbour as whom they favour; with him they will witness in right and wrong.

‘They covet not their neighbours’ goods, but command all that is their neighbours’ as their own.

‘Thus they live and die, and there is none to teach them better. There are no ministers. Ministers will not take pains where there is no living to be had, neither church nor parish, but all decayed. People will not come to inhabit where there is no defence of law.’¹

1559. The condition of the Pale was more miserable than that of the districts purely Irish. The garrison took from the farmers by force whatever they required for their support, paying for it in the brass shillings in which they themselves received their own wages. The soldiers robbed the people; the Government had before robbed the soldiers; and the captains of the different districts in turn robbed the Government by making false returns of the number of men under their command. They had intermarried with the Irish, or had Irish mistresses living in the forts with them, and thus for the most part they were in league with those whom they were maintained to repress; so that choosing one master instead of many, and finding themselves obnoxious to their own countrymen by remaining under a rule from which they derived no protection, the tenantry of

¹ The disorders of the Irishry, 1559 : *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

Meath flocked by hundreds over the northern border, and took refuge with O'Neil.¹

Sir Edward Bellingham in 1549, by firmness of hand and integrity of heart, had made the English name respected from the Giant's Causeway to Valentia. Could Bellingham have lived a few years longer—could Somerset or Northumberland or Mary, so zealous each in their way for 'the glory of God,' have remembered that without common sense and common honesty at the bottom of them, creeds and systems are as houses built on quicksands—the order which had taken root might have grown strong under the shadow of justice, and Ireland might have had a happier future.

But this was not to be. The labour and expense of a quarter of a century was thrown idly away. The Irish army, since the rebellion of Lord Thomas Fitzgerald, had cost thirteen or fourteen hundred thousand pounds, yet the Pale was shortened and its revenues decreased; the moral ruin was more complete than the

¹ After six years of discipline and improvement, Sir Henry Sidney described the state of the four shires, the Irish inhabitants, and the English garrison, in the following language:—

'The English Pale is overwhelmed with vagabonds—stealth and spoil daily carried out of it; the people miserable—not two gentlemen in the whole of it able to lend twenty pounds. They have neither horse nor armour, nor apparel nor victual. The soldiers be so beggar-

like as it would abhor a general to look on them; yet so insolent as to be intolerable to the people, so rooted in idleness as there is no hope by correction to amend them, yet so allied with the Irish I dare not trust them in a fort or in any dangerous service. They have all an Irish *w—e* or two—never a married wife among them; so that all is known that we intend to do here.'—Sidney to Leicester, March 5, 1556: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

financial, and the report of 1559 closed with an earnest exhortation to Elizabeth to remember that the Irish were her subjects; that it was her duty as their sovereign 'to bring the poor ignorant people to better things,' 'and to recover so many thousand lost souls that were going headlong to the devil.'¹

Following close on the first survey, a more detailed account was furnished to Cecil of the social condition of the people. The common life of a chief and the relations between any two adjoining tribes were but too familiar and intelligible. But there was a general organization among the people themselves, extending wherever the Irish language was spoken; with a civilization of an Irish kind and an intellectual hierarchy. Besides the priests there were four classes of spiritual leaders and teachers, each with their subdivisions.

'The first,' wrote Cecil's correspondent, 'is called the Brehon, which in English is called 'the judge;' and before they give judgment they take pawns of both the parties, and then they will judge according to their own discretion. These men be neuters, and the Irishmen will not prey them. They have great plenty of cattle, and they harbour many vagabonds and idle persons; and if there be any rebels that move rebellion against the prince, of these people they are chiefly maintained; and if the English army fortune to travel in that part where they be, they will flee to the moun-

¹ *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

tains and woods, because they would not succour them with victuals and other necessities.

‘The next sort is called the ‘Shankee.’ They also have great plenty of cattle wherewith they do succour the rebels. They make the ignorant men of the country believe that they be descended of Alexander the Great, or of Darius, or of Cæsar, or of some other notable prince, which makes the ignorant people to run mad and care not what they do—the which is very hurtful to the realm.

‘The third sort is called ‘Denisdan,’ which is to say in English the ‘Boulde.’ These people be very hurtful to the commonwealth, for they chiefly maintain the rebels; and further they do cause them that would be true, to be rebellious—thieves, extortioners, murderers, raveners—yea and worse if it was possible. Their first practice, if they see any young man descended of the sept of O or Mac, and have half a dozen about him, then will they make a rhyme wherein they will commend his father and his ancestors, numbering how many heads they have cut off, how many towns they have burned, how many virgins they have deflowered, how many notable murders they have done; and in the end they will compare them to Annibal, or Scipio, or Hercules, or some other famous person—wherewithal the poor fool runs mad and thinks indeed it is so. Then will he gather a sort of rascals to him, and he must get him a prophesier who shall tell him how he shall speed as he thinks. Then will he get him lurking to the side of a

wood and there keepeth him close till morning; and when it is daylight then will they go to the poor villages, not sparing to destroy young infants and aged people; and if a woman be ever so great with child, her will they kill, burning the houses and corn, and ransacking the poor cots. Then will they drive all the kine and plough horses, with all other cattle, and drive them away. Then must they have a bagpipe blowing before them, and if any of the cattle fortune to wax weary or faint they will kill them rather than it should do the owner good. And if they go by any house of friars or religious house, they will give them two or three beeves; and they will take them and pray for them—yea, and praise their doings, and say ‘his father was accustomed so to do;’ wherein he will rejoice.

‘And when he is in a safe place they will fall to a division of the spoil according to the discretion of the captain. Now comes the rhymers that made the rhyme with his ‘Rakery.’ The ‘Raker’ is he that shall utter the rhyme, and the rhymers himself sits by with the captain very proudly. He brings with him also his harper, who plays all the while that the raker sings the rhyme. Also he hath his bard, which is a foolish fellow who must have a horse given him. The harper must have a new saffron shirt and a mantle; and the raker must have two or three kine; and the rhymers himself a horse and harness, with a nag to ride on, a silver goblet, and a pair of bedes of coral with buttons of silver. And this with more they look for to have for the reducing of the people, to the disruption of the commonwealth and blasphemy

of God; for this is the best thing the rhymers causeth them to do.

'The fourth sort are those which in England are called Poets. These men have great store of cattle, and use all the trade of the others with an addition of prophecies. These are maintainers of witches and other vile matters to the blasphemy of God and to the impoverishing of the commonwealth.

'These four septs are divided in all places of the four quarters of Ireland and some of the islands beyond Ireland, as 'the Land of the Saints,'¹ the 'Innis Buffen,' 'Innis Turk,' 'Innis Main,' and 'Innis Clare.' These islands are under the rule of O'Neil, and they are very pleasant and fertile, plenty of wood, water, and arable ground and pastures, and fish, and a very temperate air.²

'There be many branches belonging to the four septs—as the Gogath, which is to say the glutton, for one of them will eat half a mutton at a sitting: another called the Carrow; he commonly goeth naked and carrieth dice and cards with him, and he will play the hair off his head; and these be maintained by the rhymers.

'There is a set of women called the Goyng women. They be blasphemers of God, and they run from country to country sowing sedition among the people. They are common to all men; and if any of them happen to be

¹ Arran, outside Galway Bay.

² At present they are barren heaps of treeless moors and mountains. They yield nothing but scanty oat-crops and potatoes, and

though the seas are full of fish as ever, there are no hands to catch them. The change is a singular commentary on modern improvements.

with child she will say that it is the great Lord adjoining, whereof the Lords are glad and do appoint them to be nursed.

‘There is another two sorts that goeth about with the Bachele of Jesus,¹ as they call it. These run from country to country; and if they come to any house where a woman is with child they will put the same about her, and whether she will or no causeth her to give them money, and they will undertake that she shall have good delivery of her child, to the great disruption of the people concerning their souls’ health.

‘Others go about with St Patrick’s crosier, and play the like part or worse; and no doubt so long as these be used the word of God can never be known among them, nor the Prince be feared, nor the country prosper.’

So stands the picture of Ireland, vivid because simple, described by some half-Anglicised, half-Protestantized Celt who wrote what he had seen around him, careless of political philosophy or of fine phrases with which to embellish his diction. The work of civilization had again to begin from the foundation. Occupied with Scotland and France and holding her own throne by so precarious a tenure, Elizabeth, for the first eighteen months of her reign, had little leisure to attend to it; and the Irish leaders, taking advantage of the opportunity, offered themselves and their services to Philip’s ambassador in England. The King of Spain, who at the

¹ The *Baculum Jesus*, said to have been brought over by St Patrick.

² Report on the State of Ireland, 1559: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

beginning desired to spare and strengthen Elizabeth, sent them a cold answer, and against Philip's will the great Norman families were unwilling to stir. The true-bred Celts however, whose sole political creed was hatred of the English, were less willing to remain quiet. To the Celt it was of small moment whether the English sovereign was Protestant or Catholic. The presence of an English deputy in Dublin was the symbol of his servitude and the constant occasion for his rebellion. Had there been no cause of quarrel the mere pleasure of fighting would have insured periodical disturbances; and in Ulster there were special causes at work to produce a convulsion of peculiar severity.

Identical in race and scarcely differing in language, the Irish of the north and the Scots of the Western Isles had for two centuries kept up a close and increasing intercourse. Some thousand Scottish families had recently emigrated from Bute, Arran, and Argyleshire, to find settlements on the thinly peopled coasts of Antrim and Down. The Irish chiefs had sought their friendship, intermarried with them, or made war on them, as the humour of the moment prompted; but their numbers had steadily increased whether welcome or unwelcome, and at Elizabeth's accession they had become objects of alarm both to the native Irish, whom they threatened to supplant, and to the English, whom they refused to obey.

Lord Sussex, who was Mary's last deputy, had made expeditions against them both in the Isles and in Ulster; but even though assisted by the powers of O'Neil had

only irritated their hostility. They made alliance with the O'Donnells who were O'Neil's hereditary enemies. James M'Connell and his two brothers, near kinsmen of the House of Argyle, crossed over with two thousand followers to settle in Tyrconnell, while to the Callogh O'Donnell, the chief of the clan, the Earl of Argyle himself gave his half-sister for a wife.

With this formidable support the O'Donnells threatened to eclipse their ancient rivals, when there rose up from among the O'Neils one of those remarkable men who in their own persons sum up and represent the energy, intellect, power, and character of the nation to which they belong.

In the partial settlement of Ireland which had been brought about by Henry the Eighth, the O'Neils, among the other noble families, surrendered their lands to the Crown to receive them again under the usual feudal tenure; and Con O'Neil the Lamé had received from Henry for himself and his heirs the title of Earl of Tyrone. For himself and his heirs—but who the heirs of Con O'Neil might be was not so easy to decide. His son Shan in explaining his father's character to Elizabeth said that he was 'a gentleman,'—the interpretation of the word being that 'he never denied any child that was sworn to him, and that he had plenty of them.'¹ The favourite of the family was the offspring of an intrigue with a certain Alyson Kelly, the wife of a blacksmith at Dundalk. This child, a boy named Matthew, grew to

¹ Shan O'Neil to Elizabeth, February 8, 1561: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

be a fine dashing youth such as an Irish father delighted to honour ; and although the Earl had another younger son, Shan or John, with some pretensions to legitimacy, Henry the Eighth allowed the father to name at his will the heir of his new honours. Matthew Kelly became Baron of Dungannon when O'Neil received his earldom ; and to Matthew Kelly was secured the reversion on his father's death of the earldom itself.

No objection could be raised so long as Shan was a boy ; but as the legitimate heir grew to manhood the arrangement became less satisfactory. The other sons whom Con had brought promiscuously into the world were discontented with the preference of a brother whose birth was no better than their own ; and Shan, with their help, as the simplest solution of the difficulty, at last cut the Baron of Dungannon's throat.

They manage things strangely in Ireland. The old O'Neil, instead of being irritated, saw in this exploit a proof of commendable energy. He at once took Shan into favour, and had he been able would have given him his dead brother's rights ; but unfortunately the Baron had left a son behind him, and the son was with the family of his grandmother beyond the reach of steel or poison.

Impatient of uncertainty and to secure himself by possession against future challenge, Shan next conspired against his father, deposed him, and drove him into the Pale, where he afterwards died ; and throwing over his English title and professing to prefer the name of O'Neil to any patent of nobility held under an English sove-

reign, he claimed the right of succession by Irish custom, precedent, and law. In barbarous and half-barbarous tribes there is generally some choice exercised among the members of the chief's family, or some rule is followed, by which the elder and stronger are preferred to the young and weak. In our own Heptarchy the uncle, if able and brave, was preferred to the child of an elder brother.

In Tyrone the clan elected their chief from the blood of the ancient kings; and Shan, waiving all question of legitimacy, received the votes of his people, took the oath with his foot upon the stone, and with the general consent of the north was proclaimed O'Neil.¹

This proceeding was not only an outrage against order, but it was a defiance of England and the English system. The descent to an earldom could not be regulated by election, and it was obvious that the English Government must either insist upon the rights of the young Baron of Dungannon, or relinquish the hope of feudalizing the Irish chieftains.

Knowing therefore that he could not be
 1560. left long in the enjoyment of his success, Shan O'Neil attempted to compose his feud with the O'Donnells, and his first step was to marry O'Donnell's sister.

¹ 'They place him that shall be called their captain upon a stone always reserved for that purpose, and commonly placed on a hill.'—SPENSER'S *View of the State of Ireland*. The stone in Westminster Abbey brought from Scone by Edward the

First was one of these, and according to legend is the original Lias Fail or thundering stone on which the Irish kings were crowned. The Lias Fail however still stands on Tara Hill, ready for use when Ireland's good time returns.

But the reconciliation was of brief duration ; the smaller chiefs of Ulster in loyal preference for greatness attached themselves for the most part to the O'Neils. Shan, no longer careful of offence, 'misused' his wife; and the Callogh, at the time when the notice of the English Government began to be drawn towards the question, was preparing, with the help of the Scots, to revenge her injuries.¹

Where private and public interests were closely interwoven there was a necessary complication of sides and movements. The English Government, in the belief that the sister of the Earl of Argyle might be a means of introducing Protestantism into Ulster, made advances to the M'Connells whom before they had treated as enemies; they sent a present to the Countess² of some old dresses of Queen Mary's 'for a token of favour,' and they promised to raise the Callogh to a rival earldom on condition of good service.

They were encountered however by an embarrassing cross current. The M'Connells affected to reciprocate the English good will, but the Earl of Argyle's con-

¹ A detailed account of these proceedings is found in a letter of Lord Justice Fitzwilliam to the Earl of Sussex, written on the 8th of March, 1560.—*Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² This lady, who was mentioned above as the wife of the Callogh and the half-sister of Macallummor, is always described in the Irish despatches as the Countess of Argyle. There is no difficulty in identifying

the person. It is less easy to understand the title.

³ 'MEMORANDUM.—To send to O'Donnell, with the Queen's thanks for service done, and her promise to make him an Earl on further merit on his part. The gown and kirtle that were Queen Mary's, with some old habiliments, to be sent to the Countess Argyle, O'Donnell's wife, for a token of favour to her good disposition in religion.'—*Irish MSS.*

nection with the reforming party in Scotland had not touched the dependencies of his clan. The hearts of ninety-nine out of every hundred persons on the north of Tweed were fixed on securing the English crown either for Arran or for Mary Stuart; and James M'Connell was heard in private to say that the Queen of Scots was rightful Queen of England.¹ Shan O'Neil therefore adroitly availed himself of the occasion to detach from the O'Donnells their formidable northern allies. The 'misused' wife being disposed of by some process of murder or otherwise, he induced M'Connell to give him his daughter. He married or proposed to marry her—for ties of this kind sat with astonishing lightness on him—and the Callogh was outmanœuvred.

Again an interval, and there was another and a bolder change. Either the new lady did not please Shan or his ambition soared to a higher flight. Supposing that the Scots in Ireland would not dare to resent what the Earl of Argyle should approve, and that the clan would welcome his support to Mary Stuart's claims, he had scarcely rid himself of his first wife and married a second than he wrote to the Earl proposing that his sister the Countess should be transferred from O'Donnell to himself. The M'Connells could be got rid of, and the Scotch colony might pass under the protection of the

¹ 'At my kinsman being with him in Kintyre, James M'Connell ministered to him very evil talk against the Queen's Majesty, saying the Queen of England was a bastard, and the Queen of Scotland rightful heir to the crown of England. It was not once nor twice, but divers times; not only by him but by his wife also.'—John Piers to Sir William Fitzwilliam. *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

O'Neils. James M'Connell's daughter might be thought a difficulty, 'but we swear to you our kingly oath,' the audacious Shan dared to write, 'that there is no impediment by reason of any such woman.'¹

Unprepared to recognize such swift transmutations, and at that time concerned with the rest of his party in the scheme for the elevation of the Earl of Arran, Argyle contented himself with enclosing Shan's letter to the English council. He told them briefly that O'Neil was the most dangerous person in Ireland; and he said that unless the Queen was prepared to acknowledge him she had better lose no time in bringing him to reason.²

So matters stood in Ireland in the spring of 1560, when the conspiracy of the Guises and the necessity of defending her throne forced Elizabeth into the Scotch war. The deputy, Lord Sussex, was in England; Sir William Fitzwilliam was left in command in Dublin, watching the country with uneasy misgivings; and from the symptoms reported to him from every quarter he anticipated, notwithstanding Philip's coldness, a summer of universal insurrection; the Parliament of the Pale had given the Catholics a rallying cry by endorsing the Act of Uniformity; and 'big words,' 'prophecies of the expulsion of the English within the year,' and rumours of armies of liberation from France and Spain, filled all the air. The outward quiet was undisturbed, but 'inwardly never such fears since the rebellion of Lord Thomas Fitzgerald.' The country was for the most part

¹ Notice and letter sent by the Earl of Argyle: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*

² *Ibid.*

a wilderness, but the desolation would be no security. The Irish, Fitzwilliam anxiously reported, could keep the field where the English would starve; 'no men of war ever lived the like, nor others of God's making as touching feeding and living; they were like beasts and vermin bred from the earth and the filth thereof; but brute and bestial as by their outward life they showed, there was not under the sun a more craftier vipered undermining generation.'¹

The immediate fear was of the great southern earls. If Kildare and Desmond rose, the whole of Ireland would rise with them, even the Pale itself. They had promised Fitzwilliam to be loyal, but he did not trust them. They had met at Limerick in the winter; they were known to have communicated with Shan, and O'Brien of Inchiquin had gone to Spain and France to solicit assistance. If he brought back a favourable answer, the Geraldines 'would take the English part until such time as the push came, and then the English company should be paid home.'²

Most fortunately for Elizabeth the success of the Queen of Scots was more formidable to Philip than the temporary triumph of heresy. He discouraged all advances to himself; he used his best endeavours to prevent the Irish from looking for assistance in France; and although his advice might have been little attended to had the Guises been at liberty to act, Elizabeth's intrigues with the Huguenots had provided them with

¹ Fitzwilliam to Cecil, March and April, 1560: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² *Ibid.*

sufficient work at home. They could spare no troops for Ireland while they were unable to reinforce their army at Leith.

O'Brien however received promises in abundance. Three French ships accompanied him on his return, and Irish imagination added thirty or forty which were said to be on the way. Kildare called his retainers under arms, and held a Parliament of chiefs at Maynooth which was opened with public mass. In speeches of the time-honoured type the patriotic orators dwelt upon the wrongs of Ireland; they swore that they would be 'slaves' no longer; they protested 'that their kingdom was kept from them by force by such as were aliens in blood;' and Fitzwilliam, frightened by the loud words, wrote in haste for assistance that 'the English might fight for their lives before they were all dead.'¹

With the death of Henry the Second, the fall of Leith, and the failure of the French to appear, the Irish courage cooled and the more pressing danger passed off. Kildare's larger knowledge showed him that the opportunity was gone. His father's death on the scaffold and his own long exile had taught him that without support from abroad a successful insurrection was impossible; and having no personal interests to defend he bought his pardon for the treason which he had meditated by loyally returning to his allegiance.

Shan O'Neil was less favourably circumstanced. His rank and his estates were at stake, and he on his

¹ Advertisements out of Ireland, May 28, 1560: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

part had determined never to submit at all unless he was secured in their possession. But he too thought it prudent to temporize. His father was by this time dead. He was required to appear before Elizabeth in person to explain the grounds on which he challenged his inheritance; and after stipulating for a safe-conduct, and an advance of money for expenses of his journey, he affected a willingness to comply; but he chose to treat with the Government at first hand, and in a characteristic letter to Elizabeth he prepared the way for his reception.

He described his father's miscellaneous habits, and 'gentlemanlike' readiness to acknowledge every child that was assigned to him; he explained his brother's birth and his own election as the O'Neil; he then proceeded thus:—¹

1561. 'The deputy has much ill-used me, your Majesty; and now that I am going over to see you I hope you will consider that I am but rude and uncivil, and do not know my duty to your Highness nor yet your Majesty's laws, but am one brought up in wildness far from all civility. Yet have I a good will to the commonwealth of my country; and please your Majesty to send over two commissioners that you can trust that will take no bribes nor otherwise be imposed on, to observe what I have done to improve the country and to hear what my accusers have to say; and then let them go into the Pale and

¹ The voluminousness of the letter renders some abridgment necessary; but the character, substance, and arrangement are preserved.

hear what the people say of your soldiers with their horses and their dogs and their concubines. Within this year and a half three hundred farmers are come from the English Pale to live in my country where they can be safe.

‘Please your Majesty, your Majesty’s money here is not so good as your money in England, and will not pass current there. Please your Majesty to send me three thousand pounds of English money to pay my expenses in going over to you, and when I come back I will pay your deputy three thousand pounds Irish, such as you are pleased to have current here.

‘Also I will ask your Majesty to marry me to some gentlewoman of noble blood meet for my vocation. I will make Ireland all that your Majesty wishes for you. I am very sorry your Majesty is put to such expense. If you will trust it to me I will undertake that in three years you shall have a revenue where now you have continual loss.

‘Also your Majesty’s father granted certain lands to my father O’Neil and to his son Matthew. Mat Kelly claims these lands of your Majesty. We have a saying among us Irishmen that ‘whatsoever bull do chance to bull any cow in any kerragh, notwithstanding, the right owner of the cow shall have the calf and not the owner of the bull.’ How can it be or how can it stand with natural reason that the said Matthew should inherit my father’s lands, and also inherit his own rightful father the smith’s, and also his mother’s lands which

the said Matthew hath peaceably in possession?'¹

Whether Shan would follow up his letter by really going over was not so certain. It depended on the answer which he received, or on the chances which might offer themselves to him of doing better for himself in some other way.

The English Government had no advantage over him in sincerity. Towards Ireland itself the intentions of Elizabeth were honourable; but she had determined to use her first leisure in restoring order and obedience there; and for Shan the meaning of his summons to England was merely to detain him 'with gentle talk,' till Sussex could return to his command and the English army be reinforced.

Preparations were made to send men and money in such large quantities that rebellion should have no chance; and so careful was the secrecy which was observed to prevent Shan from taking alarm, that a detachment of troops sent from Portsmouth sailed with sealed orders, and neither men nor officers knew that Ireland was their destination till they had rounded the Land's End.²

Notwithstanding these precautions Shan's friends found means to put him on his guard. He was to have sailed from Dublin, but the weeks passed on and he did not make his appearance. At one time his dress was

¹ Shan O'Neil to Queen Elizabeth, February 8, 1561: *Irish MSS.* Compare Shan O'Neil to Cecil (same date).

² Matters to be ordered for Ireland, February 25, March 4, March 13: *Irish MSS.*

not ready ; at another he had no money, and pressed to have his loan of the three thousand pounds sent up for him into Tyrone ; and to this last request Fitzwilliam would give no sort of encouragement, 'being,' as he said, 'for his own part unwilling to lend Shan five shillings on his bond, and being certain that he would no sooner have received the money than he would laugh at them all.'

The Government however cared little whether he submitted or stayed away. As yet they had not been forced to recognize Shan's ability, and the troops who were to punish him were on their way. Kildare, whom Elizabeth most feared, had gone to London on her first invitation. As long as Kildare was loyal Desmond would remain quiet ; and no serious rebellion was considered any longer possible. O'Donnell was prepared to join the English army on its advance into Ulster ; and the Scots, notwithstanding their predilection for Mary Stuart, were expected to act as Argyle and as his sister 'should direct.'

But Shan had prepared a master-stroke which disconcerted this last arrangement. Though his suit found no favour with the Earl of Argyle, he had contrived to ingratiate himself with 'the Countess.' The Scots were chiefly anxious to secure their settlements in Antrim and Down ; and Shan was a more useful ally for them than Elizabeth or the feeble Callogh. The lady from whom such high hopes had been formed cared less for Protestantism than for the impassioned speeches of a lover ; and while Queen Mary's gown and kirtle were

on their way to her, Fitzwilliam was surprised with the sudden news that Shan had made a raid into Tyrconnell and had carried off both her and her husband. Her Scotch guard, though fifteen hundred strong, had offered no resistance; and the next news was that the Callogh was a prisoner in Shan's castle, and that the Countess was the willing paramour of the O'Neil. The affront to M'Connell was forgiven, or atoned for by private arrangement; and the sister of the Earl of Argyle—an educated woman for her time, 'not unlearned in Latin,' 'speaking French and Italian,' 'counted sober, wise, and no less subtle'—had betrayed herself, her people, and her husband.¹

The O'Neils by this last manœuvre became supreme in Ulster. Deprived of their head, the O'Donnells sunk into helplessness; the whole force of the province, such as it was, with the more serious addition of several thousand Scotch marauders, was at Shan's disposal, and thus provided he thought himself safe in defying England to do its worst.

Both sides prepared for war. Sussex returned to Dublin at the beginning of June; his troops and supplies had arrived before him; and after a debate in 'the council' the Irish of the Pale were invited to join in a

July. 'general hosting' into Tyrone on the first of

July. Sussex himself, as a preliminary move, made a dash upon Armagh. He seized the cathedral, which he fortified as a depôt for his stores. Leaving a

¹ Fitzwilliam to Cecil, May 30: *Irish MSS.*

garrison there he fell back into Meath, where in a few days he was joined by Ormond with flying companies of 'galloglasse.'

But Sussex did not yet understand the man with whom he was dealing. He allowed himself to be amused and delayed by negotiations ;¹ and while he was making promises to Shan which it is likely that he intended to disregard, Armagh was almost lost again.

Seeing a number of kerne scattered about the town the officer in command sallied out upon them, when Shan himself suddenly appeared, accompanied by the Catholic Archbishop, on a hill outside the walls ; and the English had but time to recover their defences when the whole Irish army, led by a procession of monks and 'every man carrying a faggot,' came on to burn the cathedral over their heads. The monks sung a mass ; the primate walked three times up and down the lines, 'willing the rebels to go forward, for God was on their side.' Shan swore a great oath not to turn his back while an Englishman was left alive ; and with scream and yell his men came on. Fortunately there were no Scots among them. The English, though outnumbered ten to one, stood steady in the churchyard, and after a sharp hand to hand fight drove back the howling crowd. The Irish retired into the 'friars' houses' outside the cathedral close, set them on fire, and ran for their lives.

¹ 'The second of this month we assembled at Raskreagh, and still treated with Shan for his going to your Majesty, making him great offers if he would go quietly.'—Sussex to the Queen, July 16: *Irish MSS.*

So far all was well. After this there was no more talk of treating; and by the 18th, Sussex and Ormond were themselves at Armagh, with a force—had there been skill to direct it—sufficient to have swept Tyrone from border to border.

The weather however was wet, the rivers were high, and slight difficulties seemed large to the English commander. He stayed in the town doing nothing till the end of the month, when his provisions began to run short, and necessity compelled him to move. Spies brought him word that in the direction of Cavan there were certain herds of cows which an active party might cut off; and cattle-driving being the approved method of making war in Ireland, the Deputy determined to have them.

The Earl of Ormond was ill, and Sussex, in an evil hour for his reputation, would not leave him. His troops without their commander set out with Irish guides for the spot where the cows had been seen.

O'Neil as may be supposed had been playing upon Saxon credulity; the spies were his own men; and the object was merely to draw the English among bogs and rivers where they could be destroyed. They were to have been attacked at night at their first halting-place; and they escaped only by the accident of an alteration of route. Early the following morning they were marching forward in loose order; Fitzwilliam, with a hundred horse, was a mile in advance; five hundred men-at-arms with a few hundred loyal Irish of the Pale straggled after him; another hundred horse under James Wingfield brought up the rear.

Weaker in numbers, for his whole force did not amount to more than six hundred men, O'Neil came up with them from behind. Wingfield instead of holding his ground galloped forward upon the men-at-arms, and as horses and men were struggling in confusion together, on came the Irish with their wild battle-cry—'Laundarg Abo!'—'The bloody hand!'—'Strike for O'Neil.' The cavalry, between shame and fear, rode down their own men, and extricated themselves only to fly panic-stricken from the field to the crest of an adjoining hill, while Shan's troopers rode through the broken ranks 'cutting down the footmen on all sides.'

Fitzwilliam, ignorant of what was passing behind him, was riding leisurely forwards, when a horseman was observed galloping wildly in the distance and waving his handkerchief for a signal. The yells and cries were heard through the misty morning air, and Fitzwilliam, followed by a gentleman named Parkinson and ten or twelve of his own servants, hurried back 'in a happy hour.'

Without a moment's delay he flung himself into the mêlée. Sir George Stanley was close behind him with the rest of the advanced horse; 'and Shan, receiving such a charge of those few men and seeing more coming after,' ran no further risk, blew a recall note and withdrew unpursued. Fitzwilliam's courage alone had prevented the army from being annihilated. Out of five hundred English, fifty lay dead, and fifty more were badly wounded; the Irish contingent had disappeared; and the survivors of the force fell back to Armagh so 'dismayed' as to be unfit for further service.

In his official report to the Queen the Earl of Sussex made light of his loss, and pretended that after a slight repulse he had won a brilliant victory. The object of the false despatch however was less to deceive Elizabeth than to blind the English world. To Cecil the Deputy was more open, and though professing still that he had escaped defeat, admitted the magnitude of the disaster.

‘By the cowardice of some,’ Sussex said, ‘all was like to have been lost, and by the worthiness of two men all was restored and the contrary part overthrown. It was by cowardice the dreadfulest beginning that ever was seen in Ireland; and by the valiantness of a few (thanks be given to God!) brought to a good end. Ah! Mr Secretary, what unfortunate star hung over me that day to draw me, that never could be persuaded to be absent from the army at any time, to be then absent for a little disease of another man? The rereward was the best and picked soldiers in all this land. If I or any stout man had been that day with them, we had made an end of Shan, which is now further off than ever it was. Never before durst Scot or Irishman look on Englishmen in plain or wood since I was here; and now Shan, in a plain three miles away from any wood, and where I would have asked of God to have had him, hath with a hundred and twenty horse and a few Scots and galloglasse, scarce half in numbers, charged our whole army, and by the cowardice of one wretch whom I hold dear to me as my own brother, was like in one hour to have left not one man of that army alive, and after to have taken me and the rest at Armagh. The fame of

the English army, so hardly gotten, is now vanquished, and I wrecked and dishonoured by the vileness of other men's deeds.'¹

The answer of Cecil to this sad despatch betrays the intriguing factiousness which disgraced Elizabeth's Court. Lord Pembroke seemed to be the only nobleman whose patriotism could be depended on; and in Pembroke's absence there 'was not a person—no,' Cecil reiterated, 'not one,' who did not either wish so well to Shan O'Neil or so ill to the Earl of Sussex as rather to welcome the news than regret the English loss.²

The truth was soon known in London notwithstanding 'the varnished tale' with which Sussex had sought to hide it. A letter from Lady Kildare to her husband represented the English army as having been totally defeated; and Elizabeth, irritated as usual at the profitless expense in which she had been involved, determined, in her first vexation, to bury no more money in Irish morasses. Kildare undertook to persuade Shan into conformity if she would leave him in possession of what it appeared she was without power to take from him; the Queen consented to everything which he proposed, and the old method of governing Ireland by the Irish—that is, of leaving it to its proper anarchy—was about to be resumed. Most tempting and yet most fatal; for the true desire of the Irish leaders was to cut the links altogether which bound them to England, and

¹ Sussex to Cecil, July 31: *Irish MSS.*

² Cecil to Sussex, August 12: WRIGHT, vol. i.

England could not play into their hands more effectively than by leaving them to destroy at their leisure the few chiefs who had dared to be loyal.

Kildare returned to Dublin with full powers to act as he should think best; while Sussex, leaving a garrison as before in Armagh Cathedral, returned with the dispirited remnant of his army into the Pale. Fitzwilliam was despatched to London to explain the disaster to the Queen; and the Irish council sent a petition by his hands, that the troops who had been so long quartered in the four shires should be recalled or disbanded. Useless in the field and tyrannical to the farmer, they were a burden on the English exchequer and answered no purpose but to make the English name detested.

The petition corresponded but too well with Elizabeth's private inclination, but Fitzwilliam while he presented it did not approve of its recommendations; he implored her—and he was supported in his entreaties by Cecil—to postpone, at least for a short time, a measure which would be equivalent to an abandonment of Ireland. The Queen yielded, and in allowing the army to remain permitted it to be reinforced from the trained soldiers of Berwick. Fitzwilliam carried back with him three thousand pounds to pay the arrears of wages; Cecil pressed hard for three thousand besides; but Elizabeth would risk no more till 'she saw some fruit arise from her expenditure.'

To Shan O'Neil she sent a pardon with a safe-conduct for his journey to England if Kildare could prevail on him to come to her; and 'accepting the defeat as

the chance of war which she must bear,' she expressed to Sussex her general surprise at his remissness, with her regret that an English officer should have disgraced himself by cowardice. She desired that Wingfield might be immediately sent over and that the other offenders should be apprehended and imprisoned.¹

Meantime Sussex, having failed in the field, had attempted to settle his difficulties by other methods. A demand from Shan had followed him into the Pale that the Armagh garrison should be withdrawn. The bearers of the message were Cantwell, O'Neil's seneschal, and a certain Neil Grey, one of his followers, who affected to dislike rebellion and gave the Deputy an opportunity of working on him. Lord Sussex, it appeared, regarded Shan as a kind of vermin whom having failed to capture in fair chase he might destroy by the first expedient which came to his hand.

The following letter betrays no misgivings either on the propriety of the proceeding which it describes, or on the manner in which the intimation of it would be received by the Queen.

THE EARL OF SUSSEX TO QUEEN ELIZABETH.

August 24, 1561.

'May it please your Highness,

'After conference had with Shan O'Neil's seneschal I entered talk with Neil Grey; and perceiving by him

¹ Memoranda of Letters from Ireland, August 20 (Cecil's hand).—Cecil to Sussex, August 21; Elizabeth to Sussex, August 20: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

that he had little hope of Shan's conformity in anything, and that he therefore desired that he might be received to serve your Highness, for that he would no longer abide with him, and that if I would promise to receive him to your service he would do anything that I would command him, I sware him upon the Bible to keep secret that I should say unto him, and assured him if it were ever known during the time I had the government there, that besides the breach of his oath it should cost him his life. I used long circumstance in persuading him to serve you to benefit his country, and to procure assurance of living to him and his for ever by doing of that which he might easily do. He promised to do what I would. In fine I brake with him to kill Shan; and bound myself by my oath to see him have a hundred marks of land by the year to him and to his heirs for his reward. He seemed desirous to serve your Highness and to have the land, but fearful to do it doubting his own escape after with safety, which he confessed and promised to do by any means he might escaping with his life. What he will do I know not, but I assure your Highness he may do it without danger if he will. And if he will not do that he may in your service, then will be done to him what others may. God send your Highness a good end.

‘Your Highness’s

‘Most humble and faithful Subject and Servant,

‘T. SUSSEX.¹

‘From Ardrachan.’

¹ *Irish MSS. Rolls House*

English honour like English coin lost something of its purity in the sister island. Nothing came of this undesirable proposal. Neil Grey however kept his secret, and though he would not risk his life by attempting the murder, sought no favour with Shan by betraying Sussex.

Elizabeth's answer—if she sent any answer—is not discoverable. It is most sadly certain however that Sussex was continued in office; and inasmuch as it will be seen that he repeated the experiment a few months later, his letter could not have been received with any marked condemnation.

Shortly after, Fitzwilliam returned from England with the Berwick troops, and before the season closed and before Kildare commenced his negotiations the Deputy was permitted to make another effort to repair the credit of English arms.

Despatching provisions by sea to Lough Foyle, he succeeded this time in marching through Tyrone and in destroying on his way four thousand cattle which he was unable to carry away; and had the vessels arrived in time he might have remained in Ulster long enough to do serious mischief there. But the wind and weather were unfavourable. He had left Shan's cows to rot where he had killed them; and thus being without food, and sententiously and characteristically concluding that 'man by his policy might propose but God at his will did dispose,'¹ Lord Sussex fell back by the upper waters of Lough Erne sweeping the country before him.

¹ Sussex to Elizabeth, September 21: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

O'Neil in the interval had been burning villages in Meath; but the Deputy had penetrated his stronghold, had defied him on his own ground, and he had not ventured to meet the English in the field. The defeat of July was partially retrieved and Sussex was in a better position to make terms. Kildare, in the middle of October, had a conference with Shan at Dundalk, and Shan consented to repair to Elizabeth's presence. In the conditions however which he was allowed to name he implied that he was rather conferring a favour than receiving one, and that he was going to England as a victorious enemy permitting himself to be conciliated. He demanded a safe-conduct so clearly worded that whatever was the result of his visit he should be free to return; he required a complete amnesty for his past misdeeds, and he stipulated that Elizabeth should pay all expenses for himself and his retinue; the Earls of Ormond, Desmond, and Kildare must receive him in state at Dundalk and escort him to Dublin; Kildare must accompany him to England; and most important of all, Armagh Cathedral must be evacuated.

On these terms he was ready to go to London; he did not anticipate treachery; and either he hoped to persuade Elizabeth to recognize him, and thus prove to the Irish that rebellion was the surest road to prosperity and power, or at worst by venturing into England and returning unscathed he would show them that the Government might be defied with more than impunity.

Had Neil Grey revealed to him those dark overtures of Sussex the Irish chief would have relied less boldly on

English good faith. When his terms were made known to Elizabeth's council the propriety of acceding to them was advocated for 'certain secret respects;' and even Sir William Cecil was not ashamed to say 'that in Shan's absence from Ireland something might be cavilled against him or his for non-observing the covenants on his side; and so the pact being infringed the matter might be used as should be thought fit.'¹

The intention of deliberate dishonour was not persisted in. Elizabeth, after some uncer-^{December.}
tainty whether concessions so ignominious could be safely made, wrote to accept them all except the evacuation of the cathedral. Making a merit of his desire to please her, Shan said that although for 'the Earl of Sussex he would not mollify one iota of his agreement,' yet he would consent at the request of her Majesty;² and thus at last, with the Earl of Kildare in attendance, a train of galloglasse, a thousand pounds in hand and a second thousand waiting for him in London, the champion of Irish freedom sailed from Dublin and
appeared on the 2nd of January at the Eng-^{1562. January.}
lish Court.

Not wholly knowing how so strange a being might conduct himself, Cecil, Pembroke, and Bacon received him privately on his arrival at the Lord Keeper's house. They gave him his promised money and endeavoured to impress upon him the enormity of his misdemeanours. Their success in this respect was indifferent. When

¹ Cecil to Throgmorton, November 4, 1561: *Conway MSS.*

² Kildare to Cecil, December 3: *MS. Ibid.*

Cecil spoke of rebellion Shan answered that two thousand pounds was a poor present from so great a Queen. When Cecil asked if he would be a good subject for the future, he was sure their honours would give him a few more hundreds. He agreed however to make a general confession of his sins in Irish and English; and on the 6th of the month Elizabeth received him.

The council, the Peers, the foreign ambassadors, bishops, aldermen, dignitaries of all kinds, were present in state as if at the exhibition of some wild animal of the desert. O'Neil stalked in, his saffron mantle sweeping round and round him, his hair curling on his back and clipped short below the eyes which gleamed from under it with a grey lustre, frowning fierce and cruel. Behind him followed his galloglasse bare-headed and fair-haired, with shirts of mail which reached their knees, a wolfskin flung across their shoulders, and short broad battle-axes in their hands.

At the foot of the throne the chief paused, bent forward, threw himself on his face upon the ground, and then rising upon his knees spoke aloud in Irish:—

‘Oh! my most dread sovereign lady and Queen, like as I, Shan O'Neil, your Majesty's subject of your realm of Ireland, have of long time desired to come into the presence of your Majesty to acknowledge my humble and bounden subjection, so am I now here upon my knees by your gracious permission, and do most humbly acknowledge your Majesty to be my sovereign lady and Queen of England, France, and Ireland; and I do confess that for lack of civil education I have offended your

Majesty and your laws, for the which I have required and obtained your Majesty's pardon. And for that I most humbly from the bottom of my heart thank your Majesty, and still do with all humbleness require the continuance of the same; and I faithfully promise here before Almighty God and your Majesty, and in presence of all these your nobles, that I intend by God's grace to live hereafter in the obedience of your Majesty as a subject of your land of Ireland.

'And because this my speech being Irish is not well understood, I have caused this my submission to be written in English and Irish, and thereto have set my hand and seal; and to these gentlemen my kinsmen and friends I most humbly beseech your Majesty to be merciful and gracious lady.'¹

To the hearers the sound of the words was as the howling of a dog.² The form which Shan was made to say that he had himself caused to be written, had been drawn for him by Cecil; and the gesture of the culprit was less humble than his language; the English courtiers devised 'a style' for him, as the interpretation of his bearing, 'O'Neil the Great, cousin to St Patrick, friend to the Queen of England, enemy to all the world besides.'³

The submission being disposed of, the next object was to turn the visit to account. Shan discovered that not-

¹ *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² 'He confessed his crime and rebellion with howling.'—CAMDEN. So Hotspur says—'I had rather hear Lady my brach howl in Irish.'

³ CAMPION.

withstanding his precautions he had been outwitted in the wording of the safe-conduct. Though the Government promised to permit him to return to Ireland, the time of his stay had not been specified. Specious pretexts were invented to detain him; he required to be recognized as his father's heir; the English judges desired the cause to be pleaded before themselves; the young Baron of Dungannon must come over to be heard on the other side; and while to Shan it was pretended that the Baron had been sent for, Cecil wrote privately to Fitzwilliam to prevent him from leaving Ireland.

At first the caged chieftain felt no alarm, and he used his opportunities in flattering and working upon Elizabeth. He wrote to her from time to time, telling her that she was the sole hope and refuge which he possessed in the world; in coming to England his chief desire had been to see that great person whose fame was spoken of through the earth, and to study the wisdom of her Government that he 'might learn how better to order himself in civil polity.' If she would give him his father's earldom, he said, he would maintain her authority in Ulster, where she should be undisputed Queen over willing subjects; he would drive away all her enemies; he would expel Mary Stuart's friends the Scots; and with them it seems he was prepared to dismiss his 'countess;' for 'he was most urgent that her Majesty would give him some noble English lady for a wife with augmentation of living suitable;' and he on his part would save the Queen all further expense in Ireland with great increase of revenue.' As the head of the

House of O'Neil he claimed undisputed sovereignty over the petty Ulster chiefs. He admitted that he had killed his brother, but he saw nothing in so ordinary an action but what was right and reasonable.¹

So the winter months passed on. At last, when January was gone, and February was gone, and March had come, and 'the young Baron' ^{March.} had not appeared, Shan's mind misgave him. His time had not been wasted; night after night he had been closeted with de Quadra, and the insurrectionary resources of Ireland had been sketched out as a bait to Philip. His soul in the land of heretics had been cared for by holy wafers from de Quadra's chapel; but his body he began to think might be in the lion's den, and he pressed for his dismissal.

A cloud of obstacles was immediately raised. The Queen, he was told, was indifferent who had the earldom provided it was given to the lawful heir; and as soon as the Baron arrived the cause should instantly be heard. When Shan was still dissatisfied, he was recommended if he wished for favour 'to change his garments and go like an Englishman.'

He appealed to Elizabeth herself. With an air of ingenuous simplicity he threw himself, his wrongs, and his position on her personal kindness, 'having no refuge nor succour to flee unto but only her Majesty.' His presence was urgently required in Ireland; the Scots were 'evil neighbours;' his kinsmen were fickle: if

¹ Shan O'Neil to Elizabeth, January: *Irish MSS.*

however her Majesty desired him to stay he was her slave, he would do all which she would have him do; he would only ask in return that 'her Majesty would give him a gentlewoman for a wife such as he and she might agree upon;' and he begged that he might be allowed—the subtle flatterer—to attend on the Lord Robert; 'that he might learn to ride after the English fashion, to run at the tilt, to hawk, to shoot, and use such other good exercises as the said good lord was most apt unto.'¹

He had touched the Queen where she was most susceptible, yet he lost his labour. She gave him no English lady, she did not let him go. At length the false dealing produced its cruel fruit, the murder of the boy who was used as the pretext for delay. Sent for to England, yet prevented from obeying the command, the young Baron of Dungannon was waylaid at the be-

ginning of April in a wood near Carlingford
April. by Tirlogh O'Neil. He fled for his life with the murderers behind him till he reached the bank of a deep river which he could not swim, and there he was killed.²

The crime could not be traced to Shan. His rival was gone, and there was no longer any cause to be pleaded; while he could appeal to the wild movements of his clan as an evidence of the necessity of his presence among them.

The council were frightened. O'Neil promised largely, and Elizabeth persuaded herself to believe him.

¹ Shan O'Neil to Elizabeth, March: *Irish MSS.*

² Fitzwilliam to Cecil, April 14: *Irish MSS.*

She durst not imprison him; she could no longer detain him except by open force: she preferred to bribe him into allegiance by granting him all that he desired.

The earldom—a barren title for which he cared little—was left in suspense. On the 20th of April an indenture was signed by Elizabeth and himself, in which Shan bound himself to do military service and to take the oath of allegiance in the presence of the Deputy; while in return he was allowed to remain Captain of Tyrone with feudal jurisdiction over the northern counties. The Pale was to be no shelter to any person whom he might demand as a malefactor. If any Irish lord or chief did him wrong, and the Deputy failed within twenty days to exact reparation, Shan might raise an army and levy war on his private account. One feeble effort only was made to save O'Donnell, whose crime against O'Neil had been his devotion to England. O'Neil consented to submit O'Donnell's cause to the arbitration of the Irish earls.¹

A rebel subject treating as an equal with his sovereign for the terms on which he would remain in his allegiance was an inglorious spectacle; and the admission of Shan's pretensions to sovereignty was one more evidence to the small Ulster chiefs that no service was worse requited in Ireland than fidelity to the English Crown. The M'Guyres, the O'Reillies, the O'Donnells—all the clans who had stood by Sussex in the pre-

¹ Indenture between the Queen of England and Shan O'Neil, April 30, 1562: *Irish MSS.*

ceding summer—were given over to their enemy bound hand and foot. Yet Elizabeth was weary of the expense, and sick of efforts which were profitless as the cultivation of a quicksand.

True it was that she was placing half Ireland in the hands of an adulterous, murdering scoundrel; but the Irish liked to have it so, and she forced herself to hope that he would restrain himself for the future within bounds of decency.

Shan therefore with his galloglasse returned in glory, his purse lined with money, and honour wreathed about his brows. On reappearing in Tyrone he summoned the northern chiefs about him; he told them that ‘he had not gone to England to lose but to win;’ they must submit to his rule henceforth or they should feel his power.

The O’Donnells, in vain reliance on the past promises of the Deputy, dared to refuse allegiance to him. Without condescending to the form of consulting the Government at Dublin, he called his men to arms and marched into Tyrconnell, killing, robbing, and burning in the old style, through farm and castle.

The Earl of Sussex, not knowing how to act, could but fall back on treachery. Shan was bound by his engagement to take the oath of allegiance in Dublin. The Lord Deputy desired him to present himself at the first opportunity. The safe-conduct which accompanied the request was ingeniously worded; and enclosing a copy of it to Elizabeth, Sussex inquired whether in the event of Shan’s coming to him he might not twist

the meaning of the words, and make him prisoner.¹ August.

But Shan was too cunning a fish, and had been too lately in the meshes, to be caught again in so poor a snare. His duty to the Queen, he replied, forbade him to leave his province in its present disturbed condition. He was making up for his long fast in England from his usual amusements; and when fighting was in the wind neither he nor his troopers, nor as it seemed his clergy, had leisure for other occupations. The Catholic Primate having refused allegiance to Elizabeth, the See of Armagh was vacant, and Sussex sent down a *congé d'élire* for the appointment of 'Mr Adam Loftus.' He received for answer 'that the chapter there, whereof the greater part were Shan O'Neil's horsemen, were so sparkled and out of order that they could by no means be assembled for the election.'²

Once more Lord Sussex set his trap, and this time he baited it more skilfully. The September. Scotch countess was not enough for Shan's ambition. His passionate desire for an English wife had survived

¹ The safe-conduct was worded thus:— *Plenam protectionem nostram per præsentem dicto Joanni concedimus qua ipse ad præmissa perficienda cum omnibus quibuscunque qui cum illo venerint ad nos venire et a nobis cum voluerint libere recedere valeant et possint absque ullâ perturbatione seu molestatione.*'

The word 'præmissa' referred to

the oath of allegiance; it was anticipated that Shan would make a difficulty in doing homage to Sussex as Elizabeth's representative; and Sussex thought he might then lay hands on him for breach of compact.—Sussex to Elizabeth, August 27: *Irish MSS.*

² Sussex to Elizabeth, September 2: *Irish MSS.*

his return, and Elizabeth in this point had not gratified his wishes. Lord Sussex had a sister with him in Dublin, and Shan sent an intimation that if the Deputy would take him for a brother-in-law their relations for the future might be improved. The present sovereign of England would perhaps give one of her daughters to the King of Dahomey with more readiness than the Earl of Sussex would have consigned his sister to Shan O'Neil; yet he condescended to reply 'that he could not promise to give her against her will,' but if Shan would visit him 'he could see and speak with her, and if he liked her and she him they should both have his good will.'¹ Shan glanced at the tempting morsel with wistful eyes. Had he trusted himself in the hands of Sussex he would have had a short shrift for a blessing and a rough nuptial knot about his neck. At the last moment a little bird carried the tale to his ear. 'He had advertisement out of the Pale that the lady was brought over only to entrap him, and if he came to the Deputy he should never return.'²

After this second failure Sussex told Elizabeth that she must either use force once more or she must be prepared to see first all Ulster and afterwards the whole 'Irishry' of the four provinces accept Shan for their sovereign. There was no sort of uncertainty as to O'Neil's intentions: he scarcely affected to conceal them. He had written to the Pope; he was in correspondence with the Queen of Scots; he had established secret relations

¹ Sussex to the Queen, September 20: *Irish MSS.*

² Sussex to Elizabeth, September 29: *Irish MSS.*

with Spain through de Quadra; and Sussex advised war immediate and unsparing. 'No greater danger,' he said, 'had ever been in Ireland;' he implored the Queen not to trifle with it, and with a modest sense of his own failures he recommended her to send a more efficient person than himself to take the command—not, he protested, 'from any want of will, for he would spend his last penny and his last drop of blood for her Majesty,' but he knew himself to be unequal to the work.

Post after post brought evidence of the fatal consequences of the quasi recognition of Shan's sovereignty. Right and left he was crushing the petty chiefs, who one and all sent to say that they must yield unless England supported them. Sussex wrote to him in useless menace 'that if he followed his foolish pride her Majesty would destroy him at the last.' He 'held a parley' with the Irish council on Dundalk Bridge on the 17th of September, and bound himself 'to keep peace with the Queen' 'for six months;' but he felt himself discharged of all obligations towards a Government which had aimed at his life by deliberate treachery. In the face of his ambiguous dealings the garrison had been still maintained at Armagh; at the beginning of October the hostages for his good behaviour, which he October. had sent in on his return from England, escaped from Dublin Castle; and on the 10th, in a dark, moonless night the guard at the cathedral were alarmed with mysterious lights like blown matches glimmering through the darkness. Had the troops ventured out to reconnoitre, some hundreds of 'harquebusmen' were in

ambush to cut them off. Suspecting treason they kept within their walls, and Shan was compelled to content himself with driving their cattle; but had they shown outside not a man of them would have been left alive. The next day the Irish came under the gate and taunted them with 'cowardice,' 'telling them the wolves had eaten their cattle, and that the matches they thought they saw were wolves' eyes.'¹

Con O'Donnell, the Callogh's son, wrote piteously to Elizabeth that after carrying off his father and his mother, Shan had now demanded the surrender of his castles; he had refused out of loyalty to England, and his farms were burnt, his herds were destroyed, and he was a ruined man.²

A few days later M'Guyre, from the banks of Lough Erne, wrote that Shan had summoned him to submit; he had answered 'that he would not forsake the English till the English forsook him;' 'wherefore,' he said, 'I know well that within these four days the sayed Shan will come to dystroy me contrey except your Lordshypp will sette some remedy in the matter.'³

Sussex was powerless. Duly as the unlucky chief foretold, Shan came down into Fermanagh 'with a great

¹ Sussex to Elizabeth, October 15 *Irish MSS.*

² Con O'Donnell to Elizabeth, September 30: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.* Sussex, in forwarding the letter, added—

'This Con is valiant, wise, much disposed of himself to civility, true of his word, speaketh and writeth

very good English, and hath natural shamefastness in his face, which few of the wild Irish have, and is assuredly the likeliest plant that can grow in Ulster to graft a good subject on.'

³ M'Guyre to Sussex, October 9: WRIGHT'S *Elizabeth*, vol. i. p. 93.

hoste;' M'Guyre still kept his truth to England; 'wherefore Shan bygan to wax mad and to cawsse his men to bran all his corn and howsses;' he spared neither church nor sanctuary; three hundred women and children were piteously murdered; and M'Guyre himself 'clean banished,' as he described it, took refuge with the remnant of his people in the islands on the lake, whither Shan was making boats to pursue him.

'Help me, your lordship,' the hunted wretch cried in his despair to Sussex; 'I promes you, and you doo not sy the rather to Shan O'Nele is besynes, ye ar lyke to make hym the strongest man of all Erlond, for every man wyll take an exampull by me gratte lostys; take hyd to yourself by thymes, for he is lyke to have all the power from this place thill he come to the wallys of Gallway to rysse against you.'¹

Elizabeth knew not now which way to turn. Force, treachery, conciliation, had been November. tried successively, and the Irish problem was more hopeless than ever. Sussex had protested from the first against the impolicy of recognizing Shan; the event had proved that he was right, and the Queen now threw herself upon him and the council of Ireland for advice. In the dense darkness of the prospects of Ulster there was a solitary gleam of light. Grown insolent with prosperity, Shan had been dealing too peremptorily with

¹ Shan M'Guyre to Sussex, October 20, and November 25: WRIGHT, vol. i. M'Guyre adds a curious caution to Sussex to write to him in English and not in Latin, because he would not clerks nor other men should know his mind.

the Scots ; his countess, though compelled to live with him and to be the mother of his children, had felt his brutality, repented of her folly, and perhaps attempted to escape. In the day time when he was abroad marauding, she was coupled like a hound to a page or a horse-boy, and only released at night when he returned to his evening orgies.¹ The fierce Campbells were not men to bear tamely these outrages from a drunken savage on the sister of their chief ; and Sussex conceived that if the Scots could by any contrivance be separated from Shan they might be used ‘as a whip to scourge him.’

Elizabeth bade Sussex do his best. The Irish council agreed with the Deputy that the position of things ‘was the most dangerous that had ever been in Ireland ;’ and that if the Queen intended to continue to hold the country Shan must be crushed at all hazards and at all costs. In desperate acquiescence she consented to supply the means for another invasion ; yet, with characteristic perversity, she refused to accept Sussex’s estimate of his own inability to conduct it. In submitting to his opinion she insisted that he should take the responsibility of carrying it into action.

Once more therefore the Deputy prepared for war. Fresh stores were thrown into Armagh, and the troops there increased to a number which could harass Tyrone

¹ ‘Shan O’Neil possesseth O’Donnell’s wife, and by him she is with child. She is all day chained by the arm to a little boy, and at bed and board, when he is present, she is at liberty.’—Randolph to Cecil : *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

through the winter. The M'Connells were plied with promises to which they were not unwilling to listen; and among the O'Neils themselves a faction was raised opposed to Shan under Tirlogh, the murderer of the Baron of Dungannon. O'Donnell was encouraged to hold out; M'Guyre defended himself in his islands. By the beginning of February Sussex undertook to relieve them.

Unhappily the Deputy had but too accurately measured his own incapacity. His assassination plots were but the forlorn resources of a man who felt his work too heavy for him; the Irish council had no confidence in a man who had none in himself; and certain that any enterprise which was left to him to conduct would end in disaster, they were unwilling to waste their men, their money, or their reputation. The army was disaffected, disorganized, and mutinous; Sussex lamented its condition to the Home Government, but was powerless to improve it; at length Kildare and Ormond, in the name of the other loyal noblemen and gentlemen, declared that they had changed their minds; they declined to supply their promised contingents for the invasion, and requested that it should be no longer thought of. The farmers of the Pale gathered courage from the example. They too refused to serve. When required to supply provisions, they replied with complain-^{December.}ing of the extortion of the soldiers. They swore 'they would rather be hanged at their own doors' than establish such a precedent. 'If the Deputy looked to have provisions from them he would find himself de-

ceived ;' and Sussex, distracted and miserable, could only declare that the Irish council was in a conspiracy 'to keep O'Neil from falling.'¹

Thus February passed and March, and
 1563. M'Guyre and O'Donnell were not relieved.
 At last, between threats and entreaty, Sussex wrung
 from Ormond an unwilling acquiescence ;
 April. and on the 6th of April, with a mixed force
 of Irish and English, ill armed, ill supplied, dispirited
 and almost disloyal, Sussex set out for the north. He
 took but provision for three weeks with him. A vague
 hope was held out by the farmers that a second supply
 should be collected at Dundalk.

The achievements of an army so composed and so
 commanded scarcely require to be detailed. The sole
 result of a winter's expensive, if worthless, preparation
 was thus summed up in the report from the Deputy to
 the Queen :—

'*April 6.* The army arrives at Armagh.

'*April 8.* We return to Newry to bring up stores
 and ammunition which had been left behind.

'*April 11.* We again advance to Armagh, where
 we remain waiting for the arrival of galloglasse and
 kerne from the Pale.

'*April 14.* A letter from James M'Connell, which
 we answer.

'*April 15.* The galloglasse not coming, we go upon
 Shan's cattle, of which we take enough to serve us ;

¹ Sussex to Elizabeth, February 19 ; Sussex to the English Council, March 1 ; Sussex to Cecil, March 1 : *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

we should have taken more if we had had galloglasse.

‘April 16. We return to Armagh.

‘April 17, 18, 19. We wait for the galloglasse. At last we send back to Dublin for them, and begin to fortify the churchyard.

‘April 20. We write to M’Connell, who will not come to us, notwithstanding his promise.

‘April 21. We survey the Trough Mountains, said to be the strongest place in Ireland.

‘April 22. We return to Armagh with the spoil taken, which would have been much greater if we had had galloglasse, ‘and because St George’s even forced me, her Majesty’s lieutenant, to return to Divine service that night.

‘April 23. ‘Divine service.’

The three weeks had now all but expired; the provisions were consumed; it was necessary to fall back on the Pale, and if the farmers had kept their word, if he could obtain some Irish horse, and if the Scots did not assist Shan, which he thought it likely that they would do, Sussex trusted on his next advance that he would accomplish something more. Conscious of failure, he threw the blame on others. ‘I have been commanded to the field,’ he wrote to Cecil, ‘and I have not one penny of money; I must lead forth an army and have no commission; I must continue in the field and I see not how I shall be victualled; I must fortify and have no working tools.’¹

¹ Sussex to the Council, April 24; Sussex to Cecil, April 24: *Irish MSS.*

Such, after six months of preparation, was the Deputy's hopeless condition ; the money, in which, if the complaints in England of the expenses of the Irish war were justified, he had not been stinted, all gone ; and neither food nor even spade and mattock. In the Pale 'he could not get a man to serve the Queen, nor a peck of corn to feed the army.'¹ At length, with a

May. wild determination to do something, he made

a plundering raid towards Clogher, feeding his men on the cattle which they could steal, wasted a few miles of country, and having succeeded in proving to the Irish that he could do them no serious harm, relinquished the expedition in despair. He exclaimed loudly that the fault did not rest with him. The Scots had deceived him. 'The Englishry of the Pale' were secretly unwilling that the rebellion should be put down. The Ulster chiefs durst not move because they distrusted his power to protect them. The rupture between England and France had given a stimulus to the rebellion, and 'to expel Shan was but a Sisyphus' labour.'²

There may have been some faint foundation for these excuses. The Irish council, satisfied of the Deputy's incapacity, had failed to exert themselves ; while in England the old policy of leaving Ireland to be governed by the Irish had many defenders ; and Elizabeth had been urged to maintain an inefficient person against his will in the command, with a hope, un-

¹ Sussex to the Council, April 28: *Irish MSS.*

² Sussex to Cecil, May 20.

avowed by those who advised her, that he would fail.

Most certainly the English commander had done no injustice to his incompetency. Three hundred horses were reported to have been lost, and Cecil wrote to inquire the meaning of it. Sussex admitted that 'the loss was true indeed.' Being Easter-time, and he having travelled the week before and Easter-day till night, thought fit to give Easter Monday to prayer—and in this time certain churls stole off with the horses.¹

The piety which could neglect practical duty for the outward service of devotion, yet at the same time could make overtures to Neil Grey to assassinate his master, requires no very lenient consideration.

The news of the second failure reached Elizabeth at the crisis of the difficulty at Havre. She was straining every nerve to supply the waste of an army which the plague was destroying. She had a war with France hanging over her head. She was uncertain of Spain and but half secure of the allegiance of her English subjects. It was against her own judgment that the last enterprise had been adventured, and she reverted at once to her original determination to spend no more money in reforming a country which every effort for its amendment plunged into deeper anarchy. She would content herself with a titular sovereignty. She would withdraw or reorganize on a changed footing the profligate and worthless soldiers whose valour flinched from an enemy, and went no further than the plunder of a friend. The

¹ Sussex to Cecil, May 26: *Irish MSS.*

Irish should be left to themselves to realize their own ideals and govern themselves their own way.

Sir Thomas Cusak, a member of the Irish council, came over with a scheme which, if the Queen consented to it, would satisfy the people and would ensure the return of Shan O'Neil to a nominal allegiance. The four provinces should constitute each a separate presidency. Ulster, Connaught, and Munster should be governed in the Queen's name by some Irish chief or nobleman—if not elected by the people, yet chosen in compliance with their wishes. O'Neil would have the north, the O'Briens or the Clanrickards the west. The south would fall to Desmond. On these conditions Cusak would undertake for the quiet of the country and for the undisturbed occupation of the Pale by the English Government.

August. Prepared as Elizabeth had almost become to abandon Ireland entirely, she welcomed this project as a reprieve. She wrote to Sussex to say that, finding his expedition had resulted only in giving fresh strength to Shan O'Neil, 'she had decided to come to an end of the war of Ulster by agreement rather than by force;' and Cusak returned the first week in August empowered to make whatever concessions should be necessary, preparatory to the proposed alteration.

To Shan O'Neil he was allowed to say that the Queen was surprised at his folly in levying war against her; nor could she understand his object. She was aware of his difficulties; she knew 'the barbarity' of the people

with whom he had to deal ; she had never intended to exact any strict account of him ; and if he was dissatisfied with the arrangements to which he had consented when in England, he had but to prove himself a good subject, and he 'should not only have those points reformed, but also any pre-eminence in that country which her Majesty might grant without doing any other person wrong.' If he desired to have a council established at Armagh, he should himself be the president of that council ; if he wished to drive the Scots out of Antrim, her own troops should assist in the expulsion ; if he was offended with the garrison in the cathedral, she would gladly see peace maintained in a manner less expensive to herself. To the Primacy he might name the person most agreeable to himself ; and with the Primacy, as a matter of course, even the form of maintaining the Protestant Church would be abandoned also.

In return for these concessions the Queen demanded only that to save her honour Shan should sue for them as a favour instead of demanding them as a right.¹ The rebel chief consented without difficulty to conditions which cost him nothing ; and after an interview with Cusak, O'Neil wrote a formal apology to Elizabeth, and promised for the future to be her Majesty's true and faithful subject. Indentures were drawn on the 17th of December, in which the Ulster sovereignty was transferred to him in everything but the name ; and the treaty—such treaty as it was—required only Elizabeth's

¹ Instructions to Sir Thomas Cusak, August 7: *Irish MSS.*

signature, when a second dark effort was made to cut the knot of the Irish difficulty.

As a first evidence of returning cordiality, a present of wine was sent to Shan from Dublin. It was consumed at his table, but the poison had been unskilfully prepared. It brought him and half his household to the edge of death, but no one actually died. Refined chemical analysis was not required to detect the cause of the illness; and Shan clamoured for redress with the fierceness of a man accustomed rather to do wrong than to suffer it.

September. The guilt could not be fixed on Sussex.

The crime was traced to an English resident in Dublin named Smith; and if Sussex had been the instigator, his instrument was too faithful to betray him. Yet, after the fatal letter in which the Earl had revealed to Elizabeth his own personal endeavours to procure O'Neil's murder, the suspicion cannot but cling to him that the second attempt was not made without his connivance. Nor can Elizabeth herself be wholly acquitted of responsibility. She professed the loudest indignation; but she ventured no allusion to his earlier communication with her; and no hint transpires of any previous displeasure with Sussex's confessions to herself.

In its origin and in its close the story is wrapped in mystery. The treachery of an English nobleman, the conduct of the inquiry, and the anomalous termination of it, would have been incredible even in Ireland, were not the original correspondence extant in which the

facts are not denied. Elizabeth, on the receipt of O'Neil's complaint, directed Sir Thomas Cusak to look into the evidence most scrupulously; she begged Shan to produce every proof which he could obtain for the detection 'both of the party himself and of all others that were any wise thereto consenting; to the intent none might escape that were parties thereunto of what condition soever the same should be.'

'We have given commandment,' she wrote to Sussex, 'to show you how much it grieveth us to think that any such horrible attempt should be used as is alleged by Shan O'Neil to have been attempted by Thomas Smith to kill him by poison; we doubt not but you have, as reason is, committed the said Smith to prison, and proceeded to the just trial thereof; for it behoveth us for all good and honourable respects to have the fault severely punished, and so we will and charge you to do.'¹

'We assure you,' she wrote to Cusak, 'the indignation which we conceive of this fact, being told with some probability by you, together with certain other causes of suspicion which O'Neil hath gathered, hath wrought no small effect in us to incline us to bear with divers things unorderly passed, and to trust to that which you have on his behalf promised hereafter in time to come.'²

It is in human nature to feel deeper indignation at a crime which has been detected and exposed than at guilt equally great of which the knowledge is confined

¹ The Queen to Sussex, October 15: *Irish MSS.*

² The Queen to Sir Thomas Cusak *Irish MSS.*

to the few who might profit by it ; yet after the repeated acts of treachery which had been at least meditated towards Shan with Elizabeth's knowledge, she was scarcely justified in assuming a tone of such innocent anger ; nor was the result of the investigation more satisfactory. After many contradictions and denials Smith at last confessed his guilt, took the entire responsibility on himself, and declared that his object was to rid his country of a dangerous enemy. The English law in the sixteenth century against crimes of violence has not been suspected of too much leniency ; yet it was discovered by some strange interpretation that as the crime had not been completed it was not punishable by death. Notwithstanding Elizabeth's letter there was an evident desire to hush up the inquiry ; and strangest of all, Sir Thomas Cusak induced O'Neil to drop his complaint. 'I
 1564. persuaded O'Neil to forget the matter,' Cusak wrote to Cecil, 'whereby no more talk should grow of it ; seeing there is no law to punish the offender other than by discretion in imprisonment, which O'Neil would little regard except the party might be executed by death, and that the law doth not suffer. So as the matter being wisely pacified it were well done to leave it.'¹

Behind the fragments of information preserved in the State correspondence, much may remain concealed, which if found might explain a conclusion so unexpected. Had Smith been the only offender it might have been

¹ Sir Thomas Cusak to Cecil, March 22, 1564 : *Irish MSS.*

expected that he would have been gladly sacrificed as an evidence of Elizabeth's evenhandedness, and Shan perhaps did not care for the punishment of a subordinate if he could not reach the principal.

He used the occasion however to grasp once more at the great object of his ambition, and to obtain with it if possible a refined revenge on Sussex. Seeing Elizabeth anxious, whether honestly or from motives of policy, to atone for the attempt to murder him, he renewed his suit to her for an English wife. The M'Ilams, relations of the Countess of Argyle, had offered him a thousand pounds to let her go; and Elizabeth half promising if the Countess were restored to her friends to consider his prayer, he fixed on Sussex's sister, who had been employed as the bait to catch him; so to humble the haughty English Earl into the very dust and dirt.

Elizabeth's desire to conciliate however stopped short of ignominy. Lord Sussex deserved no better, nor his sister if she had been a party to her brother's plot; but Cecil did not even venture 'to move the matter to the Queen, fearing how she might take it;' and Shan, laying by his resentment, contented himself with the substantial results of his many successes. M'Guyre had to fly from his islands; O'Donnell's castles were surrendered; the Armagh garrison was withdrawn at last. Over lake and river, bog and mountain, Shan was undisputed Lord of Ulster—save only on the Antrim shore where the Scots maintained a precarious independence. So absolute was he that with contemptuous pity he opened the doors of the Callogh's prison. The aged and

broken chief came to sue for maintenance at the Court to which his fidelity had ruined him; and Cusak consoled Cecil with saying that 'he was but a poor creature without activity or manhood,' and that 'O'Neil, continuing in his truth, was more worthy to be embraced than three O'Donnells.'¹

Here then for the present the story will leave Shan, safely planted on the first step of his ambition, in all but the title sole monarch of the north. He built himself a fort on an island in Lough Neagh, which he called 'Foogh-ni-Gall'—or 'Hate of Englishmen;' and grew rich on the spoils of his enemies, 'the only strong man in Ireland.' He administered justice after a paternal fashion, permitting no robbers but himself; when wrong was done he compelled restitution, 'or at his own cost redeemed the harm to the loser's contentation.'² Two hundred pipes of wine were stored in his cellars; six hundred men-at-arms fed at his table—'as it were his janissaries;' and daily he feasted the beggars at his gate, 'saying it was meet to serve Christ first.' Half wolf, half fox, he lay couched in his 'Castle of Malepartus,' with his emissaries at Rome, at Paris, and at Edinburgh. In the morning he was the subtle and dexterous pretender to the Irish throne; in the afternoon, 'when the wine was in him,' he was a dissolute savage revelling in sensuality, with his unhappy countess uncoupled from her horse-boy to wait upon his pleasure.

¹ Cusak to Cecil, 1564: *Irish MSS.*

² CAMPION.

He broke loose from time to time to keep his hand in practice : at Carlingford, for instance, he swept off one day some two hundred sheep and oxen, while his men violated sixty women in the town.¹ But Elizabeth looked away and endeavoured not to see ; the English Government had resolved 'to stir no sleeping dogs in Ireland till a staff was provided to chastise them if they would bite.'² Terence Daniel, the Dean of those rough-riding canons of Armagh, was installed as Primate ; the Earl of Sussex was recalled to England ; and the new Archbishop, unable to contain his exultation at the blessed day which had dawned upon his country, wrote to Cecil to say how the millennium had come at last—glory be to God !

Meantime Cecil set himself to work at the root of the evil. Relinquishing for the present the hope of extending the English rule in Ireland, he endeavoured to probe the secret of its weakness and to restore some kind of order and justice in the counties where that rule survived. On the return of Sussex to England Sir Thomas Wroth and Sir Nicholas Arnold were sent over as commissioners to inquire into the complaints against the army. The scandals which they brought to light, the recrimination, rage, and bitterness which they provoked, fill a large volume of the State Papers.

Peculation had grown into a custom ; the most bare-faced frauds had been converted by habit into rights ; and 'a captain's' commission was thought 'ill-handled'

¹ Fitzwilliam to Cecil, June 17, 1565 : *Irish MSS.*

² Cecil to Sir Nicholas Arnold : *Irish MSS.*

if it did not yield beyond the pay 500*l.* a year. The companies appeared in the pay books as having their full complement of a hundred men. The actual number rarely exceeded sixty. The soldiers followed the example of their leaders, and robbed and ground the peasantry. Each and all had commenced their evil ways, when the Government itself was the first and worst offender.

A few more years—perhaps months—of such doings would have made an end of English dominion. Sir Thomas Wroth described the Pale on his arrival as a weltering sea of confusion—‘the captains out of credit,’ ‘the soldiers’ mutinous, the English Government hated; ‘every man seeking his own, and none that which was Christ’s;’ ‘few in all the land reserved from bowing the knee to Baal;’ ‘the laws for religion mere words.’¹

Something too much of theological anxiety impaired Wroth’s usefulness. He wished to begin at the outside with reforming the creed. The thing needful was to reform the heart and to bring back truth and honesty. Wroth therefore was found unequal to the work; and the purification of the Pale was left to Arnold—a hard, iron, pitiless man, careful of things and careless of phrases, untroubled with delicacy, and impervious to Irish ‘enchancements.’ The account books were dragged to light; where iniquity in high places was registered in inexorable figures. The hands of Sir Henry Ratcliffe, the brother of Sussex, were not found clean. Arnold

¹ Sir Thomas Wroth to Cecil, April 16: *Irish MSS.*

sent him to the castle with the rest of the offenders. Deep leading drains were cut through the corrupting mass; the shaking ground grew firm; and honest, healthy human life was again made possible. With the provinces beyond the Pale Arnold meddled little, save where, taking a rough view of the necessities of the case, he could help the Irish chiefs to destroy each other. To Cecil he wrote—

‘I am with all the wild Irish at the same point I am at with bears and bandogs; when I see them fight, so they fight earnestly indeed and tug each other well, I care not who has the worst.’¹

Why not, indeed? Better so than to hire assassins! Cecil, with the modesty of genius, confessed his ignorance of the country and his inability to judge; yet in such opinions as he allowed himself to give there was generally a certain nobility of tone and sentiment.

‘You be of that opinion,’ he replied, ‘which many wise men are of—from which I do not dissent, being an Englishman; but being as I am a Christian man, I am not without some perplexity to enjoy of such cruelties.’²

Arnold however, though perhaps not personally responsible, saw the Irish rending each other as he desired. The formal division into presidencies could not be completed on the moment; but English authority having ceased to cast its shadow beyond the Pale, the leading chiefs seized or contended for the rule. In the north O’Neil was without a rival. In the west the

¹ Sir Nicholas Arnold to Cecil, January 29, 1565: *Irish MSS.*

² Cecil to Sir N. Arnold, February 28: *Irish MSS.*

O'Briens and the Clanrickards shared without disputing for them the glens and moors of Galway, Clare, and Mayo. The richer counties of Munster were a prize to excite a keener competition; and when the English Government was no longer in a position to interfere, the feud between the Butlers and the Geraldines of the south burst like a volcano in fury, and like a volcano in the havoc which it spread. Even now the picture drawn by Sir Henry Sidney and repeated by Spenser can scarcely be contemplated without emotion. The rich limestone pastures were burnt into a wilderness; through Kilkenny, Tipperary, and Cork, 'a man might ride twenty or thirty miles nor ever find a house standing;' 'and the miserable poor were brought to such wretchedness that any stony heart would have rued the same. Out of every corner of the woods and glens they came creeping forth upon their hands, for their legs could not bear them; they looked like anatomies of death; they spoke like ghosts crying out of their graves; they did eat the dead carrions, happy where they could find them; yea, they did eat one another soon after, insomuch as the very carcasses they spared not to scrape out of their graves; and if they found a plot of watercresses or shamrocks, there they flocked as to a feast for a time. Yet were they not all long to continue therewithal, so that in short space there were none almost left, and a most populous and plentiful country was suddenly left void of man and beast; yet surely in all that war there perished not many by the

sword, but all by the extremity of famine which they themselves had wrought.'¹

¹ Compare Spenser's 'State of Ireland' with 'A Description of Munster,' by Sir Henry Sidney, after a journey through it in 1566.

The original of Sidney's despatch is in the Record Office. It was printed by Collins.—*Sidney Papers*, vol. i.

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE EMBASSY OF DE SILVA.

THE policy of Elizabeth towards the French Protestants had not been successful. Had her assistance been moderately disinterested she would have secured their friendship, and at the close of the eight years, fixed by the Treaty of Cambray for the restoration of Calais, she would have experienced the effects of their gratitude. By the forcible retention of Havre after the civil war was ended she had rekindled hereditary animosities ; she had thrown additional doubt on her sincerity as a friend of the Reformation ; she had sacrificed an English army, while she had provided the French Government with a fair pretext for disowning its obligations, and was left with a war upon her hands from which she could hardly extricate herself with honour. A fortnight before Havre surrendered, the Prince of Condé had offered, if she would withdraw from it, that the clause in the Treaty of Cambray affecting Calais should be reaccepted by the King of France, the Queen-mother, the Council, the Noblesse, and the Parliament.

She had angrily and contemptuously refused ; and now with crippled finances, with trade ruined, with the necessity growing upon her, as it had grown upon her sister, of contracting loans at Antwerp, her utmost hope was to extort the terms which she had then rejected.

Unable to maintain a regular fleet at sea she had let loose the privateers, whose exploits hereafter will be more particularly related. In this place it is enough to say that they had found in the ships of Spain, Flanders, or even of their own country, more tempting booty than in the coasting traders of Brittany. English merchants and sailors were arrested in Spanish harbours and imprisoned in Spanish dungeons in retaliation for 'depredations committed by the adventurers;' while a bill was presented by the Madrid Government of two million ducats for injuries inflicted by them on Spanish subjects.¹ In vain Philip struggled to avoid a quarrel with Elizabeth; in vain Elizabeth refused to be the champion of the Reformation: the animosities of their subjects and the necessity of things were driving them forward towards the eventually inevitable breach. Mary Stuart was looking to the King of Spain and the King of Spain to Mary Stuart, each as the ally designed by Providence for the other; and the English Government in this unlucky war with France was quarrelling with the only European power which, since the breach of Henry the Eighth with the Papacy, had been cordially its friend. The House of Guise was

¹ Reasons for a peace with France, March 10, 1564: *French MSS. Rolls House.*

under eclipse. The Queen of Scots' ambitions were no objects of interest to the Queen-mother. The policy of France was again ready to be moderate, national, anti-Spanish, and anti-Papal, to be all which England would most desire to see it. It was imperatively necessary that Elizabeth should make peace, that she should endure as she best might the supposed ingratitude of Condé, and accept the easiest terms to which Catherine de Medici would now consent.¹

¹ A letter of Sir John Mason to Cecil expresses the sense entertained by English statesmen of the necessity of peace:—‘My health, I thank God, I have recovered, nothing remaining but an ill cough, which will needs accompany *senectutem meam* to the journey's end; whereof my care is much lessened by the great care of the many sicknesses that I see in our commonwealth, which is to me more dear than is either health or life to be assaulted with; which would God were but infirmities as you do term them, ac non potius *κακοήθειαι*, seu quod genus morbi iis sit magis immorigerum et ad sanandum rebellius; and that worse is, cum universæ corporis partes nobis doleant a vertice capitis usque ad plantam pedis, dolorem tamen (for any care that is seen to be had thereof) sentire non videmur, quod mentis ægrotantis est indicium. A great argument whereof is that in tot Reipublicæ difficultatibus editur bibitur luditur altum dormitur privata curantur publica negliguntur

ceu riderent omnia et pax rebus esset altissima. The fear of God, whereby all things were wont to be kept in indifferent order, is in effect gone, and he seemeth to weigh us and to conduct our doings thereafter. The fear of the Prince goeth apace after, whereof we see daily proof both by sea and land. It is high time therefore for her Highness to take some good way with her enemy, and to grow with him to some reasonable end, yielding to necessity cui ne Dii quidem resistunt, et non ponere rumores ante salutem; and to answer our friends in reason, so as rebus foris constitutis, she may wholly attend to see things in better order at home; the looseness whereof is so great, as being not remedied in time, the tempest is not a little to be feared cum tot coactæ nubes nobis minantur, which God of his mercy, by the prayer of decem justi, a nobis longissime avertat.

‘The Queen is expected to go north on progress, whereunto no good man will counsel her. There

The diplomatic correspondence which had continued since the summer had so far been ^{January.} unproductive of result. The French pretended that the Treaty of Cambray had been broken by the English in the seizure of Havre, and that Elizabeth's claims on Calais, and on the half million crowns which were to be paid if Calais was not restored, were alike forfeited. They demanded therefore the release of the hostages which they had given in as their security; and they detained Sir Nicholas Throgmorton on his parole until their countrymen were returned into their hands.

The English maintained on the other side that they had acted only in self-defence, that the treaty had been first violated by the French when Francis and Mary assumed Elizabeth's arms and style, that the House of Guise had notoriously conspired against her throne, and that Calais therefore had been already forfeited to themselves.

Between these two positions Paul de Foix, the French ambassador in London, Sir Thomas Smith, Elizabeth's ambassador in Paris, and Throgmorton with a special and separate commission, were endeavouring to discover some middle ground of agreement.

The French hostages individually had proved them-

be in this city and about it numbers of men in much necessity, some for lack of work and some for lack of will to work. If these, with others that have possessed the highways round about, be not by some	good means kept in awe, I fear there will be ill dwelling near unto London by such as have anything to take to.'—Mason to Cecil, March 8: <i>Lansdowne MSS.</i> 7.
--	--

selves a disagreeable burden on Elizabeth. They had been sent to reside at Eton, where they had amused themselves with misleading the Eton boys into iniquity; they had brought ambiguous damsels into the Fellows' Common Room, and had misconducted themselves in the Fellows' precincts 'in an unseemly manner.' To give them up was to acquiesce in the French interpretation of the Calais question. They were therefore arrested in retaliation for the arrest of Throgmorton, and were thrown into prison.

Yet the exigencies of England required peace, and France knew it; and the negotiations took a form which might without difficulty have been foreseen; Elizabeth made demands on which she durst not insist, and she acquiesced at last in a conclusion which was made humiliating by the reluctance with which it was accepted.

On the 28th of January Sir Thomas Smith reported that the Queen-mother and her ministers were anxious to come to terms, that they desired nothing better than a return to the 'natural love' which had existed 'between old King Francis and King Henry;' but that to speak any more of 'the ratification of the Treaty of Cambray was lost labour.'¹ Elizabeth knew that she must give way, yet she desired to give way with dignity: instead of replying to Smith she wrote to Throgmorton, who was intrusted with powers to negotiate independently of his colleague. She admitted

¹ Sir Thomas Smith to Elizabeth, January 28: *French MSS. Rolls House.*

that if the treaty was not to be ratified she could not stand out upon it; yet unwilling to commit herself formally she desired Throgmorton to go 'as of himself' to the Queen-mother and inquire whether she would consent to a general peace with a mutual reservation of rights. She said that she would not part with the hostages. If their restitution was demanded as a right 'she would rather abide the worst that could be done against her.' There might be a private understanding that on the signature of the treaty they should be released from arrest; but even so they must remain in England¹ until the French had either paid the money or had given mercantile security for it. To surrender them otherwise would be an admission that the Treaty of Cambray was no longer binding.

February was consumed in diplomatic fencing over these proposals; and Throgmorton tried in turn the Queen-mother, the Cardinal of Lorraine, the Constable, the Cardinal of Bourbon, and the Chancellor. But if Elizabeth was afraid of doing anything to compromise the treaty, the French were equally afraid of doing anything to acknowledge it. They would give no second security to recover the hostages; they would not pay the half million crowns because it was the sum

¹ We mean not by any our own act to consent that the hostages should depart hence, as persons in whom we had no interest in respect of the Treaty of Cambray, without we may have caution according to the treaty; and though they be not here but for a sum of money, yet if we should let them depart, having neither the money nor other hostages, nor yet caution of merchants, we should thereby to our dishonour consent that the treaty was void.'—Elizabeth to Throgmorton, February 3: *French MSS. Rolls House.*

which the treaty named. Throgmorton said that his mistress would make no objection to six hundred thousand if they were afraid of the stipulated figures; but this way out of the difficulty did not commend itself.

La Halle, a gentleman of the Court, aiming at Elizabeth through her weak side, suggested a present of a hundred thousand crowns to Lord Robert. The Queen-mother offered to add to it some rich jewel from the French crown; but Sir Nicholas encouraged this suggestion as little as the French Court had encouraged the other. At last the Cardinal of Lorraine in private told him that a hundred and twenty thousand crowns would be paid for the hostages—so much and no more. The Prince of Condé and those in the French council whom the Queen of England had obliged the most were opposed to making any concessions at all, and only wished the war to continue; and the Cardinal hinted as a reason for Elizabeth's consent that it was well known that she could not trust her own subjects.

To this last suggestion Throgmorton answered that 'Although there were some that desired the Roman religion, as he thought there were, yet the former agitations and torments about the change of religion had so wearied each party that the whole were resolved to endure no more changes, for they were so violent; all sorts, of what religion soever they were, did find more ease and surety to serve and obey than to rebel; and for proof the greatest number of those that had lost their lives in the wars at Newhaven and other places were

reported to be of the Roman religion : so as surely the diversity of conscience did not in England make diversities of duties or breed new disobedience.’¹

Some truth there doubtless was in this account of the state of English feeling ; yet March. Throgmorton could scarcely have felt the confidence which he expressed. The disaffection of the Catholics was but too notorious, although Philip had embarrassed their action by forbidding them to look to France for assistance.

The loyalty or disloyalty of the English people however did not touch the immediate question. Beyond the hundred and twenty thousand crowns the French offer would not rise. Throgmorton wrote home for instructions, and the proposal was met in the spirit which usually characterized Elizabeth’s money transaction :

The Queen replied with directing the ambassadors to demand four hundred thousand crowns ; if the French refused, she said that they might descend to three hundred thousand, and must protest that they had no power to go lower ; if there was no hope of obtaining three hundred thousand, ‘ they must do their uttermost to make the sum not less than two hundred thousand.’

These instructions were delivered in the usual form to the State messenger Somers, and appeared to be an ultimatum ; but Somers carried with him a second sealed packet which he was not to deliver except at the last extremity. The ambassadors were to be able to say with

¹ Throgmorton to Elizabeth, February 28 : *French MSS. Rolls House.*

a clear conscience that they had no authority to accept less than the two hundred thousand; yet sooner than let the chance of peace escape they were to be allowed at the last extremity to take whatever Catherine de Medici would give.

The French Court was at Troyes when Somers arrived. Smith and Throgmorton, who had been employed hitherto as rivals—each informed of but half the truth, and intrusted with information which had been concealed from the other—were united at last in a common humiliation. With the first despatch in his hand Sir Thomas Smith repaired to the Queen-mother, and descended his scale so far as he then knew that his powers extended. Catherine replied shortly that the recovery of Havre had cost France two millions of gold; on the sum to be paid to Elizabeth ‘she had not bargained and huckstered and altered her terms as the English had done; she had fixed in her own mind at first what she would give; and she would give that or nothing.’ She intended to leave Troyes the following morning. If not accepted in the mean time the offer would be withdrawn.

With this answer Smith returned to his brother ambassador. They were looking blankly in each other’s faces when Somers produced his second letter. The seal was broken. They found themselves permitted to consent; and they sent a message to Bourdin, Catherine’s secretary, begging him to come to them. Their tempers were not improved by the position in which Elizabeth had placed them; and while waiting for Bourdin’s ar-

rival each laid on the other the blame of their bad success. Throgmorton 'chafed and fumed,' 'detested and execrated himself!' and then accused his companion of having betrayed to the Queen-mother the secret of the second commission. Smith protested that he could not have betrayed what he did not know; but five years of 'practice' and conspiracy were ending in shame; and Sir Nicholas could not bear it and was unreasonable.

Sir Thomas Smith himself describes the scene.

'I tell the Queen-mother!' quoth I. 'Why or how should I tell her?'

'Thou liest!' said Throgmorton, 'like a whoreson traitor as thou art!'

'A whoreson traitor! Nay, thou liest!' quoth I. 'I am as true to the Queen's majesty as thou, every day in the week, and have done and do her Highness as good service as thou.'

'Hereupon Sir Nicholas drew his dagger, and poured out such terms as his malicious and furious rage had in store; and called me 'arrant knave,' 'beggary knave,' 'traitor,' and other such injuries as came next to hand out of his good store.

'I drew my dagger also. Mr Somers stepped between us; but as he pressed with his dagger to come near me, I bade him stand back and not come no nearer to me, or I would cause him stand back, and give him such a mark as his Bedlam furious head did deserve.'¹

To such a pass had two honest men been brought by

¹ Smith to Cecil, April 13: *French MSS. Rolls House.*

Elizabeth's bargain-driving. Throgmorton felt the wound most deeply, as the person chiefly answerable for the French policy. He had offered 'to lie in prison for a year rather than the enemy should have their will.' To rouse the Queen to fierceness he had quoted the French proverb, that 'if she made herself a sheep the wolf would devour her ;'¹ and it ended in his being compelled at last to haggle like a cheating shopkeeper, and to fail.

The ruffled humours cooled at last, and when quiet was restored Smith proposed one more attempt to 'traffic ;' but Sir Nicholas would not give Catherine any further triumph ; Bourdin came, and the Peace of Troyes was arranged.

The terms were simple. Complicated claims and rights on both sides were reserved ; the Treaty of Cambray was neither acknowledged nor declared void ; the French hostages were to be released from England ; the French Government undertook to pay for them the hundred and twenty thousand crowns ; and free trade was to be allowed 'between the subjects of both sovereigns in all parts of their respective dominions.'² The unfortunate war was at an end. Elizabeth was obliged to bear graciously with the times ; and her bitterness was reserved for the Prince of Condé. From him she charged Smith to demand instant repayment of the loan which she had advanced to him in his hour of difficulty. 'We mean not,' she said, 'to be so deluded as

¹ 'Si tu te fais ung mouton le loup te mangera.'

² Peace of Troyes RYMER.

both to forbear our money and to have had at this time no friendship by his means in the conclusion of the peace.’¹

The peace itself came not an hour too soon. Scarcely was it signed than news arrived from Italy that the Sacred College had repented of their first honest answer to the English Catholics who had asked leave to attend the established services. It had been decided in secret council to permit Catholics in disguise to hold benefices in England, to take the oaths of allegiance, and to serve Holy Church in the camp of the enemy. ‘Remission of sin to them and their heirs—with annuities, honours, and promotions,’ was offered ‘to any cook, brewer, baker, vintner, physician, grocer, surgeon, or other who would make away with the Queen;’ the curse of God and his vicar was threatened against all those ‘who would not promote and assist by money or otherwise the pretences of the Queen of Scots to the English crown;’² the Court of Rome, once illustrious as the citadel of the saints, was given over to Jesuitism and the devil; and the Papal fanatics in England began to weave their endless web of conspiracy—aiming amidst a thousand variations at the heart of Queen Elizabeth.

The ruffle with France sunk speedily into calm. The ratifications were promptly exchanged. Lord Hunsdon went to France, taking with

May.

¹ Elizabeth to Sir T. Smith, May 2: *French MSS. Rolls House*

² Report of E. Denum, April 13, 1564: STRYPE'S *Annals of Elizabeth*, vol. i., part 2, p. 54.

him the Garter for the young King.¹ M. de Gonor and the Bishop of Coutances came to England; and an attempt, not very successful, was made to show them in their reception that England was better defended than they supposed. In January, when a French invasion was thought likely, Archbishop Parker had reported ‘Dover, Walmer, and Deal as forsaken and unregarded for any provision;’ ‘the people feeble, unarmed, and commonly discomforted towards the feared mischief.’ The Lord Warden had gone to his post ‘as naked without strength of men.’ The Archbishop, living at Bekesbourne with the ex-Bishop of Ely and another Catholic at free prison, felt uneasy for his charge; and not sharing Throgmorton’s confidence and believing that if the French landed they would carry all before them, wrote to Cecil to warn him of the danger ‘which if not looked to he feared would be irreparable.’

‘If the enemy have an entry,’ he said, ‘as by great consideration of our weakness and their strength, of their vigilance and our dormitation and protraction, is like, the Queen’s majesty shall never be able to leave to her successors that which she found delivered her by God’s favourable hand.’²

¹ The ceremony was nearly spoilt by an odd accident. The Garter, though Hunsdon said it cost her Majesty dear, was a poor and shabby one. It had been made on the common pattern, as if for some burly English nobleman, and would not remain on the puny leg of Charles the Ninth. Hunsdon was obliged to send back in haste for one which had belonged to King Edward or King Philip. ‘These things,’ he said, ‘touch her Majesty’s honour.’—*French MSS.*, May, 1564: *Rolls House*.

² Parker to Cecil, January 20 and February 6, 1564: *Lansdowne MSS.*

The peril had passed over; and for fear the French ambassadors might carry back too tempting a report of the defencelessness of the coast, Lord Abergavenny was directed—as if to do them honour—to call under arms the gentlemen of the south-eastern counties.

The result not being particularly successful, June.

the Archbishop invited De Gonor and the Bishop of Coutances to Bekesbourne, and ‘in a little vain brag, perhaps infirmity,’ showed them his well-furnished armoury, hoping that his guests would infer that if a prelate ‘had regard of such provisions others had more care thereabout.’¹

The thin disguise would have availed little had there been a real desire for the continuance of the war. In the unprotected shores, the open breezy downs, the scattered and weakly-armed population, they observed the facility of invasion, and remarked upon it plainly. But Catherine de Medici had no interest in Mary Stuart and no desire to injure Elizabeth. Mary Stuart’s friends were rather at Madrid than at Paris; and the French ministers were more curious of the religious condition of England than of its military defences.

Their visit to Bekesbourne therefore gave occasion for the Archbishop and his visitors to compare ecclesiastical notes. The Bishop of Coutances expressed the unexpected pleasure which it had given him to find that ‘there was so much reverence about the sacraments,’ ‘that music was still permitted in the quires,’

¹ Parker to Cecil, June 3: *Domestic MSS. Elizabeth*, vol. xxxiii.

and that the lands of the suppressed abbeys had been bestowed 'for pious uses.' He wished that as happy a change could be worked in France; and marvelled that the deposed bishops should have been 'so stiff' in refusing 'to follow the Prince's religion;' he noted and delighted in English mediocrity; charging the Genevans and the Scots with going too far in extremities.' The Archbishop told him that 'there were priests and bishops in England both married and unmarried;' 'he did not disallow thereof, and was contented to hear evil of the Pope.'

The ambassadors proceeded to London, leaving behind them an agreeable impression of themselves, and carrying with them a sunny memory of a pleasant English summer home, with its woods and gardens and cawing rooks and cheery social life; the French pages had been so well schooled in their behaviour that when they were gone the Archbishop was surprised to find 'he could not charge them with purloining the worth of one silver spoon.'¹ On both sides of the Channel, in London and Paris, the peace once made there was the warmest endeavour to obliterate painful recollections; the moderate party was in power at the Court of Catherine, and with it the liberal anti-Spanish foreign policy; the interests of France and England were identical on the great political questions of the day; and Elizabeth was fortunate in having a treaty forced upon her which obliged Philip to look with less favour on the Queen of

¹ Parker to Cecil, June 3: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xxxiii.

Scots—which compelled the Spanish ministers to postpone their resentment against English piracies, and drove them rather to dread their own inability to retain their Low Countries than to seek opportunities for interference abroad.

The King of Spain had intended to send no more ambassadors to England till Mary Stuart was on the throne: on the Peace of Troyes he changed his mind, and resumed or affected to resume his friendly relations with Elizabeth. Guzman de Silva received his commission as de Quadra's successor; and once more in the old language Luis de Paz, the Spanish agent in London, reported to Granvelle 'the affliction and discontent of the English Catholics, who had been encouraged to hope that their trials were at an end, who had rested their entire hopes on Philip, and now knew not where to turn.'¹

Mary Stuart, as her hopes of the Prince of Spain grew fainter, was pausing over the answer which she should make to Elizabeth's last proposals. She had been in communication throughout the winter with the Netherlands, and was perhaps aware in some degree of the difficulties created by the Prince's character. She had decisively refused the Archduke of Austria whom Philip wished her to take in his son's stead; and although the Spanish Court, waiting probably for some

¹ 'Los Catolicos del Reyno estan muy afligidos con gran descontento, viendo que todas las esperanças que tenian eran en su Mag^d, y que no veen semblante ninguno para principio de remediar tanta desventura.' —Luis Romano to Granvelle, 1564. *MS. Simancas.*

favourable change in Don Carlos, had not yet determined that the marriage must be given up, the Queen of Scots knew enough to prevent her from feeling sanguine of obtaining him. It became necessary for her to consider whether she could make anything out of the English overtures.

Elizabeth's attitude towards her was in the main honourable and statesmanlike. The name of a successor, as she said herself, was like the tolling of her death-bell. In her sister's lifetime she had experienced how an heir-presumptive with an inalienable right became inevitably a rallying point of disaffection. She did not trust the Queen of Scots, and if she allowed her pretensions to be sanctioned by Act of Parliament she anticipated neglect, opposition—perhaps worse. But of assassination she could scarcely be in greater danger than she was already; and if she could induce Mary to meet her half way in some moderate policy, and if the Queen of Scots, instead of marrying a Catholic prince and allying herself with the revolutionary Ultramontanes, would accept an English nobleman of whose loyalty to herself she could feel assured, she was ready to sacrifice her personal unwillingness to what she believed to be the interest of her people. There could then be no danger that England would be sacrificed to the Papacy. Some tolerant creed could be established which Catholics might accept without offence to their consciences, and Protestants could live under without persecution; while the resolution of the two factions into neutrality, if not into friendship, the union of the crowns, and the confidence which would

arise from a secured succession, were objects with which private inclination could not be allowed to interfere. Elizabeth had made the offer in good faith, with a sincere hope that it would be accepted, and with a fair ground of confidence that with the conditions which she had named the objections of the House of Commons to the Queen of Scots would be overcome.

Even in the person whom in her heart she desired Mary to marry, Elizabeth was giving an evidence of the honesty of her intentions. Lord Robert Dudley was perhaps the most worthless of her subjects; but in the loving eyes of his mistress he was the knight *sans peur et sans reproche*; and she took a melancholy pride in offering her sister her choicest jewel, and in raising Dudley, though she could not marry him herself, to the reversion of the English throne.

She had not indeed named Lord Robert formally in Randolph's commission. She had spoken of him to Maitland, but she had spoken also of the Earl of Warwick; and she perhaps retained some hope that if Mary would be contented with the elder brother she might still keep her favourite for herself.¹ But if she enter-

¹ Randolph himself seems to have thought something of the kind. On the 21st of January, before the peace with France, he wrote to Elizabeth:

‘The French have heard through M. de Foix of your Majesty’s intent, and the Cardinal of Guise is set to hinder it. He writes to the Queen of Scots to beware of your Majesty, that you mean nothing less than

good faith with her; and that it proceedeth of finesse to make her believe that you intend her good, or that her honour shall be any way advanced by marriage of anything so base as either my Lord Robert or Earl of Warwick, of which two your Majesty is determined to take the one and to give her the other. Though this whole matter be not

tained any such thought she soon abandoned it; her self-abnegation was to be complete; and in ignorance of the objections of Mary Stuart to the Archduke Charles she had even allowed Cecil at the close of 1563 to reopen negotiations with the Emperor for the transfer of his son to herself. Ferdinand however had returned a cold answer. He had been trifled with once already. Elizabeth had played with him, he said, for her own purposes with no real intention of marriage; and neither he nor the Archduke should be made ridiculous a second time.¹ Elizabeth accepted the refusal and redoubled her advances to Mary Stuart; relinquishing, if she had ever really entertained, the thought of a simultaneous marriage for herself until she had seen how her scheme for Dudley would end.

She was so capable of falsehood that her own expressions would have been an insufficient guarantee for her sincerity; yet it will be seen beyond a doubt that those around her—her ministers, her instruments, Cecil, Randolph, the foreign ambassadors—all believed that she really desired to give Dudley to Mary Stuart and to settle the Scottish difficulty by it. In this, as in everything else, she was irresolute and changeable; but neither her conduct nor her words can be reconciled with the hypothesis of intentional duplicity; and the weak point of the project was that which she herself regarded with

true, your Majesty seeth that he hath a shrewd guess at it.'—Randolph to Elizabeth, January 21: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

¹ Christopher Mundt to Cecil, December 28, 1563: *Burghley Papers*, HAINES.

the greatest self-admiration. She was giving in Lord Robert the best treasure which she possessed; and Cecil approved the choice to rid his mistress of a companion whose presence about her person was a disgrace to her.

But no true friend of the Queen of Scots could advise her to accept a husband whom Elizabeth dared not marry for fear of her subjects' resentment. The first two months of the year passed off with verbal fencing; the Queen of Scots was expecting news from Spain, and Murray and Maitland declined to press upon her the wishes of Elizabeth;¹ while Mary herself began to express an anxiety which derives importance from her later history for the return to Scotland of the Earl of Bothwell.

Bothwell, it will be remembered, had been charged two years before by the Earl of Arran with a design of killing Murray and of carrying off the Queen. He had been imprisoned in Edinburgh Castle, and had escaped, not it was supposed without Mary's connivance. He had attempted to fly to France, but had been driven by foul weather into Berwick, where he was arrested by the English commander. When Randolph informed the Queen of Scots of his capture 'he doubted whether she did give him any thanks for the news;' and a few days after she desired that he should be sent back 'to her keeping.' Her ministers 'suspecting that her mind was more favourable to him than was cause,' and fearing that she wished for him only 'to be reserved in store to be employed in any kind of mischief,' had said that they

¹ Letters of Randolph to Cecil and Elizabeth, January and February, 1564: *MS. Rolls House*.

would rather never see him in Scotland again ; and Randolph took the opportunity of giving Cecil his opinion of the Earl of Bothwell.

‘One thing I thought not to omit, that I know him as mortal an enemy to our whole nation as any man alive ; despiteful above measure, false and untrue as a devil. If he could have had his will, neither the Queen’s Majesty had stood in as good terms with the Queen of Scots as she doth, nor minister left alive that should be a travailer between their Majesties for a continuance of the same. He is an enemy to my country, a blasphemous and irreverent speaker both of his own sovereign and the Queen’s Majesty my mistress ; and over that the godly of this whole nation hath cause to curse him for ever. Your honour will pardon me thus angrily to write ; it is much less than I do think or have cause to think.’¹

Having an animal of this temper in her hands Elizabeth had not been anxious to let him go. Bothwell was detained for three months at Berwick, and was then sent for to London. The English Government, exasperated at the unexpected support which the Scotch Protestants then were lending to Mary Stuart’s claims, trusted by keeping him in close confinement and examining him strictly to extract secrets out of him which could be used to reattach them to England—some proof that the Queen intended as soon as occasion served to turn round against them and against the Reformation.²

¹ Randolph to Cecil, January 22, 1563 : *MS. Rolls House*.

² ‘La de Inglaterra, deseosa de descubrir alguna cosa que pudiese

Bothwell was too loyal to his mistress to betray her; but the cage door was not opened. More than a year had passed since his arrest, and he was still detained, without right or shadow of right, a prisoner in the Tower. At length, however, Mary Stuart pleaded so loudly for him that Elizabeth could not refuse. In the midst of the marriage discussion the Queen of Scots asked as a favour what if she had pleased she could have demanded as a right. Bothwell was let go, and made his way into France.

This object secured, Mary Stuart addressed herself more seriously to the larger matter. The Emperor, supported by the Cardinal of Lorraine, was still pressing the Archduke Charles upon her, and to make the offer more welcome he proposed to settle on his son an allowance of two million francs a year. But the Archduke Charles was half a Protestant, and was unwelcome to the English Catholics. At the end of February she sent her secretary to Granvelle to explain the reasons which obliged her to refuse the Austrian alliance, and to learn conclusively whether she had anything to hope from Spain.¹ If the Prince of Spain failed, her friends in England wished that she should marry Lord Darnley. She now proposed to play with the position, to affect submission, to induce the Queen of England herself, if possible, to propose Darnley to her; and by accepting him with de-

causar division entre la de Escocia y Milord James y los demas Protestantes, le ha hecho venir aqui, donde sera examinado y bien guardado. Este es evangelio que aqui se usa.'—

De Quadra to Philip, April 24, 1563: *MS. Simancas*.

¹ Mary Stuart to Granvelle: LABANOFF, vol. i. p. 200.

ferential and seeming reluctance, to obtain the long-desired recognition. Once married to Darnley and admitted by Parliament as heir-presumptive, her course would then be easy. At the bottom of her heart she had determined that she would never cease to be Elizabeth's enemy; never for a moment had she parted with the conviction that the English crown was hers, and that Elizabeth was a usurper. But without support from abroad she was obliged to trust to her address; could she win her way to be 'second person,' and were she married with Elizabeth's consent to the favourite of the insurrectionary Catholics, she could show her colours with diminished danger; she could extort concession after concession, make good her ground inch by inch and yard by yard, and at last, when the favourable moment came, seize her rival by the throat and roll her from her throne into the dust. Elizabeth had offered her the choice of any English nobleman. Darnley's birth and person marked him out as the one on whom her choice, if anywhere, might naturally be expected to rest. It was with some expectation of hearing his name at least as one among others that she at last pressed Elizabeth to specify the person whom she had in view for her. It was with some real and much affected surprise that she found the name when it came at last—to be that of Lord Robert Dudley—and of Lord Robert Dudley alone.

April. Randolph conveyed Elizabeth's wishes to her, and with them a distinct promise that as Dudley's wife the Queen of England would have her named as successor.

She commanded herself so far as to listen cautiously. She objected to Dudley's inferiority of rank and said that a marriage with him would impair her honour.

It was honour enough, Randolph replied, to inherit such a kingdom as England.

'She looked not,' she said, 'for the kingdom, for her sister might marry and was likely to live longer than herself; she was obliged to consider her own and her friends' expectations, and she did not think they would agree that she should abuse her state so far.'

So far she answered in public; but Mary Stuart's art was to affect a peculiar confidence in the person whom she was addressing. She waited till she was alone, and then detaining Randolph when the courtiers were gone she said:

'Now, Mr Randolph, tell me, does your mistress in good earnest wish me to marry my Lord Robert?'

Randolph assured her that it was so.

'Is that,' she said, 'conform to her promise to use me as a sister or daughter to marry me to her subject?'

Randolph thought it was.

'If I were a sister or a daughter,' she said, 'were it not better to match me where some alliance or friendship might ensue than to marry me where neither could be increased?'

The alliance which his sovereign desired, Randolph answered, was the perpetual union of the two realms in a single monarchy.

'The Queen your mistress,' she said, 'being assured of me, might let me marry where it may like me; and I

always should remain friend to her ; she may marry herself and have children and what shall I have gained ? ’

Randolph said his mistress must have provided for that chance and would act honourably. But Mary Stuart replied justly that she could take no step of so great consequence without a certainty to rely upon ; she bade him tell Elizabeth that the proposal was sudden—she could give no answer without longer thought ; she had no objection to Lord Robert’s person, but the match was unequal ; commissioners on both sides might meet to consider it ; more she could not say. She left Randolph with an impression that she had spoken as she felt, and Maitland bade him not be discouraged. If Elizabeth would pay the price she might obtain what she wished. Yet some secret friend advised Randolph to be on his guard in the following remarkable words :—‘ Wheresoever she hovers and how many times soever she doubles to fetch the wind, I believe she will at length let fall her anchor between Dover and Berwick, though perchance not in that fort, haven, or road that you wish she should.’¹

Elizabeth, either satisfied from Randolph’s report that the Queen of Scots was on the way to compliance, or determined to leave her nothing to complain of, at once gave a marked evidence that on her part she would adhere to her engagement. Although the debate in Parliament had gone deeply into the succession question, yet it had been carried on with closed doors ; and

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 20 and April 13, 1564: *Scotch MSS Rolls House*.

the turn which it had taken was unknown except by rumour to the public. Lady Catherine Grey was still, though pining in captivity, the hope of the Protestants; and John Hales, Clerk of the Hanaper—report said with Cecil's help and connivance—collected the substance of the arguments in her favour; he procured opinions at the same time from Italian canonists in support of the validity of her marriage with Lord Hertford; and out of these materials he compiled a book in defence of her title which was secretly put into circulation. The strongest point in Lady Catherine's favour—the omission of the Scottish line in the will of Henry the Eighth—could only be touched on vaguely, the will itself being still concealed; but the case which Hales contrived to make out, representing as it did not only the wishes of the ultra-Protestants but the opinions at this time of Lord Arundel and the Howards, was strong enough to be dangerous. Elizabeth, who in addition to her political sympathies cherished a vindictive dislike of her cousin, sent Hales to the Fleet and inflicted on Cecil the duty of examining and exposing what she chose to regard as conspiracy.¹

The imprisonment of Hales was accepted as little less than a defiance of the Protestant party in England, and as equivalent to a public declaration in favour of the Queen of Scots. The long-talked-of meeting of

¹ 'In this matter I am by commandment occupied, whereof I could be content to be delivered; but I will go upright neither ad dextram | nec ad sinistram; and yet I am not free from suspicion.'—Cecil to Sir Thomas Smith, May, 1564 : WRIGHT'S *Elizabeth*, vol. i.

the Queens was again expected in the approaching summer, and the recognition of Mary Stuart was anticipated with more certainty than ever as the result of the interview.

The Queen of Scots however was growing impatient with hopes long deferred. She either disbelieved Elizabeth's honesty or misinterpreted her motives into fears. As Darnley was not offered to her she more than ever inclined towards getting possession of him ; and anticipating a storm she would not wait to let events work for her, and showed her intentions prematurely in preparing the way for his acceptance in Scotland.

The Earl of Lennox, it will be remembered, had lost his estates in the interests of England. For some years past he had pressed for their restoration, and his petition had been supported by Elizabeth. So long as Mary had hopes elsewhere she had replied with words and excuses. The lands of Lennox had been shared among the friends of the Hamiltons. The lands of Angus, which he claimed in right of his wife, were held in trust for his nephew by the Earl of Morton, whom the Queen of Scots durst not quarrel with. The law in Scotland was the law of possession, and the sword alone would have reinstated the exiled nobleman. The position of his family had hitherto been among the greatest objections to her thinking seriously of Lord Darnley as a husband. If Elizabeth offered him, she would have less to fear ; if to gratify the English Catholics she was to marry him against Elizabeth's will, she would have in the first

instance to depend on her subjects to maintain her, and among them the connection might prove an occasion of discord.

So long as the Hamiltons were strong the marriage would have been absolutely impossible. Chatelherault, however, was now in his dotage; the Earl of Arran was a lunatic; the family was enfeebled and scattered; and Mary Stuart was enabled to feel her way towards her object by allowing Lennox to return and sue for his rights. Could the House of Lennox recover its rank in Scotland the next step would be more easy.

Had she affected to consult Elizabeth—had she openly admitted her desire to substitute Darnley for Lord Robert—affecting no disguise and being ready to accept with him the conditions and securities which the English Parliament would have attached to the marriage—Elizabeth would probably have yielded, or in refusing would have given the Queen of Scots legitimate ground of complaint.

But open and straightforward conduct did not suit the complexion of Mary Stuart's genius: she breathed more freely, and she used her abilities with better effect, in the uncertain twilight of conspiracy.

Although both Murray and Maitland consented to the return of Lennox, the Protestants in Scotland instantly divined the purpose of it. 'Her meaning therein is not known,' wrote one of Randolph's correspondents to him on the 31st of April, 'but some suspect she shall at last be persuaded to favour his son; we are presently in quiet, but I fear it shall not be for

long, for things begin to grow to a ripeness, and there are great practisers who are like to set all aloft.'¹ 'The Lady Margaret and the young Earl are looked for soon after,' wrote Knox; 'the Lord Bothwell will follow with power to put in execution whatever is demanded, and Knox and his preaching will be pulled by the ears.'²

May. This last contingency would not have deeply distressed Elizabeth; but she knew Mary Stuart too well to trust her smooth speeches. The Queen of Scots had represented the return of Lennox as a concession to the wishes of her dear sister, the Queen of England. The expressions of friendliness were somewhat overdone, and served chiefly to place Elizabeth on her guard.

Randolph sent an earnest entreaty that Lennox should be detained in England; and when the Earl applied for a passport to Scotland, a variety of pretexts were invented for delay or refusal.

Mary Stuart wanted the self-control for successful diplomacy. She saw that she was suspected, and the suspicion was the more irritating because it was just. Her warmer temper for the moment broke loose. She sent for Randolph, bade him go to his mistress and tell her that there could be no interview in the summer: her council disapproved of it. She wrote violently to Elizabeth herself, and Maitland accompanied the letter with another to Cecil, in which he laid on England the

¹ — to Randolph, April 31: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Knox to Randolph, May 3: *Ibid.*

failure of all the attempts to reconcile the two Queens. Why Lennox should be prevented from returning when Elizabeth herself had supported his suit, he professed himself unable to understand. The conduct of the English Court was a mystery to him, and 'he much feared that God, by the ingratitude of both the nations being provoked to anger, would not suffer them to attain so great worldly felicity as the success of the negotiation' for the union.¹

On these terms stood Elizabeth and Mary Stuart in the beginning of June, when the new Spanish ambassador, Don Diego Guzman de Silva, arrived in London. De Silva, though a more honourable specimen of a Castilian gentleman, was far inferior to de Quadra in ability for intrigue; yet he was a man who could see clearly and describe intelligibly the scenes in the midst of which he lived; and his despatches are more pleasing and, under some aspects, more instructive than the darker communications of his predecessor.

In the following letters he tells the story of his reception at Elizabeth's Court, where, the curtain being once more lifted, Lord Robert Dudley is still seen at his old game, professing at home an increasing attachment to the Reformation, abroad maintaining an agent at the Vatican, and declaring himself to Philip the most devoted servant of Rome.

¹ Maitland to Cecil, June 6, June 23, and July 13: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

DE SILVA TO PHILIP II.

London, June 27.

‘I arrived in London the 18th of this month. The day following, the Queen sent an officer of the household to welcome me in her name. I had previously received a number of kind messages from the Lord Robert, and in returning him my thanks I had asked him to arrange my audience with her Majesty. She promised to see me on Thursday the 22nd. The Court was at Richmond: I went up the river in a barge and landed near the palace. Sir Henry Dudley and a relative of Sir Nicholas Throgmorton met me at the stairs, and brought me to the Council Room. There Lord Darnley, Lady Margaret Lennox’s son, came to me from the Queen, and escorted me into her presence.

‘As I entered, some one was playing on a harpsichord. Her Majesty rose, advanced three or four steps to meet me, and then giving me her hand, said in Italian she did not know in what language to address me. I replied in Latin, and after a few words I gave her your Majesty’s letter. She took it, and after first handing it to Cecil to open, she read it through.

‘She then spoke to me in Latin also—with easy elegance—expressing the pleasure which she felt at my arrival. Her Court, she said, was incomplete without the presence of a minister from your Majesty; and for herself she was uneasy without hearing from time to time of your Majesty’s welfare. Her ‘ill friends’ had told her that your Majesty would never send an am-

bassador to England again. She was delighted to find they were mistaken. Her obligations to your Majesty were deep and many, and she would show me in her treatment of myself that she had not forgotten them.

‘After a few questions about your Majesty she then took me aside and inquired about the Prince, how his health was, and what his character was. She talked at length about this; and then falling back into Italian, which she speaks remarkably well, she began again to talk of your Majesty. Your Majesty, she said, had known her when she was in trouble and sorrow. She was much altered since that time, and altered she would have me to understand much for the better.’

Some unimportant conversation followed and de Silva took his leave, Lord Darnley again waiting upon him to his barge.

A postscript was added in cipher:—

‘An intimate friend of Lord Robert Dudley has just been with me. I understand from him that Lord Robert was on bad terms with Cecil before the late book on the succession appeared, and that now the enmity between them is deeper than ever, because he takes Cecil to have been the author of it.¹ The Queen is furious, but there are so many accomplices in the business that she has been obliged to drop the prosecution. This gentleman, although he desires me to be careful how I mention Lord Robert’s name, yet entreats me at the same time to lose

¹ Lord Robert hoped that if the Queen of Scots was recognized as heir to the throne after Elizabeth and her children, the country would waive the objection to himself in the desire to see the Queen married.

no opportunity of urging the Queen to severe measures. If Cecil can once be dismissed from the council, the Catholic religion and your Majesty's interests in England will all be the better for it. Lord Robert, who is your Majesty's most faithful friend, believes that this book may be the knife with which to cut his throat. If the Queen can be prevailed upon to part with him much good will follow, and I am strongly advised to use Lord Robert's assistance.

'I have said that I shall always welcome Lord Robert's help, that your Majesty I was well aware would wish me to do so, and that in the present matter I will do what I can; but I mean to move cautiously and to see my way before I step.'

DE SILVA TO PHILIP II.

July 2.

'Lord Robert is more pressing than ever in offering his assistance to your Majesty. The gentleman of whom I spoke tells me that Lord Robert has still hopes of the Queen; and that if he succeeds, the Catholic religion will be restored. Again cautioning me to be secret, he informed me that Lord Robert was in communication with the Pope about it, and had agents residing continually at the Papal Court. He spoke of his intentions in the warmest terms, especially with reference to the restoration of the truth.

'The interests at stake are so weighty, there are so many pretensions liable to be affected, and such a multitude of considerations on all sides which may not be

overlooked, that I must entreat your Majesty to direct me what to do and say. I have not as yet exchanged a word upon the subject with any one except the person I speak of. I suspect the French have been trying to make use of Lord Robert. His father, people tell me, had large French connections.'

DE SILVA TO PHILIP II.

July 10.

'I have been at Court at Richmond again. The Queen was in the garden with the ladies when I arrived, and she bade the Grand Chamberlain bring me to her. She received me with the most pointed kindness. She had been so anxious to see me, she said, that she could not help giving me the trouble of coming.

'She took me aside and led me into a gallery, where she kept me for an hour, talking the whole time of your Majesty, and alluding often to her embarrassments when she first came to the throne. I need not weary your Majesty with repeating her words; but she spoke with unaffected sincerity, and seemed annoyed when we were interrupted by supper.

'The meal was attended with the usual ceremonies. Nothing could be more handsome than the entertainment. She made the band play the 'Battle of Pavia,' and declared it was the music that she liked best in the world.

'After supper she had more conversation with me; and as it was then late I thought it time to take my leave: but the Queen said I must not think of going; there was a play to be acted which I must see. She

must retire to her room for a few minutes, she said, but she would leave me in the hands of Lord Robert. The Lord Robert snatched the opportunity of her absence to speak of his obligations to your Majesty, and to assure me that he was your most devoted servant. She returned almost immediately, and we adjourned to the theatre. The piece which was performed was a comedy, of which I should have understood but little had not the Queen herself been my interpreter. The plot as usual turned on marriage. While it was going on the Queen recurred to the Prince of Spain, and asked about his stature. I replied that his Highness was full grown. She was silent a while, and then said—

‘Every one seems to disdain me. I understand you think of marrying him to the Queen of Scots?’

‘Do not believe it, your Majesty,’ I said. ‘His Highness has been so ill for years past with quartan ague and other disorders that his marriage with any one has been out of the question. Because he is better now, the world is full of idle stories about him. Subjects are never weary of talking of their princes.’

‘That is true,’ she answered. ‘It was reported a few days since in London that the King my brother intended to offer him to me.’

‘The play was followed by a masque. A number of people in black and white, which the Queen told me were her colours, came in and danced. One of them afterwards stepped forward and recited a sonnet in her praise; and so the spectacle ended. We adjourned to a saloon where a long table was laid out with preserved

fruits and sweetmeats. It was two in the morning before I started to return to London. The Queen, at the same time, stepped into her barge and went down the river to Westminster.'

It is possible that the communications from Lord Robert to the Spanish ambassador were part of a deliberate plot to lead Philip astray after a will-o'-the-wisp; to amuse him with hopes of recovering Elizabeth to the Church, while she was laughing in her sleeve at his credulity. If Lord Robert was too poor a creature to play such a part successfully, it is possible that he too was Elizabeth's dupe. Or again, it may have been that Elizabeth was insincere in her offer of Lord Robert to the Queen of Scots, while she was sincere in desiring the recognition of Mary Stuart's title—because she hoped that to escape the succession of a Scottish princess, one party or other would be found in England to tolerate her marriage with the only person whom she would accept. If the Queen was playing a false game, it is hard to say which hypothesis is the more probable; yet, on the one hand, it will be seen that Cecil, Randolph—every one who has left an opinion on record—believed that she was in earnest in desiring Mary Stuart to accept Lord Robert; while, on the other hand, the readiness with which the Spanish Court listened to Lord Robert's overtures proves that they at least believed that he had a real hold on Elizabeth's affections; and it is unlikely, with the clue to English State secrets which the Spanish ministers undoubtedly possessed, that they would have

been deceived a second time by a mere artifice. The least subtle explanations of human things are usually the most true. Elizabeth was most likely acting in good faith when she proposed to sacrifice Dudley to the Queen of Scots. Lord Robert as probably clung to his old hopes, and was sincere—so far as he could be sincere at all—in attempting to bribe Philip to support him in obtaining his object.

That this was Philip's own opinion appears certainly from his answer to de Silva.

PHILIP II. TO DE SILVA.

August 6.

‘Your reply to the advances made to you by Lord Robert’s friend was wise and cautious. So long as Cecil remains in power you must be careful what you do. If means should offer themselves to overthrow him, every consideration should move you not to neglect the opportunity ; but I leave you to your own discretion.

‘As to Lord Robert’s marriage with the Queen : if he will assure you that when he becomes her husband he will restore the true ancient and Catholic faith, and will bring back the realm under the obedience of the Pope and the Holy See, you may promise in our name that we will assist him to the uttermost of our power.

‘The propositions of the Irish Catholics you will cut short, courteously but firmly.¹ The time does not suit to encourage rebellion in that quarter. They have ap-

¹ Alluding to something in a letter of de Silva’s which is lost. The same letter contained expressions about Lord Robert’s agent in Rome, which would have shown more clearly what de Silva himself

plied to me before and I have answered always in the same tone.

‘I have read what you say of the book on the succession; of the Queen’s anger; and of the suspicions indicated to you by Lord Robert that Cecil was at the bottom of it. I avail myself of the occasion to tell you my opinion of that Cecil. I am in the highest degree dissatisfied with him. He is a confirmed heretic; and if with Lord Robert’s assistance you can so inflame the matter as to crush him down and deprive him of all further share in the administration, I shall be delighted to have it done. If you try it and fail, be careful that you are not yourself seen in the matter.’

Over such mines of secret enmity walked Cecil, standing between his mistress and her lover, and never knowing what a day would bring forth.

At the beginning of August the Court broke up from Richmond. Elizabeth went on pro-August.gress, and for a time had a respite from her troubles. Among other places she paid a visit to Cambridge, where she had an opportunity of showing herself in her most attractive colours.

The divisions of opinion, the discrepancies of dress and practices by which Cambridge, like all other parts of England, was distracted, were kept out of sight by Cecil’s industry. He hurried down before her, per-

thought about Lord Robert. Philip answers—‘En lo de aquel caballero
Ingles que se tuvo en Roma, y

platicas que os avisó mi Embajador que habia tenido con su Santidad, sospechamos lo mismo que vos.’

suaded the college authorities for once into obeying the Act of Uniformity ; ordered the fellows and chaplains to appear in surplices ; concealed the dreary communion tables in the college chapels behind decent coverings ; and having as it were thrown a whitewash of order over the confusion, surprised the Queen into an expression of pleasure. The Church of England was not, after all, the miserable chaos which she had believed ; and ‘contrary to her expectation, she found little or nothing to displease her.’

She was at once thrown into the happiest humour ; and she moved about among the dignitaries of the University with combined authority and ease. She exchanged courtesies with them in Latin ; when they lauded her virtues she exclaimed ‘*Non est veritas ;*’ when they praised the virgin state she blessed them for their discernment : she attended their sermons ; she was present at their disputations ; and when a speaker mumbled she shouted ‘*Loquimini altius.*’ The public orator addressed her in Greek—she replied in the language of Demosthenes. On the last day of her visit she addressed the University in Latin in the Senate House. In a few well-chosen sentences she complimented the students on their industry ; she expressed her admiration of the colleges and chapels—those splendid monuments of the piety of her predecessors. She trusted, if God spared her life, she might leave her own name not undistinguished by good work done for England.

Not one untoward accident had marred the harmony of the occasion. The Queen remained four days ; and

left the University with the first sense of pleasure which she had experienced in the ecclesiastical administration. Alas ! for the imperfection of human things. The rashness of a few boys marred all.

Elizabeth had been entreated to remain one more evening to witness a play which the students had got up among themselves for her amusement. Having a long journey before her the following day, and desiring to sleep ten miles out of Cambridge to relieve the distance, she had been unwillingly obliged to decline.

The students, too enamoured of their performance to lose the chance of exhibiting it, pursued the Queen to her resting-place. She was tired, but she would not discourage so much devotion, and the play commenced.

The actors entered on the stage in the dress of the imprisoned Catholic bishops. Each of them was distinguished by some symbol suggestive of the persecution. Bonner particularly carried a lamb in his arms at which he rolled his eyes and gnashed his teeth. A dog brought up the rear with the host in his mouth. Elizabeth could have better pardoned the worst insolence to herself: she rose, and with a few indignant words left the room; the lights were extinguished, and the discomfited players had to find their way out of the house in the dark, and to blunder back to Cambridge.¹

It was but a light matter, yet it served to irritate

¹ De Silva to the Duchess of Parma, August 19: *MS. Simancas*. De Silva was not present, but described the scene as he heard it from an eye-witness. The story naturally

enough is not mentioned by Nicolls, who details with great minuteness the sunny side of the visit to the University: *Progresses of Elizabeth*, 1564.

Elizabeth's sensitiveness. It exposed the dead men's bones which lay beneath the whited surface of University good order; and she went back to London with a heart as heavy as she carried away from it. The vast majority of serious Englishmen, if they did not believe in transubstantiation, yet felt for the sacrament a kind of mysterious awe. Systematic irreverence had intruded into the churches; carelessness and irreligion had formed an unnatural alliance with Puritanism; and in many places the altars were bare boards resting on tressels in the middle of the nave. The communicants knelt, stood, or sat as they pleased; the chalice was the first cup which came to hand; and the clergymen wore surplice, coat, black gown, or their ordinary dress, as they were Lutherans, Calvinists, Puritans, or nothing at all.¹

The parish churches themselves, those amazing monuments of early piety, built by men who themselves lived in clay hovels while they lavished their taste, their labour, and their wealth on 'the house of God,' were still dissolving into ruin. The roofs were breaking into holes; the stained whitewash was crumbling off the damp walls, revealing the half-effaced remains of the frescoed stories of the saints; the painted glass was gone from the windows; the wind and the rain swept through the dreary aisles; while in the churchyards swine rooted up the graves.

And now once more had come a reaction like that

¹ Varieties used in the administration of the service, 1564: *Lansdowne MSS.*

which had welcomed Mary Tudor. In quiet English homes there arose a passionate craving to be rid of all these things ; to breathe again the old air of reverence and piety ; and Calvinism and profanity were working hand in hand like twin spirits of evil, making a road for another Mary to reach the English throne.

The progress being over, Elizabeth returned to the weary problems which were thickening round her more and more hopelessly. From France came intelligence that ' a far other marriage was meant for the Queen of Scots than the Lord Robert ; with practices to reduce the realm to the old Pope, and to break the love between England and Scotland.' ¹ The Earl of Lennox had been allowed to cross the Border at last as a less evil than the detaining him by violence ; but Cecil wrote from Cambridge to Maitland, ' making no obscure demonstration of foul weather.' Parliament was expected to meet again in October, and with Parliament would come the succession question, the Queen's marriage question, and their thousand collateral vexations. Either in real uncertainty, or that she might have something with which to pacify her subjects, Elizabeth was again making advances towards the eternal Archduke. His old father Ferdinand, who had refused to be trifled with a second time, was dead. Ferdinand had left the world and its troubles on the 25th of July ; but before his death, in a conversation with the Duke of Wurtemberg, he had shown himself

¹ Sir T. Smith to Cecil (cipher), Sept. 1, 1564 : *French MSS. Rolls House*.

less implacable. An opportunity was offered for reopening the suit, and Cecil, by the Queen's order, sent a message through Mundt the English agent in Germany, to the new Emperor Maximilian, that although for his many excellent qualities the Queen would gladly have married Lord Robert Dudley, yet, finding it impossible, she had brought herself to regard Lord Robert as a brother, and for a husband was thinking of the Archduke.¹ On the 12th of September a resolution of council was taken to send an embassy to Vienna, ostensibly to congratulate Maximilian on his accession—in reality to feel the way towards 'the prince with the large head.'² A few days later, during an evening stroll through St James's Park, Elizabeth herself told the secret to de Silva, not as anything certain, but as a point towards which her thoughts were turning.³

The Queen of Scots meantime, to whom every uttered thought of Elizabeth was known, began to repent of her precipitate explosion of temper. She had obtained what she immediately desired in the return of

¹ Cecil to Mundt, September 8, 1564: *Jussu Regine. Burghley Papers*, HAINES, vol. i.

² 'Some one is to be sent with condolences on the death of the Emperor—Sir H. Sidney or Sir N. Throgmorton or I or Lord Robert; which it shall be I think nobody yet knoweth. But to tell you the truth, there is more meant than condolence or congratulation. It may be an intention for the marriage with the

Archduke. This may be very strange, and therefore I pray you keep it very close.'—Cecil to Sir T. Smith, September 12, 1564: WRIGHT, vol. i.

³ De Silva to the Duchess of Parma, Sept. 23: *MS. Simancas*. Elizabeth said that the Court fool advised her to have nothing to do with Germans, who were a poor heavy-headed set.

Lennox; her chief anxiety was now to prevent the Austrian marriage, and to induce Philip, though she could not marry his son, to continue to watch over her interests. In September the Spanish ambassador in Paris wrote that his steps were haunted by Beton, Mary's minister; he had met the advances made to him with coldness and indifference; but Beton had pressed upon him with unwearied assiduity;¹ desiring, as it appeared afterwards, to learn what Philip would do for his mistress in the event of her marriage with Darnley.

At the same time it was necessary to soothe Elizabeth, lest she might withdraw her protection, and allow Parliament to settle the succession unfavourably to the Scottish claims. Maitland therefore having forfeited Cecil's confidence, the Queen of Scots obtained the services of a man who, without the faintest pretensions to statesmanship, was as skilled an intriguer as Europe possessed. Sixteen years had passed since Sir James Melville had gone as a boy with Monluc, Bishop of Valence, to the Irish Castle, where Monluc by his light ways was brought to shame. From the Bishop, Melville had passed to the Constable Montmorency. From Montmorency he had gone to the Elector Palatine, and had worked himself into a backstairs intimacy with European courts and princes. Mary Stuart herself had probably known him in France; and in the spring of 1564 she wrote to request him to return to

¹ Don F. de Alava to Philip II., September 20, 1564: TEULET, vol. v
VOL. VII.

Scotland to be employed in secret service. So highly she valued his abilities, that notwithstanding her poverty she settled on him an annual pension of a thousand marks—twice the income perhaps of the richest nobleman in Scotland.¹ He was already acquainted with Elizabeth, who, according to his own account, had spoken confidentially with him about the Queen of Scots' marriage.

This Melville it was whom Mary Stuart now selected to be her instrument to pacify and cheat Elizabeth, to strengthen her party at the English Court, and to arrange with Lady Lennox for Darnley's escape to Scotland. She directed him to apologize to Elizabeth for the hasty letter which she had written, and to beg that it might be forgotten. He was to entreat her not to allow his mistress's interests to suffer any prejudice in Parliament; and further, he had secret instructions from Mary's own lips, the nature of which he indicates without explaining himself more completely—'to deal with the Spanish ambassador, Lady Margaret Douglas, and sundry friends she had in England of different opinions.'

Melville left Edinburgh towards the end of September,² preceded by Randolph, who, after communicating with Elizabeth, was on the point of returning to Scotland

¹ So Melville himself says in his *Memoirs*; but Melville's credibility is a very open question.

² The copy of his instructions printed in his *Memoirs* is dated September 28. But Melville was in

London on Michaelmas-day, when Lord Robert Dudley was created Earl of Leicester, and was present at the ceremony; 28 is perhaps a misprint for 20.

at the time of Melville's arrival. The information which Randolph had brought had been utterly unsatisfactory, and Elizabeth was harassed into illness and was in the last stage of despair. 'I am in such a labyrinth about the Queen of Scots,' she wrote on the 23rd of September to Cecil, 'that what to say to her or how to satisfy her I know not. I have left her letter to me all this time unanswered, nor can I tell what to answer now. Invent something kind for me which I can enter in Randolph's commission and give me your opinion about the matter itself.' ¹

In this humour Melville found Elizabeth. She was walking when he was introduced in the garden at Westminster. He was not a stranger, and the Queen rarely allowed herself to be long restrained by ceremony. She began immediately to speak of 'the Queen of Scots' spiteful letter' to her. 'She was minded,' she said, 'to answer it with another as spiteful' in turn. She took what she had written out of her pocket, read it aloud, and said that she had refrained from sending it only because it was too gentle.

Melville, accustomed to Courts and accustomed to Elizabeth, explained and protested and promised. With his excuses he mingled flattery, which she could swallow

¹ 'In ejusmodi labyrintho posita sum de responso meo reddendo ad Reginam Scotiæ, ut nesciam quomodo illi satisfaciam, quum neque toto isto tempore illi ullum responsum dederim, nec quid mihi dicendum nunc sciam. Invenias igitur

aliquid boni quod in mandatis scriptis Randall dare possim, et in hac causâ tuam opinionem mihi indica. Endorsed in Cecil's hand — 'The Queen's Majesty's writing, being sick, September 23.'—*Scotch MSS Rolls House.*

when mixed by a far less skilful hand ; in his first interview he so far talked her into good humour that ‘ she did not send her angry letter ; ’ and although he satisfied himself at the same time that she was dealing insincerely with his mistress, he perhaps in this allowed his suspicions to mislead him. Elizabeth was only too happy to believe in promises which it was her interest to find true. Personally she cared as little for the Queen of Scots as the Queen of Scots cared for her ; but Mary Stuart’s position and Mary Stuart’s claims created an intense political difficulty for which there appeared but one happy solution ; and Elizabeth, so far as can be seen from the surface of the story, clutched at any prospect of a reasonable settlement with an eager credulity. Melville might indeed naturally enough believe Elizabeth as insincere as he knew himself to be. At the very moment when he was delivering Mary’s smooth messages, apologies, and regrets he knew himself to be charged with a secret commission to the Catholic conspirators ; but Elizabeth’s duplicity does not follow from his own, and she may at least be credited with having been honest when she had no interest in being otherwise. She saw the Scotch ambassador daily, and the Queen of Scots’ marriage was the incessant subject of discussion. Melville said his mistress would refer it to a commission. Murray and Maitland might meet Bedford and Lord Robert at Berwick to talk it over.

‘ Ah ! ’ she said, ‘ you make little of Lord Robert, naming him after the Earl of Bedford. I mean to make

him a greater earl and you shall see it done. I take him as my brother and my best friend.'

She went on to say that she would have married Lord Robert herself had she been able. As she might not, she wished her sister to marry him; and 'that done,' 'she would have no suspicion or fear of any usurpation before her death, being assured that Dudley was so loving and trusty that he would never permit anything to be attempted during her time.'¹

'My Lord Robert's promotion in Scotland October. is earnestly intended,' Cecil wrote a few days later to Sir Thomas Smith.² On Michaelmas-day he was created Earl of Leicester at Westminster in Melville's presence—to qualify him for his higher destiny; while Elizabeth, vain of his beauty, showed off his fair proportions and dwelt on the charms which she was sacrificing.

Nor was she unaware of Melville's secret practices or of Mary's secret desires. 'You like better,' she said sadly to the ambassador, 'you like better yonder long lad'—pointing to Darnley, who, tall and slim with soft and beardless face, bore the sword of state at the ceremony.

To throw her off the scent Melville answered that 'no woman of spirit could choose such an one who more resembled a woman than a man.' 'I had no will,' he said of himself, 'that she should think that I had an eye that way, although I had a secret charge to deal

¹ MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*. ² Cecil to Smith, October 4: WRIGHT, vol. i.

with Lady Lennox to procure liberty for him to go to Scotland.'

Elizabeth was not deceived, but she chose to blind herself. Clinging to her favourite scheme, she allowed a legal opinion to be drawn out in favour of the Scottish title. She promised Melville that when Parliament met she would again protect his mistress's interests. The poor Archduke was to be once more cast overboard; she undertook to bind herself never to marry unless 'necessitated by her sister's hard behaviour;' and last of all—as the strongest evidence which she could give that she was acting in good faith—she risked the discontent which would inevitably be provoked, and postponed the Parliament till the spring or the following autumn. Randolph, who had been detained on Melville's arrival, was sent off to tell Mary that 'the tragedy created by her letter had turned into comedy;' the Queen of England would consent with pleasure to the proposed meeting of commissioners; and meanwhile—'contrary to the expectation and desire of her people, contrary to the disposition of no small number of her council and also to some detriment of herself for her own private lucre, by the intention of her people to have gratified her with some subsidy—her Majesty had by proclamation prolonged her Parliament that should have been even now begun in October: meaning of purpose to have no assembly wherein the interests of her sister might be brought in question until it were better considered that no harm might thereof ensue to her, and that her Majesty and the Queen of Scots might have further

proceedings in the establishment of their amity.'¹

In the delay of the Parliament the Queen of Scots had gained one step of vital moment; she had next to obtain the consent of her own people to her marriage with Darnley; she had to strengthen the Lennox faction that it might be strong enough to support her against the Hamiltons, and when this was done to get the person of Darnley into her hands.

Lennox himself was distributing presents with lavish generosity in the Court at Holyrood. Melville when he returned to Scotland carried back with him Lady Margaret's choicest jewels to be bestowed to the best advantage. For the full completion of the scheme it was necessary to delude Elizabeth into the belief that Mary Stuart would give way about Leicester; and having satisfied her that she really had nothing to fear from Darnley's visit to Edinburgh, to obtain leave of absence for him for three months to assist Lennox in the recovery of his property. When the father and son were once on Scottish soil she could then throw off the mask.

The ambassador had employed his time well in England making friends for his mistress, and had carried back with him from London profuse promises of service; some from honourable men who looked to Mary Stuart's succession as a security for the peace of the country, some from the courtier race who desired to save their own fortunes should the revolution come.

¹ Message sent by Randolph to the Queen of Scots, October 4: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

Among these last was Leicester—that very Leicester in whose affection Elizabeth was blindly confiding, who was to be her own protection when she had named Mary Stuart her heir. The man who thought it no preposterous ambition to aspire to the hand of Elizabeth, excused himself to Melville with abject apologies as having been forced to appear as the suitor of a princess whose shoes he was unworthy to loose; he implored the Queen of Scots to pardon him for ‘the proud pretences which were set forward for his undoing by Cecil and his secret enemies.’¹

On the position and views of Lord Robert—on the state of feeling at the Court—on the Scotch and other questions—additional light is thrown by a letter of de Silva written on the 9th of October.

DE SILVA TO PHILIP.²

London, October 9.

‘The gentleman sent hither from the Court of Scotland has returned, and this Queen has written by him to say that for various reasons there will be no Parliament this year. The succession question therefore will be allowed to rest. She says she is not so old that her death need be so perpetually dragged before her.

‘Cecil has intimated to the heretical bishops that they must look to their clergy; the Queen is determined to bring them to order and will no longer tolerate their extravagances.

¹ MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*.

² *MS. Simancas*.

‘He desires them too to be careful how they proceed against the Catholics; the Queen will not have her good subjects goaded into sedition by calumnies on their creed or by irritating inquiries into their conduct. I am told that the bishops do not like these cautions. Cecil understands his mistress and says nothing to her but what she likes to hear. He thus keeps her in good humour and maintains his position. Lord Robert is obliged to be on terms with him although at heart he hates him as much as ever. Cecil has more genius than the rest of the council put together and is therefore envied and hated on all sides.

‘The Queen, happening to speak to me about the beginning of her reign, mentioned that circumstances had at first obliged her to dissemble her real feelings in religion; but God knew, she said, that her heart was sound in his service; with more to the same purpose: she wanted to persuade me that she was orthodox, but she was less explicit than I could have wished.

‘I told her (she knew it already) that the preachers railed at her in the most insolent language for keeping the cross on the altar of her chapel. She answered that she meant to have crosses generally restored throughout the realm.

‘Again and again she has said to me, ‘I am insulted both in England and abroad for having shown more favour than I ought to have shown to the Lord Robert. I am spoken of as if I were an immodest woman. I ought not to wonder at it: I have favoured him because of his excellent disposition and for his many merits;

but I am young and he is young and therefore we have been slandered. God knows they do us grievous wrong, and the time will come when the world will know it also. I do not live in a corner—a thousand eyes see all that I do and calumny will not fasten on me for ever.’

‘She went on to speak of the Queen of Scots, whose beauty she warmly praised.

‘Some tell me,’ she said, ‘that my sister will marry your Prince after all.’

‘I laughed and said that the last story which I had heard was that the Queen of Scots was to marry the King of France.

‘She said that could not be, ‘The Queen-mother and the Queen of Scots were not good friends.’

‘The Lord Robert, whom they now call Earl of Leicester, has been with me again repeating his protestations of a desire to be of use to your Majesty. He mentioned particularly the troubles in the Low Countries and the necessity of taking steps to pacify them.

‘I assured him of the confidence which your Majesty felt in his integrity and of the desire which you entertained for his advancement. I repeated the words which the Queen had used to me about religion ; and I said that now when she was so well disposed there was an opportunity for him which he should not allow to escape. If the Queen could make up her mind to marry him and to reunite England to the Catholic Church your Majesty would stand by him, and he should soon experience the effects of your Majesty’s good-will towards him ; the Queen’s safety should be perfectly

secured and he should be himself maintained in the reputation and authority which he deserved.

‘He answered that the Queen had put it off so long that he had begun to fear she would never marry him at all. He professed himself very grateful for my offer, but of religion he said nothing. In fact he is too ill-informed in such matters to take a resolute part on either side unless when he has some other object to gain.

‘I told him that the dependence of the Catholics was wholly on the Queen and himself. To him they attributed the preservation of the bishops and of the other prisoners; and I said that by saving their lives he had gained the good-will of all Christian princes abroad and of all the Catholics at home, who as he well knew were far more numerous than those of the new religion. The heretics notoriously hated both him and his mistress, and had not the Catholics been so strong would long ago have given them trouble; the Queen could see what was before her in the book on the succession, which after all it appeared she was afraid to punish.

‘His manner was friendly, but I know not what he will do. Had the Catholics as much courage as the heretics, he would declare for them quickly enough, for he admits that they are far the larger number; things are in such a state that the father does not trust his child.’

To return to the Queen of Scots’ marriage. Notwithstanding Lennox’s efforts and Lady Margaret’s jewels the Scottish noblemen were difficult to manage

Mary Stuart was still unable to act without her brother and Maitland; and the Earl of Murray was a better Protestant than Knox believed him to be, and Maitland's broad statesmanship had little in common with the scheming conspiracies which were hatched in the chambers of priests. Maitland's single object was the union of the realms, where Scotland, in compensation for the surrender of its separate independence, would have the pride of giving a sovereign to its ancient enemy. While therefore he was zealous for the honour of his mistress, he had no interest in those collateral objects of religious revolution and personal revenge of which Mary was in such keen pursuit. With the Darnley connection, as it appeared afterwards, he had no sympathy, unless Darnley was freely offered by Elizabeth and the choice was freely sanctioned by the two Parliaments.

So far therefore Maitland was ill suited for the Queen of Scots' purposes; on the other hand, he was by far the ablest minister that she possessed. He was fanatically eager—so far as a man of so cool and clear an intellect could be fanatical about anything—to secure the English succession for her; and aware of his value, she named him with her brother to meet the English commissioners and consider in form Elizabeth's proposals. The conference was to be kept secret from the world. The Queen of Scots would go to Dunbar in the middle of November. The two ministers would leave her as if for a few days' hawking on the Tweed, and the Governor of Berwick would invite them to visit him.

Lord Bedford and Randolph were to represent England; and Elizabeth's instructions to them are a fresh evidence of the feelings with which she regarded Leicester. When Leicester's name was first officially mentioned, Maitland had urged on Cecil the propriety of leaving Mary's choice of a husband as little restricted as possible. If Elizabeth objected to a foreign prince she must at least permit a free selection among the Scotch and English nobility. Besides Darnley there was Norfolk, there was Arundel—each more eligible than the son of the parvenu Northumberland; and Elizabeth had no right to demand more than a marriage which did not threaten herself or the liberty of England.

But Elizabeth's heart was fixed on Leicester, and she could see no merit anywhere but in him. 'Among all English noblemen,' she said, in giving her directions to the commissioners, 'she could see none for her own contentation meet for the purpose than one who for his good gifts she esteemed fit to be placed in the number of kings and princes; for so she thought him worthy: and if he were not born her subject, but had happened with these qualities to be as nobly born under some other prince as he was under herself, the world should have well perceived her estimation of him. The advantage of the marriage to the Earl of Leicester would not be great, but to the Queen of Scots it would be greater than she could have with any other person. The Earl would bring with him no controversy of title to trouble the quietness of the Queen of Scots, and she preferred him to be the partaker of the Queen of Scots'

fortunes, whom, if it might lie in her power, she would make owner and heir of her own kingdom. She had already placed a check on all other pretenders to the succession; and whatever sovereign might do in the direction of the matter for her sister's advantage should not be wanting. If after her recognition the Queen of Scots should desire to reside in England she would herself bear the charge of the family both of her and of the Earl of Leicester as should be meet for one sister to do for another.'

But Elizabeth admitted that before the recognition could be carried through Parliament the Queen of Scots must first accept the indispensable condition. She should receive the prize which hung before her eyes only when she was Leicester's wife, and till that time she must be contented with a promise that she should not be disappointed. 'If she require to be assured first,' Elizabeth continued with an appearance of mournful sincerity, if she will not marry till an Act of Succession in her favour has been actually passed, 'you may of yourselves say it may work in us some scruple to imagine that in all this friendship nothing is more minded than how to possess that which we have; and that it is but a sorrowful song to pretend more shortness of our life than is cause, or as though if God would change our determination in not desiring to marry, we should not by likelihood have children. We can mean no better than we do to our sister; we doubt not that she shall quietly enjoy all that is due to her, and the more readier we are so to do, because we are so naturally

disposed with great affection towards her, as before God we wish her right to be next to us before all other.’¹

Mary Stuart herself meanwhile was in close communication with Lady Lennox, and was receiving from her more and more assurances of the devotion of the English Catholics. Randolph, on his return to Edinburgh from London, found Maitland open-mouthed at the suspension of the prosecution of Hales for his book on the succession. The Scotch Court had expected that he would have been ‘put to death as a traitor.’

Randolph protested against the word ‘traitor’ inasmuch as it implied ‘the certainty of the Queen of Scots’ claim,’ ‘which many in England did not believe to be certain at all.’ ‘Hales has not deserved death,’ he said, ‘and imprisonment was the worst which could be inflicted.’

Maitland spoke menacingly of the disaffection among the Catholics. Randolph ‘bade him not make too much account of conspirators;’ ‘the behaviour of the Scotch Court,’ he said, ‘was so strange that he could only suppose they meant to quarrel with England;’ ‘and with these words they grew both into further choler than wisdom led them.’²

Mary’s own language was still smooth, affectionate, and confiding; but Maitland and even Murray protested beforehand that when the commission met they would agree to no conditions and accept no marriage

¹ Elizabeth to Bedford and Randolph, October 7, 1564: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Randolph to Cecil, October 24: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

for their mistress unless her title was first fully admitted and confirmed. Darnley's name was not mentioned; but 'it was through the mouths of all men that it was a thing concluded in the Queen's heart;' and Randolph was under the mistaken impression that Maitland was as much in favour of it as his mistress.¹

November. 'Their object,' Randolph, on the 7th of November, wrote to Elizabeth, 'is to have the Lord Darnley rather offered by your Majesty than desired of themselves;' 'but your Majesty I am assured will consider the unfitness of the match for greater causes than I can think of any—of which not the least will be the loss of many a godly man's heart that by your Majesty enjoyeth now the liberty of their country, and know but in how short a time they shall lose the same if your Majesty give your consent to match her with such an one as either by dissention at home or lack of knowledge of God and his word may persecute them that profess the same.'²

The Scotch Protestants comprehended instinctively the thousand dangers to which they would be exposed. The House of Lennox was the hereditary enemy of the Hamiltons, who had headed the Revolution of 1559. Darnley was known to be a Catholic; and his marriage with Mary Stuart was well understood to mean a Catholic revolution.

'The terrible fear is so entered into their hearts,' continued Randolph, 'that the Queen tendeth only to

¹ Randolph to Cecil, October 31: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

that, that some are well willing to leave their country, others with their force to withstand it, the rest with patience to endure it and let God work His will.'

Maitland seems to have believed that Mary Stuart would be moderate and reasonable even if she was recognized unconditionally and was left to choose her own husband; he professed to imagine that some 'liberty of religion' could be established in the modern and at that time impossible sense in which wolf and dog, Catholic and Protestant, could live in peace together, neither worried nor worrying each other. But few of the serious Reformers shared his hope; and a gap was already opening wide between him and the Earl of Murray. Maitland was inclined to press England 'to the uttermost;' Randolph, in a private conversation with Murray, 'found in that nobleman a marvellous good will' to be guided by Elizabeth, although he was disturbed by the conflict of duties. The Earl, as the meeting of the commissioners approached, in his perplexity sent Elizabeth a message, 'that whatever he might say, or however vehement he might seem to be in his mistress's cause, he hoped her Majesty would not take it as if he was in any way wanting in devotion to her.' Both Murray and Randolph were nervously conscious of their incapacity to cope with Maitland in a diplomatic encounter.

'To meet with such a match,' Randolph wrote to Elizabeth, 'your Majesty knoweth what wits had been fit. How far he exceedeth the compass of one or two heads that is able to govern a Queen and guide a whole

realm alone, your Majesty may well think. How unfit I am, and how able is he to go beyond me, I would it were not as I know it to be.’¹

Little time was lost in preparation. On the 18th of November the four commissioners met at Berwick: Bedford, a plain, determined man, with the prejudices of a Protestant and the resolution of an English statesman; Randolph, true as Bedford to Elizabeth, but entangled deeply in the intricacies of diplomacy, and moving with more hesitation; Murray, perplexed as we have seen; and Maitland, at home in the clement in which he played with the practised pleasure of a master.

The preliminaries were soon disposed of. Both sides agreed on the desirableness of the union of the realms; and the English ministers admitted the propriety of the recognition of the Queen of Scots, if adequate securities could be provided for Elizabeth’s safety and for the liberties of the realm.

The main subject was then approached. Lord Bedford said that his mistress would undertake to favour Mary Stuart’s title if Mary Stuart would marry where the English council wished; and he proposed the Earl of Leicester as a suitable husband for her.

‘The Earl of Leicester,’ Maitland replied, ‘was no

¹ Randolph to Elizabeth, November 7: *Cotton. MSS.*, CALIG. B. 10. On the same day Randolph wrote to Leicester: ‘I would you were to be at Berwick to say somewhat for yourself, for there I assure you somewhat will be said of you that for

your lordship may tend to little good. How happy is your life that between these two Queens are tossed to and fro. Your lordship’s luck is evil if you light not in some of their laps that love so well to play.’—*Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

fit marriage for his mistress taken alone; and he desired to be informed more particularly what the Queen of England was prepared to do in addition. Indefinite promises implied merely that she did not wish the Queen of Scots to make a powerful alliance; his mistress could not consent to make an inferior marriage while the Queen of England was left unfettered; the Queen of England might herself marry and have children.'

'It is not the intention of the Queen of England,' said Randolph, 'to offer the Lord Robert only as Earl of Leicester without further advancement. She desires to deal openly, fairly, and kindly, but neither will her Majesty say what she will do more, nor ought she to say, till she knows in some degree how her offer will be embraced.' 'As you,' he said particularly to Maitland, 'have spoken an earnest word, so I desire without offence to have another, which is that if you think by finesse, policy, or practice, or any other means, to wring anything out of her Majesty's hands, you are but abused and do much deceive yourselves.'

As much as this had probably been foreseen on all sides. Maitland wished to extort an independent admission of Mary's claims from which Elizabeth would not afterwards be able to recede; the English would admit nothing until Mary had consented generally to conditions which would deprive her of the power of being dangerous. But it seems that they were empowered, if Leicester was unacceptable, to give the Queen of Scots the larger choice which Maitland demanded. Cecil had

foreseen that Leicester would be rejected. 'I think,' he said, writing on the 26th of November to Sir Thomas Smith, 'that no marriage is more likely to succeed than —, *if it may come from them.*'

The name omitted was doubtless Darnley's. De Silva, in describing the conference to Philip, said that the English commissioners had given the Scots the alternative of Leicester, Norfolk, or Darnley.¹ Of Norfolk at that time there had been little mention or none. Darnley perhaps Elizabeth would have consented to allow if the Queen of Scots would ask for him; for in giving way to Mary Stuart's wishes she could have accompanied her consent with restrictions which would render the marriage innocuous; while the Queen of Scots on the other side would have accepted Darnley had Elizabeth offered him — for Elizabeth would have been unable to shackle her own proposal with troublesome stipulations.

No matter what promises Elizabeth might make, no matter to what engagements she might bind herself, the Queen of Scots had long resolved to agree to nothing which would alienate the Catholics. As Maitland had told the Bishop of Aquila, she could have no confidence that any engagement would be observed unless she was supported by a force independent of Elizabeth; and if she married Darnley it was necessary for her to keep unimpaired her connection with the party of insurrection, and with the foreign Catholic powers.

Thus neither side would be the first to mention Darn-

¹ De Silva to Philip, December 18: *MS. Simancas.*

ley. The arguments played round the mark but never reached it ; and at last, when there was no longer a hope of a satisfactory end, the commissioners found it was useless to waste time longer. They parted without a quarrel, yet without a conclusion, Maitland summing up his own demands in the following words :—

‘ That the Queen of England would permit his mistress to marry where she would, saving in those royal houses where she desired her to forbear ; that her Majesty would give her some yearly revenue out of the realm of England, and by Parliament establish unto her the crown, if God did his will on her Majesty, and left her without children ; in so doing her Majesty might have the honour to have made the marriage, and be known to the world to have used the Queen of Scots as a dear and loving sister.’¹

Immediately after the breaking up of the conference Mary Stuart wrote to request that Lord Darnley might be allowed to join his father in Scotland, and assist him in the recovery of the Lennox estates. Had Elizabeth anticipated what would follow she would probably, instead of complying, have provided Darnley with a lodging in the Tower. But the reports from Scotland were contradictory ; Lennox said openly that ‘ his son should marry the Queen ; ’ yet Randolph ‘ knew of many, by that which had been spoken of her own mouth, that the marriage should never take effect if otherwise she might have her desire.’ Lennox had succeeded imperfectly in

making a party amongst the lords; and Darnley's elevation to the Crown of Scotland would wake a thousand sleeping feuds. The requested permission was suspended without being refused; while Elizabeth began again as usual to play with thoughts of the Archduke. Cecil sent to Germany to urge Maximilian to propose in form for her hand;¹ while stranger still, Catherine de Medici meditated an alliance between Elizabeth and her son Charles the Ninth. Elizabeth was twenty-nine and Charles not more than fourteen; but political convenience had overruled more considerable inequalities; and though Elizabeth affected to laugh at the suggestion as absurd, de Silva reminded her that the difference of age was scarcely greater than that between Philip and her sister; while the Queen-mother of France made the proposal, as will presently be seen, in perfect seriousness.²

December. On their return to Edinburgh from Berwick, Maitland and Murray wrote a joint letter to Cecil, in which they recapitulated their arguments at the conference and put forward again the demand on behalf of their mistress with which Maitland had concluded. They dwelt on the marriages abroad which were offered to her acceptance—far exceeding in general desirableness that which was proposed by Elizabeth. They expressed themselves however deferentially, and professed a desire which both of them really felt for a happy termination of the difficulty.

Cecil's answer was straightforward, consistent, and

¹ Roger Strange to Gaspar Pregnyar, February 1, 1565: HAYNES, vol. i.

² De Silva to Philip, October 9: *MS. Simancas*.

honourable. He was glad to perceive from their letter, he said, that they were beginning to comprehend the Queen of England's real feelings. If they persisted in the tone which they had first assumed they would alienate England altogether. They talked of proposals to marry their mistress in this place and that; there were proposals for his own mistress as well, and they would do better in confining themselves to the subject which was immediately before them. They professed to desire to know the Queen of England's real wishes. They knew them already perfectly well. His mistress had never varied either in her words or in her intentions. She wished well to the Queen of Scots. She had no objection to the Queen of Scots' recognition as second person if England could be satisfied that its liberties would not be in danger.

'And now,' Cecil said, 'in return for this you propose that the Queen's Majesty should permit your Sovereign to marry where she would, saving in some places prohibited, and in that consideration to give her some yearly revenue out of the realm of England, and by Parliament establish the succession of the realm to her; and then you add that it might be the Queen's Majesty's desire would take effect. Surely, my Lord of Ledington, I see by this—for it was your speech—you can well tell how to make your bargain. Her Majesty will give the Earl of Leicester the highest degree that any nobleman may receive of her hand; but you look for more—you would have with him the establishment of your Sovereign's title to be declared in the second place to the Queen's

Majesty. The Queen's Majesty will never agree to so much of this request, neither in form nor substance, as with the noble gentleman already named. If you will take him she will cause inquisition to be made of your Sovereign's rights; and as far as shall stand with justice and her own surety, she will abase such titles as shall be proved unjust and prejudicial to her sister's interest. You know very well that all the Queen's Majesty mindeth to do must be directed by the laws and by the consent of the three Estates; she can promise no more but what she can with their assent do. The Queen of England, if trusted as a friend, may and will do what she will never contract or bargain to do or submit to be pressed to do. It is a tickle matter to provoke sovereigns to determine their succession.

‘Wherefore, good my Lords,’ Cecil concluded, ‘think hereof, and let not this your negotiation, which is full of terms of friendship, be converted into a bargain or purchase; so as while in the outward face it appears a design to conciliate these two Queens and countries by a perpetual amity, in the unwrapping thereof there be not found any other intention but to compass at my Sovereign's hands a kingdom and a crown, which if sought for may be sooner lost than gotten, and not being craved may be as soon offered as reason can require. Almighty God assist you with His spirit in your deliberation upon this matter to make choice of that which shall increase His glory and fortify the truth of the gospel in this isle.’¹

¹ Cecil to Maitland and Murray, December 16: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

Before this letter reached Scotland Maitland had become disposed to receive it in the spirit in which it was written. He had expressed his regret to Randolph for having ‘meddled’ with English Catholic conspirators; he was drawing off from the dangerous policy to which he appeared to have committed himself; and Randolph, who a month before had been more afraid of him than of any man in Scotland, wrote on the 16th of December, the date of Cecil’s despatch, that ‘he never thought better of him than at that moment.’¹

So anxious Maitland seemed to be to recover the confidence of the English Government, that ^{1565. January.} except for the opposition which he continued to offer—when opposition had become dangerous—to the Darnley marriage, it might have been thought that he was in league with Mary to throw Elizabeth off her guard. His motives must in part remain obscure. He had perhaps become acquainted with Darnley in England, and had foreseen the consequences if a youth of such a temperament came in too close contact with his mistress. Perhaps too he had never meant to do more than play with poisoned tools; and withdrew when he saw that Elizabeth would not be frightened with them. But an obvious reason for Maitland’s change of posture was to be found in the new advice and the new advisers that were finding favour with the Queen of Scots. Two years before, M. de Moret, the ambassador from Savoy, had brought in his suite to Mary Stuart’s Court an Italian named David Rizzio. The youth—he was about thirty—became a

¹ Randolph to Cecil, December 16: *MS.* Ibid.

favourite of Mary. Like Châtelar, he was an accomplished musician ; he soothed her hours of solitude with love songs, and he had the graceful tastes with which she delighted to amuse her leisure. He had glided gradually into her more serious confidence, as she discovered that he had the genius of his countrymen for intrigue, and that his hatred for the Reformers rivalled her own in its intensity.

The adroit diplomacy of statesmen found less favour in Mary's cabinet than the envenomed weapons of deliberate fraud. She shook off the control of the one supremely able minister that she possessed, and she went on with renewed spirit, disembarassed of a companion who was too honourable for her present schemes. To the change of counsellors may be attributed her sudden advance in the arts of intrigue. On a sudden, none knew why she professed a readiness to yield to Elizabeth's wishes. 'Her mind to the Lord Robert,' she said to Randolph at the end of January, 'was as it ought to be to so noble a gentleman ;' 'such a one as his mistress would marry were he not her subject ought to content her ;' 'what she would do should depend on the Queen of England, who should wholly guide her and rule her.'¹ She deceived Maitland as she deceived Randolph, and Maitland wrote warmly to Cecil, full of hopes 'that the great work at which they had so long laboured together, the union of the two countries, would be accomplished at last to their perpetual hon-

¹ Randolph to Cecil, February 5 : *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

our.’¹ It appears as if she had persuaded him that she had looked the Darnley marriage in the face and had turned away from it as too full of danger; and even Cecil was so far convinced that he entered in his diary at the date of these letters—‘Mr Randolph writeth at length of the Queen of Scots’ allowance of my Lord of Leicester, and giveth great appearance of success in the marriage.’²

On the 6th of February Randolph wrote again to Leicester as if there was no longer February. any doubt that he would be accepted. ‘This Queen,’ he said, ‘is now content to give good ear to her Majesty’s suit in your behalf; she judges you worthy to be husband to any Queen.’³ And though Randolph himself still vaguely anticipated evil, and though other persons who understood the state of things in Scotland shared his misgivings,⁴ Elizabeth permitted herself to be persuaded

¹ Maitland to Cecil, January 16 and February 1: *MS. Rolls House*.

² Cecil’s Diary, February 5.

³ Randolph to Leicester, February 6: WRIGHT, vol. i.

⁴ Among the *Conway MSS.* there is a remarkable paper, unsigned and unaddressed, on the Lennox question in Scotland, and on the views supposed to be entertained by Lady Lennox and her husband. It shows how remarkably the religious parties were intersected by family feuds; and how disintegrating and dangerous to the Catholic party in Scotland the marriage of Mary Stuart and Darnley must have been.

NOTE OF AFFAIRS IN SCOTLAND.

February 3, 1564-5.

‘Enemies to the Earl of Lennox—All the Protestants of that realm in general, and in special the Duke of Chatelherault, with all the Hamiltons in Clydesdale, Linlithgow, and Edinburgh; the Bishop of St Andrew’s; the Abbot of Kilwinning; the Bishop of Glasgow; all the Betons; the allies of the late Cardinal of St Andrew’s; the Laird of Borthwick, and all the Scots. The Earl of Argyle, sister’s son to the Duke; all the Campbells; the Earl of Glencairn, whose eldest son is sister’s son to the Duke; and all the Cun-

that Mary Stuart was at last sincere. Cecil and Leicester shared her confidence or were prepared to risk the ex-

ninghams. The Earl of Eglinton was never good Lennox. The Earl of Cassilis, young, and of small conduct. The remnants of Huntley's house will favour the Duke, and so will James Mc'Connell, and others of the Isles. The Lord James and Ledington in their hearts have misliked Lennox; unless now, in hope to continue their rule in that realm, they may be changed. The Earl of Morton, being chancellor; the young Earl of Angus, Drumlanrig, and all the Douglasses, with the Justice Clerk; M'Gill and their alliance, if my Lady Lennox do not relinquish her title to the Earldom of Angus, which I suppose, in respect of the greater advancement, she hath already promised. The Lords Maxwell and Erskine, allied to Argyle. Livingstone is friend to the Duke, and Fleming likewise. Borthwick will hang with the Douglasses. The Earl of Montrose and the Leslies, being Protestants.

'Of these [some] may be won, partly in hope that Darnley will embrace religion, which I doubt will never be, partly by preferment of spiritual lands, partly by money, and partly but in fear by the authority and in respect of other insolent pretences.

'Friends hoped upon it—

'The Humes and the Kers, albeit they will choose the best side.

'The Earl of Bothwell, of no force now.

'The Earl Athol; the Earl Errol; the Lords Ruthven and Seton; the gentlemen of Lennox, and some of the Barony of Renfrew. The Laird of Tullybardine, a young head.

'The Queen, being his chief countenance, thinketh from the Duke's overthrow, if she can bring it to pass, to advance Lennox as her heir-apparent, failing of her issue. If Darnley can hit the mark, then careth my Lady (Lady Lennox) neither for the Earldom of Lennox, Angus, nor lands in England, having enough that way; and if the Queen can bring it about, division shall follow. The overthrow of religion is pretended; the French to be reconciled; their aid again to be craved; and if they can, they intend to pretend title here in England, where they make account upon friends. Whenas they have Lennox, Darnley, and the mother within their border, whatsoever flourishing words be used for the shift, either here or in Scotland, by Lady Lennox, her son, or husband, their hearts portend enmity to our Sovereign and division to her realm. They are only bent to please and revenge the Queen of Scots' quarrel, and to follow her ways, who remembereth, as I am informed, her mother, her uncle Guise, and her own pretences. This realm hath a faction to serve their turn. Betwixt Chatelherault and Lennox, take heed that ye suffer not that Chatelherault be overthrown, and in

periment; and Darnley was allowed leave of absence for three months in the belief that it might be safely conceded.

Darnley therefore went his way. Elizabeth herself meanwhile, half desponding, half hopeful of the result, and perhaps to hold a salutary fear over the Queen of Scots, listened to the proposals of Catherine de Medici for her own marriage with the boy King of France.

On the 24th of January the Queen-mother addressed a letter to Paul de Foix, setting forth that, considering the rare excellence of the Queen of England, the position of England and France, separated as they were only by a three hours' passage, and the deep interests of both countries in their mutual prosperity, she would feel herself the happiest mother in the world if either of her sons could convert so charming a sister into a daughter equally dear.¹

Before Mary Stuart had given signs of an alteration of feeling, and immediately that she was made aware of the ill success of the conference at Berwick, Elizabeth had been again haunted by the nightmare of marriage. Again Cecil had communicated with Maximilian, and in

the end advance him who shall be enemy to this realm. It may fall out the Queen's Majesty's purpose may be followed by them of Scotland, in which case it should be well; but I, in my simple opinion, am in despair thereof, for they look for her where the Lord preserve her, and therefore betimes seek ways to stop

the tide, and fill their hands full at home, which may well be done.'—*Conway MSS. Rolls House.*

¹ 'Me sentirois la plus heureuse mère du monde si un de mes enfans d'une bien aymée sœur m'en avoit fait une très chère fille.'—Catherine de Medici to Paul de Foix. *Vie de Marie Stuart: MIGNET; Appendix.*

writing to Sir Thomas Smith on the 15th of December, he had said :

‘ This also I see in the Queen’s Majesty, a sufficient contentation to be moved to marry abroad ; and if it may so please Almighty God to lead by the hand some meet person to come and lay hands on her to her contentation, I could then wish myself more health to endure my years somewhat longer, to enjoy such a world here as I trust will follow ; otherwise I assure you as now things hang in desperation I have no comfort to live.’ ¹

Cecil’s interest was in the Archduke who was a grown man. Elizabeth, if she was obliged to marry preferred perhaps a husband with whom her connection for a time would be a form.

When Paul de Foix read Catherine’s letter to her she coloured, expressed herself warmly grateful for an offer of which she felt herself unworthy, and wished that she had been ten years younger. She feared, she said, that if at her age she married any one so young as the King of France, it would be with her as it had been with her sister and King Philip. In a few years she would find herself a discontented old woman deserted by a husband who was weary of her.

The ambassador politely objected. She might have children to give stability to the throne ; virtue never grew old, and her greatness would for ever make her loved.

¹ Cecil to Sir T. Smith, December 15 : WRIGHT, vol. i.

She said she would sooner die than be a neglected wife, and yet, while conscious of its absurdity, she allowed the thought to rest before her. She admitted that her subjects desired her to marry. They would perhaps prefer an Englishman for her; but she had no subject in England of adequate rank except the Earl of Arundel, and Arundel she could not endure. She could have loved the noble Earl of Leicester, but her subjects objected and she was bound to consult their wishes.

So with a promise to consider the proposal she graciously dismissed de Foix and proceeded to consult Cecil. The careful Cecil with methodical gravity paraded the obvious objections, the inequality of age, the danger, should the marriage prove fruitful, of the absorption of England into France, the risk of being involved in continental wars, and the innovations which might be attempted upon English liberty and English law.

Elizabeth admitted the force of these considerations, but she would not regard them as decisive. De Foix suggested that the crown of England might be entailed on the second son or the second child; and Catherine de Medici herself, excited by Elizabeth's uncertainty, became more pressing than ever, and made light of difficulties.

She even tempted Cecil with splendid offers if he would recommend the French alliance and do her a pleasure; but she had mistaken the temperament which she was addressing. Cecil answered like himself 'that he thought neither of how to gratify the Queen of

France nor of any gift or recompense which might accrue to himself; his sole care was for the service of God, the weal of his mistress, and the interests of the realm; if the marriage would further these it should have his hearty support, if otherwise no second consideration could move him.’¹

The Queen-mother was too eager to be daunted. The Queen of Spain was coming, in the course of the spring, to Bayonne on a visit to her mother. Some marriage in Philip’s interest would then probably be proposed for her son; and while de Foix was working on Elizabeth, Catherine herself continued to press upon the English ambassador and to urge the necessity of an immediate resolution.²

Elizabeth really thought for the time that March, unless she could succeed with Mary Stuart her choice lay only between the Archduke and the King of France. She told de Silva in March that she must marry or she could not face another Parliament, whilst she durst not marry Leicester for fear of an insurrec-

¹ MIGNET’S *Mary Stuart*; Appendix.

² Sir Thomas Smith reports a singular Order of Council for the behaviour of the French Court, in preparation for the Queen of Spain’s visit:—

‘Orders are taken in the Court, that no gentleman shall entertain with talk any of the Queen’s maids except it be in the Queen’s presence, or except he be married. And if any

demoiselle do sit upon a form or stool, he may sit by her, but not lie along as the fashion was afore in this Court, with other such restraints, which whether they be made for this time of Lent, or to somewhat imitate the austerity of the Spanish Court, that they should not be offended or think evil of the liberty used in this Court, I cannot tell.’—Sir T. Smith to Cecil, April 10: *French MSS. Rolls House*

tion.¹ Catherine de Medici knew the necessity which was bearing upon her, and laboured hard with Sir Thomas Smith to remove the objections raised by Cecil.

Age was nothing, she said. If the Queen of England was contented with the age of April. her son he would find no fault with hers. Elizabeth professed to fear that a marriage with the King of France might oblige her to be often absent from England. Catherine could see no difficulty in governing England by a viceroy; and it was to no purpose that Smith urged that the English people were less easy to govern than the French, and that their princes had trouble enough to manage them though they remained always at home. He told Catherine that he thought she was too precipitate; the young people might meet and make acquaintance. 'You are a young man, sir,' he said to Charles himself; 'when you are next in Normandy you should disguise yourself, go lustily over unknown, and see with your own eyes.'

The Queen-mother laughed, but said it could not be. She must have an answer at once; and the match was so advantageous for both parties that she could not believe Elizabeth would refuse. France and England united could rule the world, for French and English soldiers united could conquer the world. 'France had the honour for horsemen, English footmen were taken for invincible.'

¹ De Silva to Philip, March 17: *MS. Simancas*.

The conversation turned on the chances of children, where Catherine was equally confident; and the dialogue which followed was reported by Sir T. Smith in a letter to Elizabeth herself:—

‘The Queen told me that she was married when King Henry had but fifteen years and she fourteen; and that Mr Secretary Cecil had a child at fourteen years of age, as her ambassador had written to her; and, said she, ‘you see my son, he is not small nor little of growth.’

‘With that the King stood upright.

‘‘Why,’ said she, ‘you would show yourself bigger than you be,’ and laughed.

‘‘But what think you will be the end, M. l’Ambassadeur,’ saith she; ‘I pray you tell me your opinion frankly.’

‘‘By my troth, madame,’ quoth I, ‘to say what I think, I think rather it will take effect than no; and yet in my letters I see nothing but deliberation and irresolution and request of delay to consult; but methinks it groweth fast together and cometh on hotlier than I did imagine it would have done; and that maketh me judge rather that at the last it will take effect than otherwise. But methinks on your part and the King’s you make too much haste. If the King had three or four more years and had seen the Queen’s Majesty and was taken in love with her, then I would not marvel at this haste.’

‘‘Why,’ said the King, ‘I do love her indeed.’

‘‘Sir,’ quoth I, ‘your age doth not yet bear that

you should perfectly know what love meaneth ; but you shall shortly understand it, for there is no young man, prince nor other, but he doth pass by it. It is the foolishhest thing, the most impatient, most hasty, most without respect that can be.'

'With that the King blushed.

'The Queen said this is no foolish love.

' 'No, Madame,' quoth I, 'this is with respect and upon good grounds, and therefore may be done with deliberation.''¹

' 'So your Majesty is to marry the King of France after all,' said de Silva to Elizabeth a little after this.

'She half hid her face and laughed. 'It is Lent, she said ; 'and you are a good friend, so I will confest my sins to you. My brother the Catholic King wished to marry me, the King of Sweden and Denmark wished to marry me, the King of France wishes to marry me.'

' 'And the Archduke also,' said de Silva.

¹ Sir Thomas Smith to Elizabeth, April 15: *French MSS. Rolls House*.

Elizabeth had desired the ambassador to describe the young King to her. Smith said he was a pale, thin, sickly, ungainly boy, with large knee and ankle joints. His health had been injured by over-doses of medicine. He seemed amiable, cheerful, and more intelligent than might have been expected, 'seeing he had not been brought up to learning, and spoke no language but his own.'

In a letter to Cecil, the ambassador said—

'The Queen-mother hath a very good opinion of you. She liketh marvellous well that you had a son in your fourteenth or fifteenth year, for she hopeth therefore that her son the King shall have a son as well as you in his sixteenth year, and thinketh you may serve as an example to the Queen's Majesty not to contemn the young years of the King's.'—Smith to Cecil *MS Ibid*.

‘‘Your Prince,’ she went on without noticing the interruption, ‘is the only one who has not been at my feet; I have had all the rest.’

‘‘When the King my master failed,’ replied de Silva, ‘he supposed your Majesty would never marry at all.’

‘‘There was no need of so hasty a conclusion,’ she said; ‘although it is true that at that time I was very unwilling to marry; and I assure you that if at this moment I could name any fitting person to succeed to my crown I would not marry now; I have always shrunk from it; but my subjects insist, and I suppose I shall be forced to comply unless I can contrive some alternative, which will be very difficult. The world, when a woman remains single, assumes that there must be something wrong about her, and that she has some discreditable reason for it. They said of me that I would not marry because I was in love with the Earl of Leicester, and that I could not marry him because he had a wife already; yet now he has no wife, and for all that I do not marry him, although at one time the King my brother advised me to do it. But what are we to do? tongues will talk, and for ourselves we can but do our duties and keep our account straight with God. Truth comes out at last, and God knows my heart that I am not what people say I am.’’¹

Meanwhile in Scotland the drama was fast progressing. Darnley reached Edinburgh on the 12th of

¹ MIGNET; Appendix 6.

February; and a week later he was introduced to Mary at Wemyss Castle in Fife. As yet he had but few friends: the most powerful of the Catholic nobles looked askance at him; the Cardinal of Lorraine, the Cardinal of Guise, and the widowed Duchess, misunderstanding the feeling of his friends in England, imagined that in accepting a youth who had been brought up at Elizabeth's Court, the Queen of Scots was throwing up the game.¹ The Archbishop of Glasgow, Mary's minister in Paris—a Beton, and therefore an hereditary enemy of Lennox—sent an estafette to Madrid in the hope that Philip would dissuade her from a step which he regarded as fatal; and though Melville, who was in the confidence of the English Catholics, assured her 'that no marriage was more in her interest, seeing it would render her title to the succession of the crown unquestionable,' although Rizzio, 'the known minion of the Pope,' threw himself into Darnley's intimacy so warmly 'that they would lie sometimes in one bed together,'² Mary Stuart either disguised her resolution, or delayed the publication of it till Philip's answer should arrive. She had not yet relinquished hope of extracting concessions from Elizabeth by professing a

¹ When Mary's final resolution to marry Darnley was made known in Paris, Sir Thomas Smith wrote to Leicester, 'The Cardinal of Guise, Madame de Guise, and the Scottish ambassador, are in a marvellous agony for the news of the marriage of the Scottish Queen with the Lord

Darnley. They have received letters out of Scotland from some friends there, which when they had read, they fell weeping all that night.'—Smith to Leicester, April, 1565: *French MSS. Rolls House.*

² CALDERWOOD.

desire to be guided by her ; she was afraid of driving Elizabeth by over-precipitancy to accept the advances of France.

In the interval therefore she continued to assure Randolph that she would be guided by 'her sister's' wishes. 'How to be sure that it is her real mind and not words only,' Randolph wrote on the 1st March. of March, 'is harder than I will take upon me, but so far as words go, to me and others she seems fully determined. I never at any time had better hopes of her than now.'¹

Yet the smooth words took no shape in action. She pressed Randolph every day to know Elizabeth's resolution, but the conditions on both sides remained as they were left at Berwick. Elizabeth said to Mary Stuart, 'Marry as I wish and then you shall see what I will do for you.' Mary said, 'Recognize me first as your successor and I will then be all that you desire.' Each distrusted the other ; but Elizabeth had the most producible reason for declining to be credulous. However affectionate the Queen of Scots' language might be, the Treaty of Edinburgh remained unratified.

The more Mary pressed for recognition therefore, the more Elizabeth determined to withhold what if once conceded could not afterwards be recalled, till by some decisive action her suspicion should have been removed. With the suspense other dangerous symptoms began to show themselves. Soon after Darnley's

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 1 : *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

appearance the Queen of Scots made attempts to reintroduce the mass. Murray told Randolph that 'if she had her way in her 'Papistry' things would be worse than ever they were.' Argyle said that unless she married as the Queen of England desired 'he and his would have to provide for their own.' The chapel at Holyrood was thrown open to all comers; and while the Queen insisted that her subjects should 'be free to live as they listed,' the Protestants 'offered their lives to be sacrificed before they would suffer such an abomination.' Becoming aggressive in turn they threatened to force the Queen into conformity, and they by their violence 'kindled in her a desire to revenge.' Mary Stuart was desiring merely to reconcile the Catholics of the anti-Lennox faction to her marriage with Darnley. There was fighting about the chapel door; the priest was attacked at the altar; and in the daily quarrels at the council-board the Lords of the Congregation told Mary openly that 'if she thought of marrying a Papist it would not be borne with.'¹ Suddenly, unlooked for and uninvited, the evil spirit of the storm, the Earl of Bothwell, reappeared at Mary's Court. She disclaimed all share in his return; he was still attainted; yet there he stood—none daring to lift a hand against him—proud, insolent, and dangerous.

At this crisis Randolph brought Mary a message which she was desired to accept as final; that until Elizabeth had herself married or had made up her mind

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 15, March 17, and March 20: *MS. Rolls House*.

not to marry, the succession must remain unsettled. The Queen of Scots 'wept her fill;' but tears in those eyes were no sign of happy promise. Randolph so little liked the atmosphere that he petitioned for his own recall. Lennox had gathered about him a knot of wild and desperate youths—Cassilis, Eglinton, Montgomery, and Bothwell—the worst and fiercest of all. Darnley had found a second friend and adviser besides Rizzio in Lord Robert Stuart, the Queen's half-brother, 'a man full of all evil.' The Queen's own marriage with him was now generally spoken of; and Chatelherault, Argyle, and Murray gave the English ambassador notice that mischief was in the wind, 'and joined themselves in a new bond to defend each other's quarrels.'¹

'To help all these unhappy ones,' Randolph wrote to Cecil, 'I doubt not but you will take the best way; and this I can assure you, that contrary to my sovereign's will, let them attempt, let them seek, let them send to all the cardinals and devils in hell, it shall exceed their power to bring anything to pass, so that be not refused the Queen of Scots which in reason ought to content her.'²

The elements of uncertainty and danger were already too many, when it pleased Elizabeth to introduce another which completed the chaos and shook the three kingdoms. Despising doctrinal Protestantism too keenly to do justice to its professors, Elizabeth had been long growing impatient of excesses like that which had

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 20: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*

² *Ibid.*

shocked her at Cambridge, and had many times expressed her determination to bring the Church to order. Her own creed was a perplexity to herself and to the world. With no tinge of the meaner forms of superstition, she clung to practices which exasperated the Reformers, while the Catholics laughed at their inconsistency; her crucifixes and candles, if adopted partly from a politic motive of conciliation, were in part also an expression of that half belief with which she regarded the symbols of the faith; and while ruling the clergy with a rod of iron, and refusing as sternly as her father to tolerate their pretensions to independence, she desired to force upon them a special and semi-mysterious character; to dress them up as counterfeits of the Catholic hierarchy; and half in reverence, half in contempt, compel them to assume the name and character of a priesthood, which both she and they in their heart of hearts knew to be an illusion and a dream.

Elizabeth's view of this subject cannot be called a fault. It was the result of her peculiar temperament; and in principle was but an anticipation of the eventual attitude into which the minds of the laity would subside. But the theory in itself is suited only to settled times, when it is safe from the shock of external trials: from the first it has been endured with impatience by those nobler minds to whom sincerity is a necessity of existence; and in the first establishment of the English Church, and especially when Elizabeth attempted to insist on conditions which overstrained the position, she tried the patience of the most enduring clergy in the world.

Her first and greatest objection was to their marriage. The holy state of matrimony was one which she could not contemplate without bitterness; and although she could not at the time of her accession prevent the clergy from taking wives, and dared not re-enact the prohibitory laws of her sister, she refused to revive the permissive statutes of Edward. She preferred to leave the archbishops and bishops with their children legally illegitimate and themselves under the imputation of concubinage. Nor did time tend to remove her objections. Cecil alone in 1561 prevented her from making an attempt to enforce celibacy.¹ To the Archbishop of Canterbury himself 'she expressed a repentance that he and the other married bishops were in office, wishing it had been otherwise;' she thought them worse as they were, 'than in the glorious shame of a counterfeited chastity;' 'I was in horror,' the Archbishop wrote after a conversation with her on the subject, 'to hear such words come from her mild nature as she spake concerning God's holy ordinance of matrimony.' 'Princes hitherto had thought it better to cherish their ecclesiastical state as conservators of religion; the English bishops alone were openly brought in hatred, shunned and traduced before the malicious and ignorant people as beasts without knowledge, as men of effrenate intem-

¹ 'Her Majesty continues very ill-affected towards the state of matrimony in the clergy; and if I were not therein very stiff, her Majesty would utterly and openly condemn and forbid it.'—Cecil to Archbishop Parker, August 12, 1561: STRYKE'S *Life of Parker*.

perancy, without discretion or any godly disposition worthy to serve in their state.’¹

In the same spirit the Queen attempted to force her crucifixes into the parish churches; and she provoked by it immediate rebellion. The bishops replied with one voice ‘that they would give their lives for her; but they would not set a trap for the ignorant and make themselves guilty of the blood of their brethren;’ ‘if by the Queen’s authority they established images, they would blemish the fame of their notable fathers who had given their lives for the testimony of God’s truth.’

Thus the antagonism went on, irritating Elizabeth on her side into dangerous traffickings with the Bishop of Aquila and his successor; while Parker declared openly that he must obey God rather than man; and, that however the Queen might despise him and his brethren, ‘there were enough of that contemptible flock that would not shrink to offer their blood for the defence of Christ’s verity.’²

The right however, as has been already pointed out, was not wholly on the Protestant side. The recollections of Protestant ascendancy in the days of Edward were not yet effaced; and the inability of the Reformers to keep in check the coarser forms of irreverence and irreligion was as visible as before. They were themselves aggressive and tyrannical; and when prebendaries’

¹ Parker to Cecil: STRYPE’S *Life of Parker*.

² Ibid.

wives melted the cathedral organ-pipes into dish-covers and cut the frames into bedsteads, there was something to be said even in favour of clerical celibacy. The bad relations between the Crown and the spiritual estate prevented the clergy from settling down into healthy activity. The Queen insulted her bishops on one side; the Puritans denounced them on the other as imps of Antichrist; and thus without effective authority—with its rulers brought deliberately into contempt—the Church of England sunk deeper day by day into anarchy.

Something no doubt it had become necessary to do; but Elizabeth took a line which however it might be defended in theory was approved of only by the Catholics—and by them in the hope that it would prove the ruin of the institution which they hated.

At the close of 1564, after the return of the Court from Cambridge, an intimation went abroad that the Queen intended to enforce uniformity in the administration of the services and to insist especially on the use of the surplice and cap—the badges which distinguished the priest from the Genevan minister. The Puritan clergy would sooner have walked to the stake in the yellow robes of Sanbenitos. But it was in vain that the Dean of Durham insisted that it was cruel to use force against Protestants while ‘so many Papists, who had never sworn obedience to the Queen nor yet did any part of their duty to their flocks, enjoyed their liberty and livings.’ It was in vain that Pilkington and others of the bishops exclaimed against disturbing the peace

of the Church at such a time 'about things indifferent.'¹ On the 24th of January the Queen addressed a letter to the Archbishop of Canterbury, 'that whereas the ecclesiastical government ought to be the example in its perfection to all others—by the carelessness of him the Archbishop and of the other bishops, differences of opinion, differences of practice, differences in the rites used in the churches, had risen up throughout the realm, to the great offence of godly, wise, and obedient persons. She had hoped that the bishops would in time have remembered their duties; but finding her expectation disappointed she had now resolved to use her own authority and suppress and reform all novelties, diversities, and varieties. The Act of Uniformity should be obeyed in all its parts, and the bishops must see to it at their peril.' In the first draft of the letter a clause was added in Cecil's hand, recommending them to act with moderation; but the words were struck through and a menace substituted in their place that 'if the bishops were now remiss, the Queen would provide other remedy by such sharp proceedings as should not be easy to be borne by such as were disordered; and therewith also she would impute to them the cause thereof.'²

Much might have been said on the manner of these injunctions. To the matter there was no objection, pro-

¹ Pilkington to Leicester, October 25, 1564: STRYPE's *Parker*, Appendix.

² The Queen to Archbishop Parker, January 24, 1565; STRYPE's *Life of Parker*.

vided discretion had been observed in limiting the points which were to be insisted on within the bounds which were indispensably necessary, and provided the bishops' powers were equal to the duties imposed upon them. Henry the Eighth had again and again issued similar orders; and on the whole, because he was known to be evenhanded and because the civil authority supported the ecclesiastical, he had held in check the more dangerous excesses both of Catholic and Protestant. But the reformed opinions had now developed far beyond the point at which Henry left them. They had gained a hold on the intellect as well as on the passions of the best and noblest of Elizabeth's subjects; and on the other hand, as the Dean of Durham complained, vast numbers of the Catholic clergy were left undisturbed in their benefices who scarcely cared to conceal their creed. The bishops were rebuked if they attempted to exact the oath of allegiance from Papist recusants; while the Queen's displeasure was reserved for those who were true from the bottom of their hearts to the throne which the Catholics were undermining. The ablest and worthiest of the English clergy were those on whom the injunctions would press most heavily. Elizabeth it seemed had not yet forgiven the good service which they had done her when Anne Robsart died, and when but for them she would have married Lord Robert.

But there was no escape. The surplice should be worn though it scorched like the robe of Nessus. The Archbishop, with the help of the Bishops of London, Ely, Lincoln, and Winchester, drew up a body of articles

for 'uniformity of apparel and ritual,' and submitted them to Cecil for approval. Elizabeth meanwhile had supplemented her first orders by a command that 'matters in controversy in religion' should not be discussed in sermons; the clergy while wearing Catholic garments were not to criticise Catholic doctrines. The Archbishop told Cecil that while 'the adversaries' were so busy on the Continent writing against the English Liturgy, this last direction was thought 'too unreasonable;' and implored him 'not to strain the cord too tight;' while he requested an order in writing from the Queen, addressed to himself and the Bishop of London, as their authority for enforcing her first commands.¹

Neither a letter from herself however, nor assistance in any form from the Government, would Elizabeth allow to be given. The bishops should deliver their tale of bricks, but they should have no straw to burn them. They were the appointed authorities, and by them she was determined at once that the work should be done and that the odium of it should be borne.

She did something indeed; but not what Parker desired. As if purposely to affront the Protestants, the Court had revived the ceremonies of the Carnival. On Shrove Tuesday Leicester gave a tournament and afterwards a masque, where Juno and Diana held an argument on the respective merits of marriage and celibacy. Jupiter, as the umpire, gave sentence at last for matrimony; and the Queen, who had the Spanish ambassador

¹ Parker to Cecil, March 3, 1565: *Lansdowne MSS.* 8.

as usual at her side, whispered to him 'that is meant for me.' A supper followed, but not till past midnight. As Lent had begun the ambassador declined to eat, and

Elizabeth laughed at him. The next day
March 2. being Ash Wednesday, de Silva accompanied her to St Paul's, where Nowell, the Dean, was to preach. A vast crowd had assembled—more, the Queen thought, to see her than to hear the sermon. The Dean began, and had not proceeded far when he came on the subject of images—'which he handled roughly.'

'Leave that alone,' Elizabeth called from her seat. The preacher did not hear, and went on with his invectives. 'To your text! Mr Dean,' she shouted, raising her voice; 'To your text; leave that; we have heard enough of that! To your subject.'

The unfortunate Doctor Nowell coloured, stammered out a few incoherent words, and was unable to go on. Elizabeth went off in a rage with her ambassador. The congregation—the Protestant part of it—were in tears.¹

Archbishop Parker, seeing the Dean 'utterly dismayed,' took him 'for pity home to Lambeth to dinner;'² and wrote to Cecil a respectful but firm remonstrance. Without the letter for which he had applied he was powerless to move. The bishops, without the support of the Queen or council, would only be laughed at. Let Leicester, Bacon, Cecil himself, and the Queen send for the Protestant ministers if they

¹ De Silva to Philip, March 12: *MS. Simancas*.

² Parker to Cecil, March 8: *Lansdowne MSS.* 8.

pleased, and say to them what they pleased. They had begun the trouble, and it was for them to pacify it. 'I can do no good,' he said. 'If the ball shall be tossed unto us, and we have no authority by the Queen's hand, we will sit still; I will no more strive against the stream—fume or chide who will. The Lord be with you!'¹

Still labouring to do his best, the Archbishop called a meeting of the bishops and invited them either to recommend obedience among the clergy or to abstain from encouraging them in resistance. But the bishops were now as angry as the Queen. They refused in a body to 'discourage good Protestants;' and Parker told Elizabeth plainly that unless she supported him in carrying them out the injunctions must be modified. He had to deal with men 'who would offer themselves to lose all, yea, their bodies to prison, rather than condescend;' while the lawyers told him that he could not deprive incumbents of their livings 'with no more warrant but the Queen's mouth.'

While Parker addressed the Queen, the other bishops waited on Cecil with the same protest. The Reforming clergy, they said, refused everywhere 'to wear the apparel of Satan;' 'Christ had no fellowship with Belial;' and 'for themselves they would not be made Papists in disguise.'

Cecil, who knew that all appeals to Elizabeth in her present humour would only exasperate her, replied that

¹ Parker to Cecil, March 8: *Lansdowne MSS*

‘they talked more rhetoric than reason; the Queen must be obeyed or worse would follow.’¹

Never were human beings in a more cruel position. Elizabeth sat still in malicious enjoyment of the torture which she was inflicting, while Parker and Grindal, after a fresh consultation with the lawyers, undertook at last to summon the London clergy and attempt to extort a promise from them to obey the Act of Uniformity; if the clergy refused, the Archbishop supposed that the Court was prepared for the consequences, and that he must proceed to sequestration and deprivation; but while he consented to submit to the Queen’s commands he warned Cecil of the inevitable consequences: many churches would be left destitute of service; many ministers would forsake their livings and live at printing, teaching children, or otherwise as they could: ‘what tumults would follow, what speeches and talks were like to rise in the realm and in the city, he left it to Cecil’s wisdom to consider;’ and driven as he was against his will to these unwise extremities, he again entreated that some member of the council might be joined in commission with him ‘to authorize the Queen’s commandments.’²

On this last point Elizabeth would yield nothing. The clergy were under the charge of the bishops; and the bishops should manage them with law or without. One or two of the most violent of the London preachers were called before the council and ‘foul chidden:’ but

¹ De Silva to Philip, March 12.

² Parker and Grindal to Cecil, March 20: *Lansdowne MSS.* 8.

lay interference with them was limited to remonstrance. The responsibility of punishing them was flung persistently on the Archbishop, who at length, after once more ineffectually imploring Cecil 'to pacify the Queen,' opened a commission at Lambeth with the Bishop of London on the 26th of March.

A few hours' experience sufficed to justify the worst alarm. More than a hundred of the London clergy appeared. Sixty-one promised conformity; a few hesitated; thirty-seven distinctly refused and were suspended for three months 'from all manner of ministry.' They were the best preachers in the city; 'they showed reasonable quietness and modesty other than was looked for,' but submit they would not.¹ As an immediate consequence, foreseen by every one but the Queen, the most frequented of the London churches either became the scenes of scandal and riot or were left without service. When the Archbishop sent his chaplains to officiate, the congregation forcibly expelled them. The doors of one church were locked, and six hundred citizens 'who came to communion' were left at the doors unable to find entrance; at another, an Anglican priest, of high church tendencies, who was sent to take the place of the deposed minister, produced a wafer at the sacrament; the parishioners, when he was reading the prayer of consecration, removed it from the table 'because it was not common bread.' At a third church the churchwardens refused to provide surplices. The

¹ Parker to Cecil, March 26: *Lansdowne MSS.* 8.

Bishop of London was besieged in his house at St Paul's by mobs of raging women whom he vainly entreated to go away and send their husbands instead. Unable to escape from the hands of these Amazons he was about 'to pray aid of some magistrate' to deliver him; and was rescued only by one of the suspended clergy who persuaded them to go away quietly—'yet so as with tears they moved at some hands compassion.'¹ Everywhere 'the precise Protestants' 'offered their goods and bodies to prison rather than they would relent.'

Simultaneously and obviously on purpose April, Elizabeth forced upon the people the most alarming construction of the persecution. On Good Friday, her almoner Guest, the high church Bishop of Rochester, preached a sermon in the Chapel Royal on the famous *Hoc est corpus meum*. He assured his congregation again and again 'that the bread at the sacrament was the very body, the very same body which had been crucified,' 'and that the Christian must so take it and so believe of it,' and an enthusiastic Catholic in the audience was so delighted to hear the old doctrine once more in the Sovereign's presence, that he shouted out—'That is true, and he that denies it let him be burnt.'

On Easter Tuesday Elizabeth in stiff black velvet and with all solemnity and devotion publicly washed the feet of a poor woman; and the washing business

¹ Parker to Cecil, March 26, | 4: *Domestic MSS.*, *Elizabeth*, vol.
March 28, April 3, April 12: *Lans-* | xxxix., *Rolls House*.
downe MSS. Grindal to Cecil, May |

over, with slow deliberation she had a large crucifix brought to her which she piously kissed.¹ In part perhaps she was but a politic hypocrite, and desired to deceive de Silva and Philip; but the world took her at her word and believed that she was openly making profession of Catholicism while she was compelling the Protestants to be their own destroyers.'

Once more Parker poured out to Cecil his despair and distraction.²

Lambeth, April 28.

SIR,—The Queen's Majesty willed my Lord of York to declare her pleasure determinately to have the orders go forward. I trust her Highness hath devised how it may be performed. I utterly despair therein as of myself and therefore must sit still as I have now done, always waiting either for toleration or else further aid. Mr Secretary, can it be thought that I alone, having sun and moon against me, can compass this difficulty? If you of her Majesty's council provide no otherwise for this matter than as it appeareth openly, what the sequel will be *horresco cel reminiscendo cogitare*. In King Edward's days the whole body of the council travailed in Hooper's attempt; my predecessor Cranmer of blessed memory,³ labouring in vain with Bishop Ferrars, the

¹ 'Acabando de lavar el pie á la pobre, hacia de mucho espacio una cruz muy larga y bien hecha para besar en ella de que pesaba á muchos de los que allí estaban.'—De Silva to Philip, April 21: *MS. Simancas*.

² Archbishop Parker to Cecil: *Lansdowne MSS.* 9.

³ Parker's words are 'my predecessor D. Cranmer labouring in vain,' &c. D. is *Divus*, and the expression in the text is its nearest English equivalent.

council took it in hand; and shall I hope to do that which the Queen's Majesty will have done? What I hear and see, what complaints be brought to me, I shall not report, [or] how I am used of many men's hands. I commit all to God. If I die in this cause—malice so far prevailing—I shall commit my soul to God in a good conscience. If the Queen's Majesty be no more considered, I shall not marvel what be done or said to me. If you hear and see so manifestly as may be seen, and will not consult in time to prevent so many miseries, I have and do by these presents discharge my duty and conscience to you in such place as ye be. I can promise to do nothing but hold me in silence within my own conscience, and make my complaints to God *ut exsurgat Deus et judicet causam istam, ille, ille, qui comprehendit sapientes in astutiâ eorum.*¹ God be with your honour.

‘Your honour’s in Christ,

‘MATT. CANTUAR.’

The alarm produced by Elizabeth's attitude was not confined to the English Protestants. Adam Loftus, titular Archbishop of Arnagh, bewailed to Cecil the malice of the crafty ‘devil and subtle Satan’ who was ‘turmoiling and turning things topsy-turvy, bringing in a mingled religion, neither wholly with nor wholly against God's word.’ Such a religion was ‘the more dangerous,’ the Irish primate thought, ‘as it was accounted good and comely;’ but for himself he would

¹ ‘That God may arise, and may judge in this cause,—He—He—who taketh the wise in their own craftiness.’

rather see God followed wholly or Baal followed wholly ; 'it was dangerous to urge a necessity in things which God's word did set at liberty.'¹

Far worse was the effect in Scotland. The rigid Calvinists, who had long watched Elizabeth with jealous eyes, clamoured that she was showing herself at last in her true colours. 'Posts and packets flying daily in the air,' brought such news as lost her and lost England 'the hearts of all the godly.' No imagination was too extravagant to receive credit. The two Queens were supposed to be in a secret league for the overthrow of the truth, and Darnley's return was interpreted as part of an insidious policy—at once 'to match the Queen of Scots meanly and poorly,' and to confirm her in her evil ways 'by marrying her to a Papist.' The 'godly' exclaimed in anguish 'that no hope was left of any sure establishment of Christ's religion, but all was turned to confusion.' 'The evil effect' on men's minds was described 'as beyond measure infinite ;' and Mary Stuart's desire to obtain liberty of conscience for the Catholics and the increasing favour which she showed to Darnley, were alike set down to Elizabeth.

The Leicester scandals were revived with new anecdotes to confirm them.² The Protestants, goaded into

¹ The Archbishop of Armagh to Cecil, 1565: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

² 'It is in every man's mouth that lately the Duke of Norfolk's Grace and my Lord of Leicester were playing at tennis, the Queen

beholding them, and my Lord Robert, being very hot and sweating, took the Queen's napkin out of her hand and wiped his face, which the Duke seeing said he was too saucy, and swore he would lay his racket upon his face. Hereupon arose a

fear and fury, swore that the priests at Holyrood should be hanged, and 'idolatry' be no more suffered. Mary Stuart being on a visit at Lundy in Fife, the Laird—'a grave antient man with a white head and a white beard'—led his seven sons before her, all tall and stalwart men. They knelt together at her feet. 'The house,' the laird said, 'was hers and all that was in it, and he and his boys would serve her truly till death;' 'but he prayed that while she remained no mass should be said there.' She asked why. He said it was 'worse than the mickle de'il.'¹

Remonstrance did not rest in words. A priest in Edinburgh, taking courage from the reports which were in the air, said mass at Easter at a private house. He was denounced, caught, hurried before the town magistrates, and having confessed, was fastened hand and foot to the market cross. There from two o'clock in the afternoon till six he stood exposed, while 'ten thousand eggs' were broken upon his face and body; and the hungry mob howled round his feet and threatened to dash his brains out with their clubs as soon as he was taken down. The Provost, who had gone contentedly home to supper, was obliged to return with the city guard to bring him off in safety; and the miserable wretch pasted with slime and filth was carried senseless

tumult, and the Queen offended sore with the Duke. This tale is told by the Earl of Athol. Whatsoever is most secret among you is sooner at this Queen's ears than some would think it. I would your doings were

better, or many of your tattling tongues shorter.' — Randolph to Throgmorton, March 31: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 27: *MS. Ibid.*

into the Tolbooth and there made fast in irons with two of his congregation at his side.¹

The Queen of Scots, who was at Stirling when she heard of this cowardly outrage, sent for the Provost, and ordered him to release his prisoner; 'not however,' wrote an unknown correspondent in relating the story to Randolph,² 'without great offence of the whole people;' 'whereby,' he said, 'I trust whenever the like occurs again, and there be knowledge gotten, execution will be made in another manner of sort without seeking of further justice at the magistrate's hands; I assure you there is greater rage now amongst the faithful nor ever I saw since her Grace came to Scotland.'

Meantime Mary Stuart, weary of the mask which she had so long worn, and unable to endure any longer these wild insults to her creed and herself, determined to run the chance of dividing Scotland, to throw herself on the loyalty of the Catholic party in her own country, in England, and abroad, to marry Darnley and dare the worst which Elizabeth could do. Whether she had received any encouraging answer from Philip before she made up her mind does not appear. It is most likely however that she had learnt from the Government in the Netherlands what the answer would be when it arrived; and the opinions of the Spanish ministers, when made

¹ Randolph to Cecil, April, 1565: *Rolls House MS.*

² One of a number of letters to Randolph, in the *Rolls House*, written in the same hand, and signed 'You know who.' To this person,

whoever he was, Randolph was indebted for much of his secret information. The hand partly resembles that of Kirkaldy of Grange; partly, though not to the same degree, that of Knox.

known at last, were decisively favourable. After a consultation at the Escorial the Duke of Alva and the Count de Feria recommended Philip by all means to support the Queen of Scots in taking a Catholic husband who by blood was so near the English crown; and Philip sent her word, and through de Silva sent word to the English Catholics, that she and they might rely on him to bear them through.¹

Tired of waiting, and anticipating with justifiable confidence that Philip would approve, the Queen of Scots in the middle of April came to a fixed resolution. As Darnley was an English subject it was necessary to go through the form of consulting the English sovereign; and Maitland, who to the last moment had believed that he had been successful in dissuading his mistress from so rash a step, was the person chosen to inform Elizabeth that the Queen of Scots had made her choice, and to request her consent.

With but faint hopes of success—for he knew too much to share the illusions of his countrymen—Maitland left Edinburgh on the 15th of April, taking Randolph with him as far as Berwick. Three days later he reached London. Mary Stuart still trusted Maitland with her secrets, in the belief that although he might disapprove of what she was doing he would remain true to her. He carried with him private messages to de Silva and Lady Lennox, and was thoroughly aware of all that she intended. It is certain however from Mait-

¹ *MS. Simancas.*

land's subsequent conduct that although ready to go with his mistress to the edge of a rupture with Elizabeth he was not prepared for open defiance. Elizabeth's conduct had been so strange and uncertain that it was possible that she might make no difficulty. Even the Spanish ambassador believed that although she would prefer Leicester, yet sooner than quarrel with the Queen of Scots she would agree to the marriage with Daruley; and with a faint impression that it might be so Maitland had accepted the commission. Yet either Maitland betrayed his trust, or Elizabeth already knew all that he had to tell her: immediately after his arrival de Silva reported that the Queen of England 'had changed her mind;' ¹ while Mary Stuart, as soon as she was freed from the restraint of Maitland's presence, no longer concealed that she had made up her mind irrevocably whether Elizabeth consented or refused.

Letters from Randolph followed close behind Maitland to say that the marriage was openly declared; Lady Lennox even told de Silva that she believed it had secretly taken place; and amidst the exultation of the Catholics a general expectation spread through England that 'the good time was at hand when the King of Spain and the Queen of Scots would give them back their own again.'²

Nor were their hopes without sound foundation. Mary Stuart, as soon as her resolution was taken, de-

¹ 'Á lo que he podido entender esta Reyna se ha mucho alterado de este negocio.'—De Silva to Philip, April 25: *MS. Simancas*.

² *Ibid.*

spatched a messenger post haste to Spain to acquaint Philip with it and to tell him that she depended on his support. The messenger met the Duke of Alva at Bayonne, where the Duke answered for his master in terms which corresponded to her warmest hopes.

‘I replied,’ wrote Alva in a despatch to Philip, ‘that I had your Majesty’s instructions to inform the Queen of Scots of your Majesty’s interest in her welfare; I said that your Majesty earnestly desired to see her in the great position to which she aspired; and you were assured that both for herself and for the realm she could not do better than marry the young Lennox.

‘Your Majesty, I continued, recommended her to conduct herself with great caution and dissimulation towards the Queen of England, and for the present especially to refrain from pressing her in the matter of the succession. The Queen of England might in that case do something prejudicial to the Queen of Scots’ interests, and either declare war against her or else listen to the proposals of the Queen-mother of France and marry the young King. If the Queen of Scots would follow your Majesty’s advice your Majesty would so direct and support her that when she least expected it she would find herself in possession of all that she desired.’¹

The messenger flung himself at Alva’s feet and wept for joy. His mistress, he said, had never in her life received such happy news as these words would convey to her; and he promised that she would act

¹ Alva to Philip, June; TEULET, vol. v.

in every particular as the King of Spain advised.

Although this conversation took place two months after Maitland's despatch to England, yet it spoke of a foregone conclusion which Elizabeth too surely anticipated. In the first flurry of excitement she sent Lady Lennox to the Tower; and uncertain whether she might not be too late, she proposed to send Sir Nicholas Throgmorton on the spot to Scotland, to say that 'if the Queen of Scots would accept Leicester, she should be accounted and allowed next heir to the crown as though she were her own born daughter;' but 'as this was certain and true on one side, so was it also certain on the other that she would not do the like with any other person.'¹

The situation however was too serious to allow Elizabeth to persist in the Leicester foible. The narrow and irritating offer was suspended till it could be more maturely considered; and on the 1st of May May. the fitness or unfitness of the marriage of the Queen of Scots and Lord Darnley was discussed 'with long deliberation and argument' in the English council. The result was a unanimous conclusion 'that the marriage with the Lord Darnley, being attended with such circumstances as did appear, was unmeet, unprofitable, directly prejudicial to the amity between the two Queens, and perilous to the concord of the realm.' But so little desirable did it seem to restrict the Queen of Scots' choice unnecessarily, so unjust it seemed to

¹ First draft of instructions to Sir S. Throgmorton, April 24: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

force upon her the scoundrel object of Elizabeth's own affections, that Cecil and his friends urged the necessity of meeting freely and cordially her demand for recognition; and they advised their mistress to offer the Queen of Scots 'a free election of any other of the nobility, either in the whole realm or isle or any other place.' 'For themselves,' the council, 'thinking the like of the rest of the nobility and sage men of the realm, did for their parts humbly offer to her Majesty that whatever could be devised for the satisfaction of the Queen of Scots with some other meet marriage should be allowed with their advice and furthered with their services when her Majesty should command them.'¹

With these more generous instructions, Sir N. Throgmorton started for Scotland on the 4th of May. Maitland, whom, in order to prolong his absence from Edinburgh, Mary Stuart had directed to go on to France, returned with the English ambassador in loyal disobedience, to add his own persuasions: he still hoped that the Queen of Scots might be tempted by the prospect of immediate recognition to accept either Arundel, Norfolk, or the Prince of Condé. If she would consent to marry either of these three, the English Government would do for her 'more than she had asked or even could expect.'²

¹ Determination of the council on the Queen of Scot's marriage, signed Winchester, Norfolk, Derby, Pembroke, Clinton, W. Howard, Ed. Rogers, Fr. Knolles, W. Cecil, Ab. Cave, W. Petre, John Mason, R. Sackville.—*Cotton. MSS. CALIG.*

B. 10. Endorsed, 'This is a copy of the paper delivered to Sir N. Throgmorton.'

² Paul de Foix to the Queen-mother, May 2, May 10: TEULET vol. ii.

But neither these offers, tempting as they would have been a few weeks before, nor the admonitory cautions of the Duke of Alva, came in time to save Mary from the rash course into which she was plunging. The presence of Lennox and Darnley had lashed the Scottish factions into fury, and Queen and Court were within the influence of a whirlpool from which they could no longer extricate themselves. The lords on all sides were calling their retainers under arms. The Earl of Murray, at the expense of forfeiting the last remains of his influence over his sister, had summoned Bothwell to answer at Edinburgh a charge of high treason. Bothwell would have defied him had he dared; but Murray appeared accompanied by Argyle and 7000 men on the day fixed for the trial; and the Hepburn was once more obliged to fly. On the other hand, Mary was lavishing on Darnley the most extravagant demonstrations of affection. He was ill, and with confiding carelessness she installed herself as his nurse at his bedside. She accused her brother, when he remonstrated, of 'seeking to set the crown on his own head.' Argyle and Murray durst not appear together at the Court, 'that if need were the one might relieve the other.' The miserable Chatelherault could only mutter his feeble hope that he might die in his bed; while Lennox boasted openly, 'that he was sure of the greatest part of England, and that the King of Spain would be his friend.'

Lennox's men went openly to mass, and 'such pride was noted in the father and the son' that they would

scarcely speak to any common nobleman. 'My young lord lying sick in his bed boasted the Duke that he would knock his pate when he was whole;' while 'the preachers looked daily to have their lives taken from them,' and 'the country was so far broken that there was daily slaughter without redress, stealing on all hands, and justice almost nowhere.'¹

Although the report of the completion of the marriage was premature, yet the arrangements for it had been pushed forward with eager precipitancy. Mary Stuart's friends in England had informed her of the resolution of the council; she despatched one of the Betons to delay Throgmorton at Berwick; and the leading lords were sent for one by one to Stirling, where the Court was staying, and were requested to sign a paper recommending Darnley as a fitting person to be the Queen's husband. Murray's signature could be ill dispensed with. He was invited among the rest, and overwhelmed with courtesies—Mary, Lennox, and Darnley contending with each other in their professions of regard. Murray however was the first to refuse. 'He had no liking thereof.' The Earl of Morton had been gained over by a release from Lady Lennox of her claims on Angus; and if Murray would have complied he might have had the lands of three counties for his reward; but in vain Mary pleaded, in vain Mary threatened. She took her brother into a room apart; she placed the paper in his hand, and required him to

¹ Randolph to Cecil, May 3: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

sign it on his allegiance. He asked for time : she said no time could be allowed because others were waiting for his example.

Murray's character, so much debated among historians, was, in the eye of those who knew him, a very simple one. He was true, faithful, honourable, earnest, stout both for the defence of God's glory and to save his sovereign's honour ; and he was fearful that her doings might make a breach of amity between the two realms.¹ For five years he had laboured to reconcile two opposing duties : he was a zealous Protestant, but he had saved his sister from persecution, and had quarrelled with his friends in her defence ; he had maintained her claims on the English succession with the loyalty of a Scot ; he had united his special patriotism with as noble an anxiety for the spiritual freedom of the united realms. Few men had resisted more temptations to play a selfish game than Murray ; none had carried themselves with more conspicuous uprightness in a difficult and most trying service. To the last, and long after he had known the direction in which his sister's aims were tending, he had shielded her with his name, he had assisted her with his counsels, he had striven hard to save her from the sinister and dangerous advisers to whom she was secretly listening : but he could hesitate no longer ; under the miserable influence of Rizzio and her foreign correspondents, she was bringing revolution and civil war upon Scotland, and the choice was forced upon

¹ Randolph to Cecil, May 21. *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

him between his country and his personal affection.

He implored the Queen to pause. She reproached him with being a slave to England. He said 'that he could not consent to her marriage with one who he could not assure himself would set forth Christ's true religion.' She told him scornfully 'it was well known from whom he had received that lesson.' 'He answered with humility, but he would not sign;' and Mary was left to act alone or with her own and Darnley's friends, and to endeavour to rid herself of Murray by such other means as might offer themselves.¹

Her messenger meanwhile had sped fast upon his way to England, and encountered Throgmorton at Newark. Mary Stuart, concealing her resentment at Maitland's disobedience, sent him by Beton's hands 'the sweetest letter that ever subject received from sovereign,' wanting neither love, eloquence, despite, anger, nor passion; she bade him go back and tell Elizabeth that she had been trifled with too long, and that she would now follow her own mind and choice; with the advice of her nobles she would take such an one as she thought good, and she would no longer be fed with yea and nay, and depend on such uncertain dealing.

But she had far mistaken Maitland if she believed that he would travel with her on the road into which she had been tempted by Rizzio. So desperate it seemed

¹ Randolph to Cecil, May 8: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

to him that he would have had her dragged back from it by force.

‘I never saw Lidington in such perplexity and passion,’ wrote Throgmorton; ‘I could not have believed he could have been so moved; he wishes I had brought with me authority to declare war if the Queen of Scots persist, as the last refuge to stay her from this unadvised act.’

Mary Stuart’s orders to Maitland to return to London were so distinct that he hesitated before he again disobeyed; he remained at Newark for a few hours after Throgmorton had gone forward; but the extremity was so serious that he ran all risks and overtook the ambassador at Alnwick. At the Border they heard the alarming news that Chatelherault had been bribed into compliance with the marriage ‘by a written promise to enjoy his own.’ ‘Let the Earl of Northumberland be stayed in London,’ Throgmorton wrote back to Leicester: ‘from what I hear it is very necessary. Examine Sir Richard Cholmondley, and look well and sharp to the doings of that party.’ ‘The Papists in these parts do rouse themselves.’ ‘Look to yourselves and her Majesty’s safety.’ ‘Sir Henry Percy is dangerous.’¹

Time pressed. On the 15th Lord Darnley was to be created Earl of Ross at Stirling; when, being an English subject, he would swear allegiance to the Queen of Scots without leave sought or obtained from his own sovereign. A dukedom had been first intended for him; the higher

¹ Throgmorton to Leicester and Cecil, from Berwick, May 11 and 12 Scotch MSS. Rolls House.

title had been suspended, and the foolish boy struck with his dagger at the justice-clerk who was sent to tell him of the unwelcome change. But whether earl or duke he would alike commit treason to Elizabeth, and Throgmorton hurried forward to be in time if possible to prevent a catastrophe which would make reconciliation hopeless. A message from the Queen of Scots met him at Edinburgh that he should have his audience when the creation was over, and that he must remain where he was till she sent for him. So well he wished to Mary that he would not obey; he pushed right on to Stirling and reached the castle on the morning of the fatal day. But the gates were locked in his face; and it was not till toward evening that he received an intimation that the Queen would receive him.

When he was at last admitted into her presence the creation was over; the oath had been sworn; and the Queen of Scots stood triumphant, her eyes flashing pride and defiance, surrounded by half the northern lords. Sir Nicholas Throgmorton and Mary Stuart had last met on the eve of her departure from France, when he had vainly entreated her to ratify the Treaty of Edinburgh. He was now witnessing another act of the same drama.

In England he had been a warm advocate of her recognition, and she received him with gracious kindness. He presented his despatches; he then said that he was sent by the Queen of England to express 'her surprise at the hasty proceedings with the Lord Darnley, seeing how he and his father had failed of their duty in enter-

prising such a matter without her Majesty's knowledge and consent.'

Mary Stuart, affecting the utmost surprise, in turn professed herself at a loss to understand Elizabeth's meaning. It was not to be supposed, she said, that she would remain always unmarried; the foreign princes who had proposed for her had been unwelcome to the Queen of England, and she had imagined that in taking an English nobleman who was equally acceptable to both realms, she would have met her sister's wishes most exactly.

The truth sprung to Throgmorton's lips; he had been a true friend to her and he would speak plainly.

He told her that she knew very well what the Queen of England had desired; and she knew also that she was doing the very thing which was not desired. The Queen of England had wished her to take some one 'who would maintain the amity between the two nations;' and by Lord Darnley that amity would not be maintained.

Argument was of course unavailing. The Queen of Scots had on her side the letter of Elizabeth's words—for Darnley was the nominee of the English Catholics; and the Catholics outnumbered the Protestants. After some discussion she promised to suspend the celebration of the marriage for three months, in the hope that in the interval Elizabeth would look more favourably on it; but Throgmorton saw that she was determined; and he doubted whether she would adhere to the small concession which she had made.

'The matter is irrevocable,' he reported to Elizabeth:

‘I do find this Queen so captivate either by love or cunning—or rather to say truly by boasting or folly—that she is not able to keep promise with herself, and therefore not able to keep promise with your Majesty in these matters.’¹

Anticipating an immediate insurrection in Northumberland and Yorkshire, he begged that Bedford, who had gone to London, might return to Berwick without an hour’s delay; and that the troops there might be largely reinforced. He returned at his leisure through York, to inform the council there of the names of dangerous persons which he had learnt in Scotland; and meanwhile he sketched a course of action to Leicester and Cecil which would either prevent the marriage or cripple it with conditions which would deprive it of its danger.

Elizabeth he thought should immediately make public ‘the indignity’ which had been offered her by the Queen of Scots, and should declare without ambiguity her intention of ‘chastising the arrogancy’ of subjects who had disowned their allegiance. He recommended the arrest of the Earl of Northumberland, the detention of Lady Lennox ‘in close and separate confinement,’ and the adoption of prompt measures to disabuse ‘the Papists’ of their belief ‘that they were themselves in credit and estimation.’ An eye should be kept on the Spanish ambassador—‘there the matter imported much’—and favour should be shown to Lady Catherine Grey, who, though fast sinking under hard usage, still survived.

¹ Throgmorton to Elizabeth, May 21: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

The English Government should avoid differences with France and Spain; and then 'either a breach of the matter would follow or else a good composition.'¹

Randolph, after Throgmorton's departure, continued at his post, and sent up accounts from week to week of the position of parties and of the progress of the crisis.

He described Darnley as a conceited, arrogant, intolerable fool; he spoke of Murray as true to his mistress in the highest sense, and still labouring to save her from herself—of Maitland 'as more honest than many looked for'—of Argyle and the Lords of the old Congregation as true to their principles, and working all together—of the Earl of Ruthven alone 'as to his shame stirring coals to bring the marriage to effect.' 'Of the poor Queen herself' he knew not what to say, 'so pitiful her condition seemed to him;' 'he had esteemed her before,' he said, 'so worthy, so wise, so honourable in all her doings;' and he 'found her so altered with affection towards Lord Darnley that she had brought her honour in question, her estate in hazard, her country torn to pieces.'²

Affection it might be, or else, as Maitland thought, 'the foundation of the matter might have been anger and despite:' so far from loving the weak idiot whom she had chosen, she was more likely already shuddering at the sacrifice which her ambition and revenge had demanded; Lord Darnley had few qualities to command either love or respect from Mary Stuart.

¹ Throgmorton to Cecil and Leicester, May 21: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Randolph to Leicester and Cecil, May 21: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

June. 'David Rizzio,' continued Randolph in a later letter, 'is he that now worketh all, chief secretary to the Queen and only governor to her good man. The bruits here are wonderful, men's talk very strange, the hatred towards Lord Darnley and his house marvellous great, his pride intolerable, his words not to be borne, but where no man dare speak again. He spareth not also in token of his manhood to let blows fly where he knows they will be taken. When men have said all and thought what they can, they find nothing but that God must send him a short end or themselves a miserable life. They do not now look for help from England. Whatsoever I speak is counted but wind. If her Majesty will not use force let her spend three or four thousand pounds. It is worth the expense of so much money to cut off the suspicion that men make of her Majesty that she never liked thing in her life better than to see this Queen so meanly matched. She is now so much altered from that which lately she was known to be, that who now beholdeth her doth not think her to be the same. Her Majesty is laid aside; her wits not such as they were; her beauty other than it was; her cheer and countenance changed into I wot not what—a woman more to be pitied than any that ever I saw. The Lord Darnley has said that if there were war to-morrow between England and Scotland, this Queen should find more friends in England than the Queen's Majesty's self.'¹

¹ Randolph to Leicester and Cecil, June 3: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

Maitland continued to write confidentially to Cecil, promising to do his best to prevent a collision between the two countries, and entreating Cecil to assist him. Randolph, distracted by the suspicions of Elizabeth's motives which he saw round him, advised that 'unless the Queen of Scots was to be allowed to take her will,' an English army should advance to the Border, and that he should be himself empowered to promise the Congregation distinct and open support. In that case all would be well. 'The Papists should be bridled at home, and all intelligence cut off between them and the Scots: and either Mary Stuart would be put to the hardest shift that ever prince was at, or such a stir in Scotland that what part soever was strongest should be the longer liver.'¹

The agitation in England after Throgmorton's return was almost as great. A series of remarkable documents remain to illustrate the alarm with which the crisis was regarded, and to reveal many unexpected features in the condition of the country.

First is a paper in Cecil's hand, dated the 2nd of June, entitled 'The perils and troubles that may presently ensue and in time to come follow upon the marriage of the Queen of Scots with the Lord Darnley.'

'The minds,' thus this paper runs, 'of all such as be affected to the Queen of Scots either for herself, or for the opinion of her pretences to this crown, or for the desire to have a change in the form of religion in this

¹ Randolph to Cecil, June 12: *Ibid.*

realm, or for the discontentation they have of the Queen's Majesty or her successors or of the succession of any other besides the Queen of Scots, shall be by this marriage erected, comforted, and induced to devise and labour how to bring their desires to pass; and to make some estimate what persons these are, to the intent the quantity of the peril may be weighed, the same may be composed in these sorts either within the realm or without.

'The first are such as are especially devoted to the Queen of Scots or the Lord Darnley by bond of blood and alliance—as all the House of Lorraine and Guise for her part, and the Earl of Lennox and his wife with all such in Scotland as be of their blood there and have received displeasure by the Duke of Chatelherault and the Hamiltons.

'The second are all manner of persons both in this realm and in other countries that are devoted to the authority of Rome and mislike of the religion here received; and in these two sorts are the substance of them comprehended that shall take comfort in this marriage.

'Next therefore is to be considered what perils and troubles these kind of men shall intend to this realm.

'The general scope and mark of all their designs is and always shall be to bring the Queen of Scots to have the royal crown of this realm; and therefore though their devices may vary amongst themselves for the compassing hereof, according to the accidents of the times, and according to the impediments which they shall find by means of the Queen's Majesty's actions and govern-

ment, yet all their purposes shall wholly and only tend to make the Queen of Scots Queen of this realm and to deprive our sovereign lady thereof. And in these their proceedings there are two manner of things to be considered, the one of which is far worse than the other. The one is intended by them that, either for malicious blindness in religion or for natural affection to the Queen of Scots or the Lord Darnley, do persuade themselves that the said Queen of Scots hath presently more right to the crown than our sovereign the Queen, of which sort be all their kindred of both sides and all such as are devoted to the Papacy either in England, Scotland, Ireland, or elsewhere. The other is meant of them which less maliciously are persuaded that the Queen of Scots hath only right to be the next heir to succeed the Queen's Majesty and her issue, of which sort few are without the realm but here within; and yet of them not so many as are of the contrary. And from these two sorts shall the devices and practices proceed.

‘From the first are to be looked for these perils. It is to be doubted that the devil will infect some of them to imagine the hindrance of our dearest sovereign lady by such means as the devil will suggest to them; although it is to be assuredly hoped that Almighty God will—as hitherto He hath—graciously protect and preserve her from such dangers.

‘There will be attempted by persuasions, by bruits and rumours and such like, to alienate the minds of good subjects from the Queen's Majesty, and to conciliate them to the Queen of Scots, and in this behalf the

frontier and the north will be much solicited and laboured. There will be attempted tumults and rebellions, specially in the north towards Scotland, so as thereupon may follow some open extremity by violence. There will be by the said Queen's council and friends a new league made with France or Spain that shall be offensive to this realm and a furtherance to their title; and it is also likely they will set on foot as many practices as they can both upon the frontier and in Ireland to occasion the Queen's Majesty to continue her charges, thereby to retain her from being wealthy or potent. From the second is not much to be feared; but they will content themselves to serve notably the Queen's Majesty and so to impeach her not to marry; but to hope that the Queen of Scots shall have issue, which they will think to be more plausible to all men because thereby the Houses of England and Scotland shall be united in one, and thereby the occasions of war shall cease; with which persuasions many people may be seduced and abused to incline themselves to the Queen of Scots.'¹

The several points thus prepared by Cecil for the consideration of the council were enlarged in the discussion which ensued on them.

'By some it was thought plainly that the peril was greater by the marriage with the Lord Darnley than with the mightiest prince abroad; a stranger would have few friends in England; the Lord Darnley being

¹ *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*

an English subject, 'whatever power he could make by the faction of the Papists or other discontented persons would be so much deducted from the power of the realm.' 'A small faction of adversaries at home was more dangerous than thrice their number abroad;' and it was remembered that 'foreign powers had never prevailed in England but with the help of some at home.'

It 'had been observed and manifestly seen before this attempt at marriage, that in every corner of the realm the factions that most favoured the Scottish title had grown stout and bold;' 'they had shown themselves in the very Court itself;' and unless checked promptly 'they would grow so great and dangerous as redress would be almost desperate.' 'Scarcely a third of the population were assured to be trusted in the matter of religion, upon which only string the Queen of Scots' title did hang;' and 'comfort had been given to the adversaries of religion in the realm to hope for change,' 'by means that the bishops had dealt straightly with some persons of good religion because they had forborne to wear certain apparel and such like things—being more of form and accident than any substance.' 'The pride and arrogancy of the Catholics had been increased' by the persecution of the Protestants; while if the bishops attempted to enforce conformity on the other side 'the judges and lawyers in the realm, being not the best affected in religion, did threaten them with pre-munire, and in many cases letted not to punish and defame them,' 'so that they dared not execute the ecclesiastical laws.'

For much of all this the Queen was responsible. She it was who more than any other person had nursed the Scottish faction ' at the Court. If the bishops had been too eager to persecute the Catholics, it was she who had compelled Parker to suspend the ablest of the Protestant ministers. ' But the sum of the perils was made so apparent as no one of the council could deny them to be both many and very dangerous.' They were agreed every one of them that the Queen must for the present relinquish her zeal for uniformity, and that the prosecutions of the clergy must cease till the question could be reconsidered by Parliament ; they determined to require the oath of allegiance of the judges, ' so that they should for conscience' sake maintain the Queen's authority,' to replace the nonjuring bishops in the Tower, to declare forfeited all benefices held by ecclesiastics who were residing abroad, and to drive out a number of seditious monks and friars who had fled across the Border from Scotland and were serving as curates in the northern churches. Bedford meanwhile should go down to Berwick taking additional troops with him ; the ' powers of the Border ' should be held in readiness to move at an hour's notice ; and a reserve be raised in London to march north in case of war. Lennox and Darnley might then be required to return to England on their allegiance. If they refused they would be declared traitors and their extradition demanded of the Queen of Scots under the treaties.

So far the council was unanimous. As to what should be done if the Queen of Scots refused to sur-

render them opinions were divided. The bolder party were for declaring immediate war and sending an army to Edinburgh; others preferred to wait till events had shaped themselves more distinctly; all however agreed on the necessity of vigour, speed, and resolution. 'No persons deserving of mistrust were to be suffered to have any rule of her Majesty's subjects or lands in the north:' they might 'retain their fees,' 'but more trusty persons should have the rule of their people.' The Earl of Murray and his friends should be comforted and supported; and 'considering the faction and title of the Queen of Scots had for a long time received great countenance by the Queen's Majesty's favour shown to the said Queen and her ministers,' the council found themselves compelled to desire her Majesty 'by some exterior act to show some remission of her displeasure to the Lady Catherine and the Earl of Hertford.'

Further—for it was time to speak distinctly, and her Majesty's mode of dealing in such matters being better known than appreciated—she was requested, after considering these advices, to choose which of them she liked, and put them in execution *in deeds and not pass them over in consultations and speeches.*¹

Nor did the council separate without returning once more to the vexed question of the Queen's marriage.

¹ The words in italics are underlined in the original.

Summary of consultations and advices given to her Majesty, June, .

1565 : *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*
Debates in Council, June 4, 1565:
Scotch MSS. Rolls House.

So long as she remained single they represented gravely that 'no surety could be devised to ascertain any person of continuance of their families and posterities.' The French affair had dragged on. Elizabeth had coquetted with it as a kitten plays with a ball. The French ambassador, De Foix, on the 2nd of May made an effort to force an answer from her one way or the other. 'The world,' he said, 'had been made in six days, and she had already spent eighty and was still undecided.' Elizabeth had endeavoured to escape by saying that the world 'had been made by a greater artist than herself; that she was constitutionally irresolute, and had lost many fair opportunities by a want of promptitude in seizing them.' Four days later on the receipt of bad news from Scotland she wavered towards acceptance: she wrote to Catherine de Medici to say 'that she could not decline an offer so generously made; she would call Parliament immediately, and if her subjects approved she was willing to abide by their resolution.'¹

A parliamentary discussion could not be despatched in a moment. The Queen-mother on receiving Elizabeth's letter asked how soon she might expect an answer; and when Sir T. Smith told her that perhaps four months would elapse first, she affected astonishment at the necessity of so much ceremony. If the Queen of England was herself satisfied she thought it was enough.

¹ 'La response de la Reyne,' May 6; *French MSS. Rolls House*.

‘Madam,’ replied Smith, ‘her people be not like your people; they must be trained by doulceur and persuasion, not by rigour and violence. There is no realm in Christendom better governed, better policied, and in more felicity of quiet and good order than is the realm of England; and in case my sovereign should go to work as ye say, God knows what would come of it: you have an opinion that her Majesty is wise; her answer is very much in a little space and containeth more substance of matter than multitude of words.’¹

Catherine de Medici but half accepted the excuse, regarding it only as a pretext for delay. Yet Elizabeth was probably serious, and had the English council been in favour of the marriage, in her desperation at the attitude of Mary Stuart she might have felt herself compelled to make a sacrifice which would insure for her the alliance of France. Paul de Foix one day at the end of May found her in her room playing chess.

‘Madam,’ he said to her, ‘you have before you the game of life. You lose a pawn; it seems a small matter; but with the pawn you lose the game.’

‘I see your meaning,’ she answered. ‘Lord Darnley is but a pawn, but unless I look to it I shall be checkmated.’

She rose from her seat, led the ambassador apart, and said bitterly she would make Lennox and his son smart for their insolence.

De Foix admitted and made the most of the danger;

¹ Smith to Elizabeth, May, 1565: *French MSS. Rolls House*.

‘her enemies,’ he allowed, ‘all over the world were wishing to see Mary Stuart and Darnley married,’ and unfortunately there were also clearsighted, able English statesmen who desired it as well, as a means of uniting the crowns. ‘But your Majesty,’ he added, ‘has in your hands both your own safety and your rival’s ruin. France has been the shield of Scotland in its English wars. Take that shield for yourself. The world is dangerous, the strongest will fare the best, and your Majesty knows that the Queen of Scots dreads no one thing so much as your marriage with the most Christian King.’

With mournful irony Elizabeth replied that she did not deserve so much happiness.¹ The English council in pressing her to take a husband was thinking less of a foreign alliance than of an heir to the crown; and the most Christian King was unwelcome to her advisers for the reason perhaps for which she would have preferred him to any other suitor. The full-grown, able-bodied Archduke Charles was the person on whom the hearts of the truest of her statesmen had long been fixed. The Queen referred de Foix to the council; and the council, on the 2nd of June, informed him ‘that on mature consideration and with a full appreciation of the greatness of the offer, the age of the King of France, the uncertainty of the English succession, and the unlikelihood of children from that marriage, for

¹ Paul de Foix to the Queen-mother, June 3: TEULET, vol. ii.

several years at least, obliged them to advise their mistress to decline his proposals.’¹

The next day Elizabeth sent for the ambassador of the Duke of Wurtemberg who was acting in England in behalf of Maximilian. She told him that she had once resolved to live and die a maiden Queen; but she deferred to the remonstrances of her subjects, and she desired him to tell the Emperor that she had at last made up her mind to marry.² She had inquired of the Spanish ambassador whether the King of Spain still wished to see her the wife of his cousin. The ambassador had assured her that the King could not be more anxious if the Archduke had been a child of his own. She said that she could not bind herself to accept a person whom she had never seen; but she expressed her earnest wish that the Archduke should come to England.

The minister of Wurtemberg in writing to Maximilian added his own entreaties to those of the Queen; he said that ‘there was no fear for the Archduke’s honour; the Queen’s situation was so critical that if the Archduke would consent to come she could not dare to affront the Imperial family by afterwards refusing his hand.’³

¹ MIGNET’S *Mary Stuart*, vol. i. p. 146.

² ‘Se constituísse nunc núbere.’

³ Adam Schetowitz to Maximilian, June 4, 1565: *Burghley Papers*, vol. i

CHAPTER XLIV.

THE DARNLEY MARRIAGE.

THE two Queens were again standing in the same relative positions which had led to the crisis of 1560. Mary Stuart was once more stretching out her hand to grasp Elizabeth's crown. From her recognition as heir-presumptive, the step to a Catholic revolution was immediate and certain ; and Elizabeth's affectation of Catholic practices would avail little to save her. Again, as before, the stability of the English Government appeared to depend on the maintenance of the Protestants in Scotland ; and again the Protestants were too weak to protect themselves without help from abroad. The House of Hamilton was in danger from the restitution of Lennox and the approaching elevation of Darnley ; the Earl of Lennox claimed the second place in the Scotch succession in opposition to the Duke of Chatelherault ; and the Queen of Scots had avowed her intention of entailing her crown in the line of the Stuarts. Thus there were the same parties and the same divisions. But the Protestants were split among themselves among the counter-influences of hereditary alliance and passion. The cession of

her claims on the lands of Angus by Lady Margaret. had won to Darnley's side the powerful and dangerous Earl of Morton, and had alienated from Murray the kindred houses of Ruthven and Lindsay. There was no longer an Arran marriage to cajole the patriotism of the many noblemen to whom the glory of Scotland was dearer than their creed ; and all those whose hearts were set on winning for a Scotch prince or princess the English succession were now devoted to their Queen. Thus the Duke of Chatelherault with the original group who had formed the nucleus of the Congregation—Murray, Argyle, Glencairn, Boyd, and Ochiltree—found themselves alone against the whole power of their country.

Secure on the side of France, Elizabeth would have been less uneasy at the weakness of the Protestants, had the loyalty of her own subjects been open to no suspicion ; but the state of England was hardly more satisfactory than that of Scotland. In 1560 the recent loss of Calais and the danger of foreign invasion had united the nation in defence of its independence. Two-thirds of the peers were opposed at heart to Cecil's policy ; but the menaces of France had roused the patriotism of the nation. Spain was then perplexed and neutral ; and the Catholics had for a time been paralyzed by the recent memories of the Marian persecution.

Now, although the dangers were the same, Elizabeth's embarrassments were incomparably greater. The studied trifling with which she had disregarded the general anxiety for her marriage had created a party for the

Queen of Scots amidst the most influential classes of the people. The settlement of the succession was a passion among them which amounted to a disease; while the union of the crowns was an object of rational desire to every thoughtful English statesman. The Protestants were disheartened; they had gained no wisdom by suffering; the most sincere among them were as wild and intolerant as those who had made the reign of Edward a by-word of mismanagement; the Queen was as unreasonable with them on her side as they were extravagant on theirs; while Catholicism, recovering from its temporary paralysis, was reasserting the superiority which the matured creed of centuries has a right to claim over the half-shaped theories of revolution. Had Mary Stuart followed the advice which Alva gave to her messenger at Bayonne, had she been prudent and forbearing and trusted her cause to time till Philip had disposed of the Turks and was at leisure to give her his avowed support, the game was in her hands. Her choice of Darnley, sanctioned as it was by Spain, had united in her favour the Conservative strength of England; and either Elizabeth must have allowed the marriage and accepted the Queen of Scots as her successor, or she must have herself yielded to pressure, fulfilled her promises at last, and married the Archduke Charles.

This possibility and this alone created Mary's difficulties. She knew what Philip's engagements meant; she knew that Spain desired as little as France to see England and Scotland a united and powerful kingdom; and that if Elizabeth could be recalled out of her evil

ways by a Catholic alliance, the cabinet of Madrid would think no more of Darnley or herself. She would have to exchange an immediate and splendid triumph for the doubtful prospect of the eventual succession should her rival die without a child.

Nordid Elizabeth herself misunderstand the necessity to which she would be driven, unless Mary Stuart saved her by some false move. She had played so often with the Archduke's name that her words had ceased to command belief; but at last she was thinking of him seriously—the more seriously perhaps because many Englishmen who had before been most eager to provide her with a husband were now as well or better satisfied with the prospect of the succession of the Queen of Scots.

'The Queen,' de Silva wrote on the 8th of June to Philip, 'has taken alarm at the divisions among her subjects. A great many of them she is well aware are in favour of Lord Darnley and Mary Stuart. Several of the most powerful noblemen in England have long withdrawn from the Court and are looking to this marriage for the union of the two crowns. The Queen must now come to a resolution about the Archduke Charles. She understands fully that a marriage with him is the sole means left to her of preserving her alliance with your Majesty, of resisting her enemies, and of preventing a rebellion. She detests the thought of it; and yet so strange is her position that she dares not encounter Parliament for fear her excuses may be accepted. The people have ceased to care whether she

marries or remains single; they are ready to entail the crown on the King and Queen of Scotland.

‘Her hope at present is to throw Scotland into confusion with the help of the Duke of Chatelherault, who cannot endure that the House of Lennox should be preferred to the Hamiltons. She is frightening the Huguenots in France by telling them that if the Queen of Scots obtains the English crown she will avenge her uncle’s death and assist the Catholics to extirpate them. She will temporize till she see how her tricks succeed. If she can save herself by any other means she will not marry.’¹

The two players were not ill-matched, though for the present the Queen of Scots had the advantage. ‘The matter,’ said Sir Thomas Smith, ‘was not so suddenly done as suddenly it did break out; the practice was of an elder time. It was finely handled to make the Queen’s Majesty a labourer for the restitution of the father and a sender in of the son.’² Elizabeth had been outmanœuvred and had placed herself in a perilous dilemma. Half the council had advised her to demand the extradition of Darnley and Lennox and declare war if it was refused. She had rejected the bolder part of the advice; but she had allowed Throgmorton to promise Murray and his friends that if they interfered by force to prevent the marriage they should be supported by England; and if they rose in arms and failed, and if they called upon her to fulfil her engagements,

¹ ‘Por las Cartas de Londres, de viii. Junio, 1565.’—*MS. Simancas.*

² Smith to Cecil, July 3: *French MSS. Rolls House.*

she would have to comply and run all hazards, or she would justify the worst suspicions which the Scotch Protestants already entertained of her sincerity, and convert into enemies the only friends that she possessed among Mary Stuart's subjects.

In the first outburst of her anger she seemed prepared to dare everything. After the departure of Throgmorton from Scotland the Queen of Scots sent Hay of Balmerinoch with a letter in which she protested with the most innocent simplicity that in all which she had done she had been actuated only by the purest desire to meet her dear sister's wishes; that she was alike astonished and grieved to hear that she had done wrong; but that as Elizabeth was dissatisfied she would refer the question once more to a commission; and on her own side she proposed the unsuspecting names of Murray, Maitland, Morton, and Glencairn.¹

Had Elizabeth complied with this suggestion she would have committed herself to an admission that a question existed, and that the Darnley marriage was not wholly intolerable. She had no intention of admitting anything of the kind. She replied with requiring Lennox and Darnley on their allegiance to return immediately to England; and the Queen of Scots' letter she answered only with a request that they might be sent home without delay.

Neither Lennox nor Mary expected such peremptory dealing. The order of return was short of a declaration

¹ The Queen of Scots to the Queen of England, June 14 : KEITH.

of war, and some of those who knew Elizabeth best did not believe that war was coming ;¹ but Mary Stuart knew too well her own intentions to escape misgivings that the Queen of England might be as resolute as herself. When Randolph presented the letter with the message which accompanied it, she burst into tears ; Lennox was silent with dismay ; Darnley alone, too foolish to comprehend the danger, remained careless and defiant,² and said shortly ‘ he had no mind to return.’ Mary Stuart as soon as she could collect herself said she trusted that her good sister did not mean what she had written. Randolph replied that she most certainly did mean it ; and speaking plainly, as his habit was, he added ‘ that if they refused to return and her Grace comforted them in so doing, the Queen his mistress had both power and will to be revenged on them, being her subjects.’

From the Court Randolph went to Argyle and Murray, who had ascertained meanwhile that there was no time to lose ; the Bishop of Dunblane had been sent

¹ Paul de Foix to Catherine de Medici, June 18 : TEULET, vol. ii.

² A sad and singular horoscope had already been cast for Darnley. ‘ His behaviour,’ Randolph wrote to Cecil, ‘ is such that he is come in open contempt of all men that were his chief friends. What shall become of him I know not ; but it is greatly to be feared he can have no long life amongst this people. The Queen,

being of better understanding, seeketh to frame and fashion him to the nature of her subjects ; but no persuasion can alter that which custom hath made in him. He is counted proud, disdainful, and suspicious. which kind of men this soil of any other can least bear.’—Randolph to Cecil, July 2 : *Cotton. MSS.* CALIG. B. 10. Printed in KEITH.

to the Pope; Mary Stuart had obtained money from Flanders; she had again sent for Bothwell, and she meant immediate mischief. The two Earls expressed their belief that 'the time was come to put to a remedy.' 'They saw their sovereign determined to overthrow religion received, and sore bent against those that desired the amity with England to be continued, which two points they were bound in conscience to maintain and defend.' They had resolved therefore 'to withstand such attempts with all their power, and to provide for their sovereign's estate better than she could at that time consider for herself.' They intended to do nothing which was not for their mistress's real advantage; Sir Nicholas Throgmorton had assured them of the Queen of England's 'godly and friendly offer to concur with and assist them;' the Queen of England's interest was as much concerned as their own; and they 'humbly desired the performance of her Majesty's promises:' they did not ask for an English army; if her Majesty would give them three thousand pounds they could hold their followers together, and would undertake the rest for themselves; Lennox and Darnley could be seized and 'delivered into Berwick,' if her Majesty would receive them.

To these communications Randolph replied with renewed assurances that Elizabeth would send them whatever assistance they required. He gave them the warmest encouragement to persevere and as to the father and son whom they proposed to

July.

kidnap, the English Government, he said, 'could not and would not refuse their own in what sort soever they came.'¹

The Queen of Scots was not long in receiving intelligence of what the lords intended against her. She sent a message to her brother requesting that he would meet her at Perth. As he was mounting his horse a hint was given him that if he went he would not return alive, and that Darnley and Rizzio had formed a plan to kill him. He withdrew to his mother's castle at Lochleven and published the occasion of his disobedience. Mary Stuart replied with a countercharge that the Earl of Murray had proposed to take her prisoner and carry off Darnley to England. Both stories were probably true: Murray's offer to Randolph is sufficient evidence against himself. Lord Darnley's conspiracy against the Earl was no more than legitimate retaliation. Civil war was fast approaching; and it is impossible to acquit Elizabeth of having done her best to foster it. Afraid to take an open part lest she should have an insurrection on her own hands at home, she was ready to employ to the uttermost the assistance of the Queen of Scots' own subjects, and she trusted to diplomacy or accident to extricate herself from the consequences.

On receiving Randolph's letter, which explained with sufficient clearness the intentions of the Protestant noblemen, she not only did not find fault with the en-

¹ Randolph to Cecil, July 2 and July 4: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*
Printed in KEITH.

gagements to which he had committed her, but she directed him under her own hand to assure them of her perfect satisfaction with the course which they were preparing to pursue. She could have entertained no sort of doubt that they would use violence; yet she did not even conceal her approbation under ambiguous or uncertain phrases. She said that they should find her 'in all their just and honourable causes regard their state and continuance;' 'if by malice or practice they were forced to any inconveniency they should find no lack in her;' she desired merely that in carrying out their enterprise they would 'spend no more money than their security made necessary, nor less which might bring danger.'¹

As the collision drew near both parties prepared for it by endeavouring to put themselves right with the country. No sooner was it generally known in Scotland that the Queen intended to marry a Catholic than the General Assembly rushed together at Edinburgh. The extreme Protestants were able to appeal to the fulfilment of their predictions of evil when Mary Stuart was permitted the free exercise of her own religion. Like the children of Israel on their entrance into Canaan, they had made terms with wickedness: they had sown the wind of a carnal policy and were now reaping the whirlwind. A resolution was passed—to which Murray, though he was present, no longer raised his voice in opposition—that the sovereign was

¹ Elizabeth to Randolph, July 10: *Printed in* KEITH.

not exempt from obedience to the law of the land, that the mass should be put utterly away, and the reformed service take the place of it in the royal chapel.

Mary Stuart had been described by Randolph as so much changed that those who had known her when she was under Murray's and Maitland's tutelage were astonished at the alteration; manner, words, features, all were different; in mind and body she was said to be swollen and disfigured by the tumultuous working of her passions.

So perhaps she may have appeared in Randolph's eyes; and yet the change may have been more in Randolph's power of insight than in the object at which he looked. Never certainly did she show herself cooler or more adroit than in her present emergency. She replied to the Assembly with returning from Perth to Edinburgh; and as a first step towards recovering their confidence she attended a Protestant sermon. To the resolution of the General Assembly she delayed her answer, but she issued circulars protesting that neither then nor at any past time had she entertained a thought of interfering with her subjects' religion; the toleration which she had requested for herself she desired only to extend to others; her utmost wish had been that her subjects might worship God freely in the form which each most approved.¹

A Catholic sovereign sincerely pleading to a Protestant Assembly for liberty of conscience might have

¹ Circular by the Queen, July 17.

been a lesson to the bigotry of mankind ; but Mary Stuart was not sincere ; and could the Assembly have believed her they would have thought her French teaching was bearing fruits more deadly than Popery itself. The Protestant respected the Catholic as an honest worshipper of something, though that something might be the devil. 'Liberty of conscience' was the crime of the Laodiceans, which hell and heaven alike rejected.

The attendance of Mary Stuart at sermon produced as little effect on the Congregation as Elizabeth's candles and crucifixes on the hatred of the English Papists. The elders of the Church dispersed ; Argyle, Murray, and their friends withdrew to Stirling ; and on the 18th of July they despatched a messenger to Elizabeth with a bond in which they pledged themselves to resist all attempts either to restore the Catholic ritual or to dissolve the English alliance. From their own sovereign they professed to hope for nothing but evil. They looked to the Queen of England 'as under God protectress most special of the professors of religion ;' and they thanked her warmly for the promises of help on which it was evident that they entirely relied.¹

They relied on those promises ; and to have doubted

¹ 'Understanding by your Highness's ambassador, Sir N. Throgmorton, and also by the information of your Majesty's servant Master Randolph, the good and gracious mind which your Majesty with con-

tinuance beareth to the maintenance of the Gospel and us that profess the same,' &c. —The Lords in Stirling to the Queen of England, July 18 : KEITH, vol. ii. p. 329.

them would have been nothing less than a studied insult. The English ambassador was ordered a second time, and more imperiously, to command Lennox and Darnley to go back to England; while avowedly by the direct instructions of his mistress he laid her thanks and wishes before the lords in a formal and written address.¹

RANDOLPH TO THE LORDS OF SCOTLAND.²

July, 1565.

‘Right Honourable and my very good Lords,—It is not out of your remembrance that Sir Nicholas Throgmorton being at Stirling ambassador for the Queen’s Majesty my mistress to the Queen’s Majesty your sovereign, it was declared at good length both to her Grace’s self and also to you of her honourable council, what misliking the Queen my mistress hath that the Lord Darnley should join marriage with the Queen your sovereign, for divers and weighty reasons; of which some were there presently rehearsed, others for great and weighty respects left unspoken until occasion better serve to utter her Majesty’s griefs for the strange manner of dealing that hath been used towards her divers ways and by divers persons contrary to that expectation she had. The Queen your sovereign having answered that she would in no wise alter her determination, the Queen my mistress commanded this

¹ It is necessary, at the risk of being tedious, to dwell on these particulars of Elizabeth’s conduct. Each separate promise was as a nail

which left a rent in her reputation when she endeavoured to free herself.

² *Lansdowne MSS. S.*

resolution and answer to be propounded in council, and to be considered according to the weight thereof, being touched thereby as well in honour as that it was against the repose and tranquillity of her Majesty's realm. And her Majesty's council remaining in that mind that before they were of—which is that divers ways it must needs be prejudicial to the amity of the two countries, that it tendeth greatly to the subversion of Christ's true religion received and established in them both, they have not only received that with content which your lordships have subscribed with your hands, but also have become suitors to your Majesty that she will provide for her own surety and the surety of the realm against all practices and devices, from wheresoever they be intended.

‘ And forasmuch as nothing is more needful for both the realms than the continuance of a good and perfect amity between them and those whose hearts God hath united in one true and perfect doctrine, they have also desired that it will please her Majesty that she will have consideration of the Protestants and true professors of religion in this realm of Scotland, that Christ's holy word may be continued amongst them, and the amity remain betwixt both the countries. And because of all the apparent troubles that may ensue, as well for the subversion of Christ's word in both the countries as also for the breach of amity, the Earl of Lennox and his son, the Lord Darnley, are known to be the authors. and many of their practices, as well in England, Scotland, and further parts, to that end discovered, it pleased

the Queen my mistress to begin at the root and ground of all these mischiefs, and thereof hath presently sent her express commandment to them both, charging them to leave the realm of Scotland, and repair unto her presence as they will avoid her Majesty's indignation; in refusing of which they shall give further occasion for her to proceed against them and their assisters than willingly she would.

‘And to the intent it may be further known what the Queen's my mistress's purpose is if they do contrary to this charge of her Majesty, I am commanded to assure all persons here that the Queen my mistress meaneth to let the Queen your sovereign well understand by her deeds how she can measure this dishonourable kind of dealing and manner of proceeding; and according to the effect of such answers as shall be given unto me, as well from the Queen's Majesty your sovereign as from the Earl of Lennox and his son, and what thereof shall follow, her Majesty meaneth to let it manifestly appear unto the world how to use her towards such as so far forget themselves.

‘To give also declaration of the tender care and good consideration the Queen my sovereign has over all those of this nation that mind to keep the realm without alteration of the religion received, and will not neglect her Majesty's friendship, I am commanded to assure all such as persist therein that it is fully resolved and determined to concur with them and assist them as either need or occasion shall press them.

‘This, my lords, being the effect of that which I

know to be my mistress's will and express commandment given unto me to communicate unto your lordships as I saw cause, and knowing now the time most fit for that purpose, I thought good to send this same to you in writing.'

In strict conformity with these promises, the Earl of Bedford returned to his charge on the Border: the Earl himself was under the impression that if the lords were in extremity he was to enter Scotland; and so satisfied and so confident was Murray, that he wrote to Bedford on the 22nd of July 'as to one to whom God had granted to know the subtle devices of Satan,' telling him that the force on which the Queen of Scots most relied lay among the Maxwells, the Humes, and the Kers of the Border, and begging him, as if he was already an auxiliary in the field, 'to stay off their power.'¹

Randolph presented his second demand for the return of the two noblemen to England. He spoke first to Mary Stuart, who, half frightened, half defiant, found herself on the edge of a conflict to which her own resources were manifestly inadequate, while she could not but feel some uncertainty after all how far she could rely on the secret promises of her English friends. She complained passionately that she had been trifled with; she spoke of Henry the Eighth's will, which she dared Elizabeth to produce, in obvious ignorance that had Elizabeth consented, her hopes of a peaceable succession

¹ Murray to Bedford, July 22: *KETHIL*.

would be gone for ever. Randolph told her she was 'abused.' She threatened that if the English Parliament meddled with the rights either of herself or of Darnley, she would 'seek friends elsewhere,' and would not fail to find them.

Randolph knew Mary well and knew her manner. He saw that she was hesitating, and he once more attempted expostulation. 'The Queen of England,' he truly said, 'had been her kindest friend. She might have compelled her to ratify the Treaty of Edinburgh; but she had passed it over; she had defended her claims when the Scotch succession had not another supporter; unless she had taken the crown from off her own head and given it to her, she could have done no more than she had done.'

Mary appeared to be moved. She asked if nothing could induce Elizabeth to allow her marriage with Lord Darnley. Randolph replied that after the attitude which she had assumed, the conditions would be stringent. A declaration would have to be made by herself and the Scotch Parliament that she made no pretensions to the English crown during the life of Elizabeth or her children; she must restore to her council the Protestant noblemen with whom she had quarrelled; and she must conform¹ to the religion established by law in Scotland.²

¹ It is interesting to observe how the current of the Reformation had swept Elizabeth forward in spite of herself.

² 'Qu'elle entretienne la religion | qui est aujourd'hui au Royaume, et en ce faisant recouvre, en sa bonne grace, et en leur premier estat ceulx qu'elle a aliéné d'elle; et qu'elle lui face declaration, autorisée par son

It was to ask Mary Stuart to sacrifice ambition, pride, revenge—every object for which she was mating herself with the paltry boy who was the cause of the disturbance. She said ‘she would make no merchandise of her conscience.’ Randolph requested in Elizabeth’s name that she would do no injury to the Protestant lords who were her ‘good subjects.’ She replied that Elizabeth might call them ‘good subjects;’ she had found them bad subjects, and as such she meant to treat them.

The turn of Lennox and Darnley came next. The ambassador communicated Elizabeth’s commands to them, and demanded a distinct answer whether they would obey or not. Lennox, to whom age had taught some lessons of moderation, replied that he was sorry to offend; but that he might not and durst not go. He with some justice might plead a right to remain; for he was a born Scot and was living under his first allegiance. Darnley, like a child who has drifted from the shore in a tiny pleasure boat, his sails puffed out with vanity, and little dreaming how soon he would be gazing back on England with passionate and despairing eyes, replied ‘that he acknowledged no duty or obedience save to the Queen of Scots,’ whom he served and honoured; ‘and seeing,’ he continued, ‘that the other your mistress is so envious of my good fortune, I doubt not but she may also have need of me, as you shall know within few days;

Parlement qu’elle ne pretend rien au
 Royaulme d’elle, ne de sa posterité.’
 —Analyse d’une dépêche de M. de

Foix au Roy, August 12 : TEULET,
 vol. ii.

wherefore to return I intend not ; I find myself very well where I am, and so I purpose to keep me ; and this shall be for your answer.'

'You have much forgotten your duty, sir, in such spiteful words,' Randolph answered ; 'it is neither discreetly spoken of you nor otherwise to be answered by me than that I trust to see the wreck and overthrow of as many as are of the same mind.'

So saying, the stout servant of Elizabeth turned on his heel 'without reverence or farewell.'¹

Elizabeth's attitude and Randolph's language were as menacing as possible. But experience had taught Mary Stuart that between the threats and the actions of the Queen of England there was always a period of irresolution ; and that with prompt celerity she might crush the disaffection of Scotland while her more dangerous enemy was making up her mind. She filled Edinburgh with the retainers of Lennox and Huntly ; she summoned Murray to appear and prove his accusations against Darnley under pain of being declared a traitor ; she sent a message through de Silva to Philip that her subjects had risen in insurrection against her with the support of the Queen of England to force her to change her religion ;² and interpreting the promise of three months' delay, which she had made to Throgmorton as meaning a delay into the third month, she resolved to close one element of the controversy and place the marriage itself beyond debate. On the evening of the 28th of July Edinburgh

¹ Randolph to Cecil, July 21: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*

² De Silva to Philip, July 28: *MS. Simancas.*

was informed by trumpet and proclamation that the Queen of Scots having determined to take to herself as her husband Henry Earl of Ross and Albany, the said Henry was thenceforth to be designated King of Scotland, and in all acts and deeds his name would be associated with her own.¹ The crowd listened in silence. A single voice cried 'God save his Grace!' but the speaker was Lennox.

The next day, July the 29th, being Sunday, while the drowsy citizens of Edinburgh were still in their morning sleep, Mary Stuart became the wife of Darnley. The ceremony took place in the royal chapel just after sunrise. It was performed by a Catholic priest, and with the usual Catholic rites; the Queen for some strange reason appearing at the altar in a mourning dress of black velvet, 'such as she wore the doleful day of the burial of her husband.' Whether it was an accident—whether the doom of the House of Stuart haunted her at that hour with its fatal foreshadowings—or whether simply for a great political purpose she was doing an act which in itself she loathed, it is impossible to tell; but that black drapery struck the spectators with a cold uneasy awe.

But such dreamy vanities were soon forgotten. The deed was done which Elizabeth had forbidden. It re-

¹ The title was a mere sound. The crown matrimonial could be conferred only by Act of Parliament; nor would Mary Stuart share the reality of her power with a raw boy whose character she imperfectly

knew. But Darnley was impatient for the name of king; 'He would in no case have it deferred a day,' and the Queen was contented to humour him.

mained to be seen to what extremity Elizabeth in her resentment would be provoked. The lords had been long waiting at Stirling for a sign from Berwick ; but no sign came, and when the moment of extremity arrived Bedford had no definite orders. They remembered 1559, when they had been encouraged by similar promises to rebel, and when Elizabeth had trifled with her engagements so long and so dangerously. Elizabeth had given her word ; but it was an imperfect security ; and the uncertainty produced its inevitable effect in disheartening and dividing them. ‘ Though your intent be never so good to us,’ Randolph wrote to Leicester on the 31st of July, ‘ yet we fear your delay that our ruin shall prevent your support ; when council is once taken nothing is so needful as speedy execution : upon this we wholly depend ; in her Majesty’s hands it standeth to save our lives or suffer us to perish ; greater honour her Majesty cannot have than that which lieth in her power to do for us.’¹

While the Congregation were thus held in suspense, Mary Stuart was all fire, energy, and resolution. She understood at once that Elizabeth was hesitating ; she knew that she had little to fear from Argyle and Murray until they were supported in force from England ; and leaving no time for faction to disintegrate her own supporters or for the Queen of England to make up her mind, she sent letters to the noblemen on whom she could rely, desiring them to meet her in arms at Edinburgh on the 9th of August.

August.

¹ WRIGHT’S *Elizabeth*, vol. i.

Elizabeth as post after post came in from Scotland lost her breath at the rapidity of the Queen of Scots' movements; and resolution became more impossible as the need of it became more pressing. On receiving the news that the marriage was actually completed she despatched Tamworth, a gentleman of the bed-chamber, to assure the Queen of Scots that whatever might be pretended to the contrary she had throughout been sincerely anxious to support her interests. The Queen of Scots had not given her the credit which she deserved, and was now 'imagining something else in England to content her fancy, as vain persons sometimes would.' Leaving much to Tamworth's discretion, she bade him nevertheless let the Queen of Scots see that her present intentions were thoroughly understood. 'She was following the advice of those who were labouring to extirpate out of Scotland the religion received there;' the Protestants among her own subjects were to be destroyed 'to gain the favour of the Papists in England;' 'so as with the aid that they would hope to have of some prince abroad and from Rome also upon pretence of reformation in religion, she might when she should see time attempt the same that she did when she was married to France.' It was not for Elizabeth to say what might happen in Scotland; 'but for any other device that the Queen of Scots might be fed withal, she might be assured before God she would find all designs, consultations, intelligences, and advices, from wherever they might come to her, far or near, to be vain and deceitful.' Let her relinquish these idle imaginings, let her restore Murray to the council and un-

dertake to enter into no foreign alliance prejudicial to English interests, and she might yet regain the confidence of her true friends.

Had Tamworth's instructions gone no further they would have been useless without being mischievous; but a further message betrayed the fatal irresolution to which Elizabeth was yielding. A fortnight previously she had required the Queen of Scots to abandon her own creed; she now condescended to entreat that if her other requests were rejected the Scotch Protestants might at least be permitted to use their own religion without molestation.¹ She might have frightened Mary by a demonstration of force as prompt as her own. To show that she saw through her schemes, yet at the same time that she dared not venture beyond a feeble and hesitating protest, could but make the Queen of Scots desperate of further concealment, and encourage her to go forward more fearlessly than ever.

'Mary Stuart,' when Tamworth came into her presence, 'gave him words that bit to the quick.' To the Queen of England's suspicions she said she would reply with her 'own lawful demands.' 'The Queen of England spoke of imaginations and fancies;' 'she was sorry her good sister thought so disdainfully of her as she would meddle with simple devices. If things went so that she was driven to extremities and practices, she would make it appear to the world that her devices were not to be set at so small a price.' Playing on

¹ Instructions to Tamworth, August 1: *MS. Rolls House.*

Elizabeth's words with a straightforward but irritating irony, she said 'that by God's grace it should appear to the world that her designs, consultations, and intelligences would prove as substantial and no more vain and deceitful than such as her neighbours themselves had at any time taken in hand;' while as to Murray's restoration, she had never yet meddled between the Queen of England and her subjects; but now, 'induced by her good sister's example,' 'she would request most earnestly for the release and restoration to favour' of her mother-in-law the Lady Margaret, Countess of Lennox.¹

Had Philip of Spain been at Mary's shoulder he would have advised her to spare her sarcasms till an armada was in the Channel or till Elizabeth was a prisoner at her feet. As soon as she had made sure of Darnley he would have recommended her to omit no efforts for conciliation. She need not have relinquished one emotion of hatred or one aspiration for revenge; but she would have been taught to wait upon time to soothe down the irritation which she had roused, to cajole with promises, and to compel Elizabeth by the steady if slow pressure of circumstances to give way step by step.

But Mary Stuart was young and was a woman. Her tongue was ready and her passions strong. Philip cared sincerely for Romanism, Elizabeth cared for English liberty, the Earl of Murray cared for the doctrines

¹ Answer of the Queen of Scots to Tanworth: *Printed in KETH.*

of the Reformation; Mary Stuart was chiefly interested in herself, and she was without the strength of self-command which is taught only by devotion to a cause. So confident was she that in imagination she had already seated herself on Elizabeth's throne. To the conditions of friendship offered by Tamworth, she replied in language which could scarcely have been more peremptory had she entered London at the head of a victorious army. Not condescending to notice what was demanded of herself, she required Elizabeth immediately to declare her by Act of Parliament next in the succession; and failing herself and her children, to entail the crown on Lady Margaret Lennox and her children 'as the persons by the law of God and nature next inheritable.' The Queen of England should bind herself 'neither to do nor suffer to be done either by law or otherwise' anything prejudicial to the Scottish title; to abstain in future from all practices with subjects of the Scottish Crown; to enter no league and contract no alliance which could affect the Queen of Scots' fortunes unfavourably. On these terms, but on these alone, she would consent to leave Elizabeth in undisturbed possession during her own or her children's lifetime; she would abstain from encouraging the English Catholics to rise in rebellion in her behalf, and from inviting an invasion from Spain or France;¹ and she condescended to promise—to throw dust in the eyes of the Protestants in both countries—although she was receiving the sup-

¹ Offer of the King and Queen of Scotland, by Mr Tamworth, August, 1565: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

port of the Pope and seeking the support of the King of Spain in the sole interests of Romanism—that in the event of herself and her husband succeeding to the throne of England, the religion established there by law should not be interfered with.

An answer, every sentence of which must have stung Elizabeth like a whip-lash, might have for the moment satisfied Mary Stuart's passion; but her hatred of her sister of England was passing into contempt, and she believed she might trample upon her with impunity.

Tamworth having received his message desired to return with it to England. He applied for a passport, which was given him signed by Darnley as King of Scotland; and Elizabeth had forbidden him to recognize Darnley in any capacity but that of the Queen's husband. He desired that the wording might be changed: his request was refused. He requested that a guard might escort him to the Border: it could not be granted. He set out without attendance and without a safe-conduct: he was arrested and carried prisoner to Hume Castle.

The lords at Stirling had been already so perplexed by Elizabeth's timidity that they had broken up and dispersed. Argyle and Murray retired to the western Highlands, and sent an earnest message that unless they could be immediately relieved they would be overthrown.¹ The arrest of Tamworth added to their dismay. Yet in spite of past experience they could not

¹ Tamworth to Cecil and Leicester, August 10: *Scotch MSS., Rolls House*

believe Elizabeth capable of breaking promises so emphatically and so repeatedly made to them. They wrote through Randolph that they were still at the Queen of England's devotion. They would hold out as long as their strength lasted; but it was already tasked to the uttermost, and if left to themselves they would have to yield to superior force.

The catastrophe came quicker than they anticipated. The friends of the Congregation were invited by circulars to meet at Ayr on the 24th of August. On the 25th the Queen of Scots—after a tempestuous interview with Randolph, who had demanded Tamworth's release—mounted her horse and rode out of Edinburgh at the head of 5000 men to meet her enemies in the field. Darnley, in gilt armour, was at her side. She herself carried pistols in hand and pistols at her saddlebow. Her one peculiar hope was to encounter and destroy her brother, against whom, above and beyond his political opposition, she bore an especial and unexplained animosity.¹

¹ 'I never heard more outrageous words than she spoke against my Lord of Murray. She said she would rather lose her crown than not be revenged upon him. She has some further cause of quarrel with him than she cares to avow.'—Randolph to Cecil, August 27: *MS. Rolls House*. Shortly after, Randolph imagined that he had discovered the 'further cause.' 'The hatred conceived against my Lord of Murray is neither for his religion

nor yet for that she now speaketh—that he would take the crown from her, as she said lately to myself—but that she knoweth that he knoweth some such secret fact, not to be named for reverence sake, that standeth not with her honour, which he so much detesteth, being her brother, that neither can he show himself as he hath done, nor she think of him but as of one whom she mortally hateth. Here is the mischief, this is the grief; and how this may be

With the money sent her from abroad she had contrived to raise six hundred 'harquebussmen,' whom the half-armed retainers of the lords could not hope to engage successfully. Passing Linlithgow and Stirling she swept swiftly round to Glasgow, and cut off the retreat of the Protestants into the western hills. A fight was looked for at Hamilton, where 'a hundred gentlemen of her party determined to set on Murray in the battle, and either slay him or tarry behind lifeless.'¹

Outnumbered—for they had in all but 1300 horse—and outmanœuvred by the rapid movements of the Queen, the Protestants fell back on Edinburgh, where they expected the citizens to declare for them. On the last of August, six days after Mary Stuart had left

solved and repaired it passeth man's wit to consider. This reverence, for all that he hath to his sovereign, that I am sure there are very few that know this grief; and to have this obloquy and reproach of her removed, I believe he would quit his country for all the days of his life.'—Randolph to Cecil, October 13: *MS. Ibid.*

The mystery alluded to was apparently the intimacy of Mary Stuart with Rizzio, which was already so close and confidential as to provoke calumny. In the face of Randolph's language it is difficult to say for certain that Mary Stuart had never transgressed the permitted limits of propriety; yet it is more likely that a person so careless of the opinions of others, and so warm and true in her friendships, should

have laid herself open to remark through some indiscretion, than that she should have seriously compromised her character. It seems certain that Murray intended to have hanged Rizzio. Paul de Foix asked Elizabeth for an explanation of the Queen of Scots' animosity against her brother:—

'Elle s'estant ung peu teue, et secoué sa teste, me respondit que c'estoit pour ce que la Royne d'Escosse avoit esté informée que le Comte de Murray avoit voullu pendre ung Italien nommé David qu'elle aymoît et favorisoit, luy donnant plus de credit que ses affaires et honneur ne devoient.'—Paul de Foix au Roy: TEULET, vol. ii.

¹ Randolph to Cecil, September 4: *MS. Rolls House.*

Holyrood, Chatelherault, Murray, Glencairn, Rothes, Boyd, Kirkaldy, and a few more gentlemen, rode with their servants into the West Port, and sending a courier to Berwick with a pressing entreaty for help, they prepared to defend themselves. But the Calvinist shopkeepers who could be so brave against a miserable priest had no stomach for a fight with armed men. The Queen was coming fast behind them like an avenging fury; and Erskine, who was inclining to the royal side, began to fire on the lords from the castle. 'In the town they could find neither help nor support from any one,' and the terrified inhabitants could only entreat and even insist that they should depart. A fortnight before, a little money and a few distinct words from England would have sufficed to save them. Mary Stuart's courage and Elizabeth's remissness had by this time so strengthened the party of the Queen that 'little good could now be done without greater support than could be in readiness in any short time.' The lords could only retire towards the Border and wait Elizabeth's pleasure. 'What was promised,' Randolph passionately wrote to Cecil, 'your honour knoweth. Oh that her Majesty's mind was known! If the Earl of Bedford have only commission to act in this matter both Queens may be in one country before long. In the whole world if there be a more malicious heart towards the Queen my sovereign than hers that here now reigneth, let me be hanged at my home-coming or counted a villain for ever.'¹

¹ Randolph to Cecil, September 4: *MS. Rolls House*

Mary meanwhile had re-entered Edinburgh, breathing nothing but anger and de-^{September.} fiance. Argyle was in his own Highlands wasting the adjoining lands of Athol and Lennox ; but she scarcely noticed or cared for Argyle. The affection of a sister for a brother was curdled into a hatred the more malignant because it was unnatural. Her whole passion was concentrated on Murray, and after Murray on Elizabeth.

The day before she had left Holyrood for the west an Englishman named Yaxlee had arrived there from Flanders. This person, who has been already mentioned as in the service of Lady Lennox, had been employed by her as the special agent of her correspondence with the continental Courts. Lady Lennox being now in the Tower, Yaxlee followed the fortunes of her son, and came to Scotland to place himself at the disposal of Mary Stuart. He was a conspirator of the kind most dangerous to his employers, vain, loud, and confident, fond of boasting of his acquaintance with kings and princes, and 'promising to bring to a good end whatsoever should be committed to him.' 'The wiser sort' soon understood and avoided him. The Queen of Scots however allowed herself to be persuaded by her husband, and placed herself in Yaxlee's power. She told him all her schemes at home and all the promises which had been made to her abroad. The Bishop of Dunblane at Rome had requested the Pope to lend her twelve thousand men, and the Pope was waiting only for Philip's sanction and co-operation to send

them.¹ She selected Yaxlee to go on a mission to Spain to explain her position, and to 'remit her claims, prospects, and the manner of the prosecution thereof' to Philip's judgment and direction.

Vain of the trust reposed in him, the foolish creature was unable to keep his counsel. His babbling tongue revealed all that he knew and all that he was commissioned to do; and the report of it was soon in Cecil's hands.²

Philip would no doubt be unwilling to move. Philip, like Elizabeth, was fond of encouraging others to run into difficulties by promises which he repudiated if they were inconvenient; and in this particular instance Mary Stuart had gone beyond his advice and had placed herself in a position against which the Duke of Alva had pointedly warned her. But the fears of the Spaniards for the safety of the Low Countries were every day increasing; they regarded England as the fountain from which the heresies of the continent were fed; and they looked to the recovery of it to the Church as the only means of restoring order in their own provinces.³

¹ Capitulo de Cartas del Cardinal Pacheco á su Mag^a., 2 September, 1565: *MS. Simancas*.

² 'Memoir of the proceedings of Francis Yaxlee,' in Cecil's handwriting: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10*. The name of the person is left blank in Cecil's manuscript, but a French translation of the memoir was found in Paris by M. Teulet, and on the margin is written, 'Celluy qui est laissé en blanc c'est Yaxlee.'

³ 'Esta materia de Escocia y de aqui es de tanta importancia como se puede considerar; porque si este Reyno se reduxiese, parece que se quitará la fuente de los hereges de Flanders y de Francia, y aun las intelligencias de Alemania, que, como aqui, hay necesidad destas malas ayudas para sostenerse.'—De Silva to Philip, August 20 *MS. Simancas*.

Elizabeth was perfectly aware of the dangers which were thickening round her, and the effect was to end her uncertainty and to determine her to shake herself clear from the failing fortunes of the noblemen whom she had invited to rebel. They had halted at Dumfries, close to the Border, where Murray, thinking that ‘nothing worse could happen than an agreement while the Queen of Scots had the upper hand and they without a force in the field,’ was with difficulty keeping together the remnant of his party. The Earl of Bedford, weary of waiting for instructions which never came, wrote at last half in earnest and half in irony to Elizabeth to propose that she should play over again the part which she had played with Winter; he would himself enter Scotland with the Berwick garrison, and ‘her Majesty could afterwards seem to blame him for attempting such things as with the help of others he could bring about.’² But Elizabeth was too much frightened to consent even to a vicarious fulfilment of her promises. She replied that if the lords were in danger of being taken the Earl might cover their retreat into England; she sent him three thousand pounds which if he pleased he might place in their hands; but he must give them to understand precisely that both the one and the other were his own acts, for which she would accept neither thanks nor responsibility. ‘You shall make them perceive your case to be such,’ she said, ‘as if it should appear otherwise your danger should be so great as all the friends

¹ Murray to Randolph, Sep-
tember 8: *MS. Rolls House*.

² Bedford to Elizabeth: *MS.*
Ibid.

you have could not be able to save you towards us.' ¹

At times she seemed to struggle with her ignominy, but it was only to flounder deeper into distraction and dishonour. Once she sent for the French ambassador: she told him that the Earl of Murray and his friends were in danger for her sake and through her means; the Queen of Scots was threatening their lives; and she swore she would aid them with all the means which God had given, and she would have all men know her determination. But the next moment, as if afraid of what she had said, she stooped to a deliberate lie. De Foix had heard of the 3000*l.*, and had ascertained beyond doubt that it had been sent from the Treasury; yet when he questioned Elizabeth about it she took refuge behind Bedford, and swore she had sent no money to the lords at all. ²

'It fears me not a little,' wrote Murray on the 21st, 'that these secret and covered pretendings of the Queen's Majesty there, as matters now stand, shall never put this cause to such end as we both wish, but open declaration would apparently bring with it no doubt.' ³ 'If her Majesty will openly declare herself,' said Bedford, 'uncertain hearts will be determined again and all will go well.' ⁴

Paul de Foix himself, notwithstanding his knowledge of Elizabeth, was unable to believe that she would

¹ Elizabeth to Bedford, September 12: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² De Foix to the Queen-mother, September 18: TEULET, vol. ii.

³ Murray to Bedford, September 21: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

⁴ Bedford to Cecil: *MS. Ibid.*

persevere in a course so discreditable and so dangerous. So easy it would be for her to strike Mary Stuart down, if she had half the promptitude of Mary herself, that it seemed impossible to him that she would neglect the opportunity. As yet the party of the Queen of Scots had no solid elements of strength: Rizzio was the chief councillor; the Earl of Athol was the General—‘a youth without judgment or experience, whose only merit was a frenzied Catholicism.’¹ Catherine de Medici, who thought like de Foix, and desired to prevent Elizabeth from becoming absolute mistress of Scotland, sent over Castelnau de Mauvissière to mediate between the Queen of Scots and her subjects. But Mary Stuart understood better the temperament with which she had to deal; she knew that Elizabeth was thoroughly cowed and frightened, and that she had nothing to fear. She sent a message to Castelnau that she would allow neither France nor England to interfere between her and her revolted subjects; while her rival could only betake herself to her single resource in difficulty, and propose again to marry the Archduke.

There was something piteous as well as laughable in the perpetual recurrence of this forlorn subject. She was not wholly insincere. When pushed to extremity she believed that marriage might become her duty, and she imagined that she was willing to encounter it. The game was a dangerous one, for she had almost exhausted the patience of her subjects, who might compel her at

¹ De Foix to the Queen-mother, September 18: TEULET, vol. ii.

last to fulfil in earnest the hopes which she had excited. It would have come to an end long before had it not been that Philip, who was irresolute as herself, allowed his wishes for the marriage to delude him into believing Elizabeth serious whenever it was mentioned ; while the desirableness of the Austrian alliance in itself, and the extreme anxiety for it among English statesmen, kept alive the jealous fears of the French. To de Silva the Queen appeared a vain, capricious woman, whose pleasure it was to see the princes of Europe successively at her feet ; yet he too had expected that if her Scotch policy failed she would take the Archduke in earnest at last, and thus the value of the move was not yet wholly played away, and she could use his name once more to hold her friends and her party together.

As a matter of course, when the Archduke was talked of on one side the French had their candidate on the other ; and Charles the Ninth being no longer in question, Paul de Foix threw his interest on the side of Leicester. While the Queen of Scots was displaying the spirit of a sovereign and accomplishing with uncommon skill the first steps of the Catholic revolution, Elizabeth was amusing herself once more with balancing the attractions of her lover and the Austrian prince : not indeed that she any longer wished to marry even the favoured Lord Robert ; ‘ If she ever took a husband,’ she said to de Foix, ‘ she would give him neither a share of her power nor the keys of her treasury ; her subjects wanted a successor, and she would use the husband’s services to obtain such a thing ; but under any aspect the thought

of marriage was odious to her, and when she tried to make up her mind it was as if her heart was being torn out of her body.’¹

Yet Leicester was fooled by the French into a brief hope of success. He tried to interest Cecil in his cause by assuring him that the Queen would marry no one but himself; and Cecil mocked him with a courteous answer, and left on record, in a second table of contrasts with the Archduke, his own intense conviction of Leicester’s worthlessness.²

A ludicrous Court calamity increased the troubles of the Queen and with them her unwillingness to declare war against the Queen of Scots. The three daughters of the Duke of Suffolk had been placed one after the other in the line of succession by Henry the Eighth. Lady Jane was dead; Lady Catherine was dying from the effects of her long and cruel imprisonment; the third, Lady Mary, had remained at the Court, and one evening in August when the Scotch plot was thickening got herself married in the palace itself ‘by an old fat priest in a short gown’ to Thomas Keys the sergeant porter.³ Lady Mary was ‘the smallest woman in the Court,’ Keys

¹ She said she was resolved—
 ‘Ne departir jamais à celui qui
 seroit son mary ni de ses biens ni
 forces ni moyens, ne voulant s’ayder
 de luy que pour laisser successeur
 d’elle à ses subjectz; mais quand
 elle pensoit de ce faire, il luy sem-
 bloit que l’on luy arrachast le cœur
 du ventre; tant elle en estoit de son
 naturel eslonguée.’—Paul de Foix

to the Queen-mother, August 22:
 TEULET, vol. ii.

² ‘De Matrimonio Regine Angliæ.’ Reasons against the Earl of Leicester: *Burghley Papers*, vol. i.

³ This marriage was before mentioned by me as having taken place at the same time with that of Lady Jane Grey and Guilford Dudley. I was misled by Dugdale.

was the largest man, and that seemed to have been the chief bond of connection between them. The lady was perhaps anxious for a husband and knew that Elizabeth would keep her single till she died. Discovery followed before worse had happened than the ceremony. The burly sergeant porter was sent to the Fleet to grow thin on discipline and low diet; the Lady Mary went into private confinement; and both were only too eager to release each other and escape from punishment. The bishops were set to work by the council to undo the knot and found it no easy matter.¹ Elizabeth had a fresh excuse for her detestation of the Greys and a fresh topic on which to descant in illustration of the iniquities of matrimony.

De Mauvissière meanwhile, undeterred by the Queen of Scots' message, had made his way to Edinburgh, but only to find that he had come upon a useless errand. The Earl of Bothwell had rejoined Mary Stuart in the middle of her triumph, 'a man,' said Randolph, 'fit to be made a minister of any shameful act against God or man;' ² and Bothwell's hatred for Murray drew him closer than ever to Mary's side. In the full confidence of success and surrounded by persons whose whole aim was to feed the fire of her passion, she would listen to nothing which de Mauvissière could urge. In vain he warned her of the experience of France; in vain he re-

¹ Privy Council Register, August, 1565. Proceedings of council on the marriage of the Lady Mary Grey: *MS. Domestic, Elizabeth*,

Rolls House. Bishop of London to Cecil: *MS. Ibid.*

² Randolph to Cecil, September 20: *each MSS. Rolls House*.

mind her of the siege of Leith and of the madness of risking a quarrel with her powerful and dangerous neighbour. 'Scotland,' she said, 'should not be turned into a republic; she would sooner lose her crown than wear it at the pleasure of her revolted subjects and the Queen of England; instead of advising her to make peace, Catherine de Medici should have stepped forward to her side and assisted her to avenge the joint wrongs of France and Scotland; if France failed her in her extremity, grieved as she might be to leave her old allies, she would take the hand which was offered her by Spain; she would submit to England—never.'¹

From the moment when she had first taken the field, she had given her enemies no rest; she had swept Fife, the hotbed of the Protestants, as far as St Andrew's. The old Laird of Lundy—he who had called the mass the mickle deil—was flung into prison and his friends and his family had to fly for their lives. At the end of September she was pausing to recover breath at Holyrood before she made her last swoop upon the party at Dumfries. The Edinburgh merchants found her money, her soldiers with lighted matchlocks assisting them to unloose their purse-strings. With October she would march to the Border, and in her unguarded moments she boasted that she would take her next rest at the gates of London.²

It was now necessary for Elizabeth to come to some

¹ Castelnau de Mauvissière to Paul de Foix, September: TEULET, vol. ii.

² Paul de Foix to the King of France, September 29: TEULET, vol. ii.

resolution which she could avow—either to interfere at once or distinctly to declare that she did not mean to interfere. Cecil, according to his usual habit, reviewed the situation and drew out in form its leading features. The two interests at stake were religion and the succession to the Crown. For religion ‘it was doubtful how to meddle in another prince’s controversy:’ ‘so far as politic laws were devised for the maintenance of the Gospel Christian men might defend it,’ ‘yet the best service which men could render to the truth was to serve God faithfully and procure by good living the defence thereof at His Almighty hand.’ The succession was at once more critical and more impossible to leave untouched. The Queen of Scots appeared to intend to exact her recognition as ‘second person’ at the point of the sword. The unwillingness of the Queen of England to marry had unsettled the minds of her subjects, who, ‘beholding the state of the Crown to depend only on the breath of one person,’ were becoming restless and uneasy; and there were symptoms on all sides which pointed ‘towards a civil quarrel in the realm.’ The best remedy would be the fulfilment of the hopes which had been so long held out to the nation. If the Queen would marry all danger would at once be at an end. If she could not bring herself to accept that alternative, she might make the intrigues of the Scottish Queen with her Catholic subjects, the practising with Rome, the language of Darnley to Randolph, and the continued refusal to ratify the Treaty of Edinburgh, a ground for declaring war.¹

¹ Note in Cecil’s hand, September, 1565: *MS. Rolls House*

Every member of the council was summoned to London. The suspected Earls of Cumberland, Westmoreland, and Northumberland were invited to the Court, to remove them from the Border where they would perhaps be dangerous; and day after day the advisers of the Crown sat in earnest and inconclusive deliberation. A lucid statement was drawn up of Mary Stuart's proceedings from the day of Elizabeth's accession; every aggressive act on her part, every conciliatory movement of the Queen of England, were laid out in careful detail to assist the council in forming a judgment; the history was brought down to the latest moment, and one only important matter seems to have been withheld—the unfortunate promises which Elizabeth had made to the Earl of Murray and his friends at a time when she believed that a demonstration in Scotland would be sufficient to frighten Mary Stuart, and that she would never be called on to fulfil them.

In favour of sending assistance to the Protestant noblemen, it was urged that the Queen of Scots notoriously intended to overthrow the reformed religion, and to make her way to the English throne; the title of the Queen of England depended on the Reformation; if the Pope's authority was restored she would no longer be regarded as legitimate. To sit still in the face of the attitude which the Queen of Scots had assumed was to encourage her to continue her practices; and it was more prudent to encounter an enemy when it could be done at small cost and in her own country than to wait to be overtaken at home by war and rebellion which would be a thousand times more dangerous and costly.

On the other hand, to defend the insurgent subjects of a neighbouring sovereign was a dangerous precedent. If Elizabeth was justified in maintaining the Scotch Protestants, the King of Spain might claim as fair a right to interfere in behalf of the English Catholics. The form which a war would assume, and the contingencies which might arise from it, could not be foreseen, while the peril and expense were immediate and certain.

The arguments on both sides were so evenly balanced that it was difficult to choose between them. The council however, could it be proved that the Queen of Scots was in communication with the Pope to further her designs on England, were ready to consider that ‘a great matter.’ The name of the Pope was detested in England by men who believed themselves to hold every shred of Catholic doctrine; the creed was an opinion; the Pope was a political and most troublesome fact, with which under no circumstances were moderate English gentlemen inclined to have any more dealings. The Pope turned the scale; and the council, after some ineffectual attempts to find a middle course, resolved on immediately confiscating the estates of the Earl of Lennox; while they recommended the Queen to demand the ratification of the Treaty of Edinburgh, to send a fleet into the Forth, and to despatch a few thousand men to Berwick, to be at the disposal of the Earl of Bedford.¹

Had these steps been taken, either Mary Stuart must have yielded, or there would have been an immediate

¹ Notes of the Proceedings in Council at Westminster, September 24. In Cecil's hand: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.* *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

war. But the council, though consenting and advising a decided course, were still divided: Norfolk, Arundel, Winchester, Mason, and Pembroke were in favour in the main of the Queen of Scots' succession, and they regarded Calvinists and Calvinism with a most heartfelt and genuine detestation. Elizabeth in her heart resented the necessity of identifying herself with the party of John Knox, and her mood varied from day to day. After the resolution of the council on the 24th she spoke at length to the French ambassador in praise of Murray, who, if his sister could but have known it, she said, was her truest friend—a noble, generous, and good man; she was fully aware of the Queen of Scots' designs against her; and when de Foix entreated her not to break the peace, she refused to give him any assurances, and she told him that if France assisted Mary Stuart she should receive it as an act of hostility against herself.¹

But her energy spent itself in words, or rather both the Queen and those advisers whom she most trusted, even Sir William Cecil himself, oscillated backwards into a decision that the risk of war was too great to be encountered. The example might be fatal: the Catholic powers might interfere in England; the Romanists at home might mutiny; while to move an army was 'three times more chargeable than it was wont to be, whereof the experience at Havre might serve for example.'² Two days after their first resolution therefore the council

¹ Paul de Foix to the King of France, September 29; TEULET, vol. ii.

² 'Causes that move me not to consent presently to war,' September 26. Note in Cecil's hand: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*

assembled again, when Cecil informed them ‘that he found a lack of disposition in the Queen’s Majesty to allow of war or of the charges thereof;’ she would break her word to the lords whom she had encouraged into insurrection; but it was better than to run the risk of a conflagration which might wrap all England in its flames. The idea of forcible interference was finally abandoned. De Mauvissière remained at Edinburgh sincerely endeavouring to keep Mary within bounds; and Cecil himself wrote a private letter of advice to her which he sent by the hands of a Captain Cockburn. There were reasons for supposing that her violence might have begun to cool. Darnley had desired that the command of the army might be given to his father; the Queen of Scots had insisted on bestowing it upon Bothwell,¹ who had won her favour by promising to bring in Murray dead or alive;² and Lennox was holding off from the Court in jealous discontent.

Cockburn on his arrival at Holyrood placed
 October. himself in communication with de Mauvissière. They waited on Mary together; and, expatiating on the ruinous effect of the religious wars of the Guises which had filled France with rage and hatred, they entreated her for her own sake to beware of the miserable example. The French ambassador told her that if she looked for aid from abroad she was deceiving her-

¹ Randolph speaking of Mary Stuart’s relation with Bothwell at this time says—‘I have heard a thing most strange, whereof I will not make mention till I have better assurance than now I have.’—Randolph to Cecil, October 13: *MS. Rolls House*.

² Cockburn to Cecil, October 2: *MS. Ibid.*

self; France would not help her and would not permit the interference of Spain; so that she would bring herself 'to a hard end.' Cockburn 'spoke his mind freely to her to the same effect' and 'told her she was in great danger.'¹

Mary Stuart 'wept wondrous sore;' but, construing Elizabeth's unwillingness to declare war into an admission of her own strength, she was deaf to advice as she had been to menace. She disbelieved de Mauvissière and trusted soon to hear from Yaxlee that the Spanish fleet was on its way to the English Channel; at least she would not lose the chance of revenge upon her brother: 'she said she would hear of no peace till she had Murray's or Chatelherault's head.'²

A few hundred men from Berwick would probably have ended her power of so gratifying herself; yet on the other hand it might have been a spark to explode an insurrection in England; and Elizabeth preferred to hold aloof with her arm half raised—wishing yet fearing to strike—and waiting for some act of direct hostility against herself. As far as the peace of her own country was concerned her policy was no doubt a prudent one; but it was pursued at the expense of her honour; it ruined for the time her party in Scotland; and it was an occasion of fresh injury to the fugitives at Dumfries.

As soon as Murray with his few dispirited friends had reached the Border, he despatched Sir Robert Mel-

¹ Cockburn to Cecil, October 2; *MS. Rolls House*.

² Bedford to Cecil, October 5; *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

ville to London to explain his situation and to request in form the assistance which had been promised him. Elizabeth assured Melville that she was sorry for their condition. She bade him return and tell Murray that she would do her very best for himself and his cause; but she could not support him by arms without declaring war against the Queen of Scots, and she could not declare war 'without just cause.' If the Queen of Scots therefore were to offer him 'any tolerable conditions' she would not have him refuse; 'if on the other hand the indignation of the Queen was so cruelly intended as he and his companions could obtain no end with preservation of their lives, her Majesty, both for her private love towards those that were noblemen and of her princely honour and clemency towards such as were tyrannically persecuted, would receive them into her protection, save their persons and their lives from ruin, and so far would give them aid and succour;' she would send a commissioner to Scotland to intercede with the Queen, 'and with him also an army to be used as her Majesty should see just occasion given to her.'¹

The lords had become 'desperate of hope and as men dismayed;' they had repented bitterly of 'having trusted so much to England.'² Chatelherault, Glencairn, Kirkaldy—all in fact save Murray—desired to make terms with Mary, and were feeling their way towards recovering her favour at the expense of the Queen of England, whom they accused of betraying them.

¹ Answer to Robert Melville, October 1: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Bedford to Cecil, October 5: *MS. Ibid.*

When Melville returned with Elizabeth's answer it was interpreted into a fresh promise of interference in their behalf, not only by the lords, whom anxiety might have made sanguine, but by the bearer of the message to whom Elizabeth had herself spoken. They immediately recovered their courage, broke off their communications with the Queen of Scots, and prepared to continue their resistance.

Elizabeth would have done better if she had spoken less ambiguously. Mary Stuart, who had paused to ascertain what they would do, set out at once for the Border with Athol, Bothwell, and a motley force of 18,000 men. She rode in person at their head in steel bonnet and corselet, 'with a dagger at her saddlebow,'¹ declaring that 'all who held intercourse with England should be treated as enemies to the realm;' while Darnley boasted that he was about 'to be made the greatest that ever reigned in the isle of Britain.'² Rizzio was still the presiding spirit in Mary's council chamber. 'You may think,' wrote Randolph, 'what the matter meaneth that a stranger and a varlet should have the whole guiding of the Queen and country.'³ The army was but a confused crowd: of loyal friends the Queen could really count on none but Bothwell, young Athol, and perhaps Huntly; 'the rest were as like to turn against her as stand by her.' She perhaps trusted to some demonstration from Berwick to kindle

¹ Randolph to Cecil, October 13: 18: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*
Scotch MSS. Rolls House.

³ *MS. Ibid.*

² Randolph to Leicester, October

them into enthusiasm through their patriotism ; but Elizabeth disappointed equally both her enemies and her friends ; she would give no excuse to the Queen of Scots to complain that England had broken the peace. The ‘ few hundreds ’ with whose assistance the lords undertook to drive their sovereign back to Edinburgh were not forthcoming ; the army more than half promised to Melville was a mere illusion ; and Bedford was confined by his orders to Carlisle, where he was allowed only to receive Murray and his party as fugitives : they had now therefore no resource except to retreat into England ; the Queen of Scots following in hot pursuit, glared across the frontier at her escaping prey, half tempted to follow them and annihilate the petty guard of the English commander : ¹ but prudence for once prevailed ; she halted and drew back.

So ended the insurrection which had been undertaken at Elizabeth’s instigation and mainly in Elizabeth’s interests. Having failed to prevent the catastrophe she would gladly now have heard no more of it ; but she was not to escape so easily. Even among her own subjects there were some who dared to speak unpalatable truths to her. Bedford, who had been sent to the north with an army which he believed that he was to lead to Edinburgh, wrote in plain, stern terms to the Queen herself ‘ that the lords, in reliance upon her Majesty’s promise, had stood out against their sovereign, and now

¹ ‘ A few hundred men would she had used, and we are all unprovided.’—Bedford to Cecil, October 13 ; *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

knew not what to do ;¹ while to Cecil, not knowing how deeply Cecil was responsible for the Queen's conduct, he wrote in serious sorrow. In a previous letter he had spoken of 'the Lords of the Congregation,' and Elizabeth had taken offence at a term which savoured of too advanced a Protestantism.

'The poor noblemen,' he now said, 'rest so amazed and in so great perplexity they know not what to say, do, or imagine. My terming them Lords of the Congregation was but used by me because I saw it received by others; for that it is not plausible, I shall omit it henceforth, wishing from my heart the cause was plausibly received, and then for terms and names it should be no matter. The Earl of Murray I find constant and honourable, though otherwise sore perplexed, poor gentleman, the more the pity. As her Majesty means peace we must use the necessary means to maintain peace; albeit I know that the Queen useth against the Queen's Majesty our sovereign all such reproachful and despitiful words as she can; besides her practices with foreign realms, which her Majesty's father I am sure would have thought much of. Yet as her Majesty winketh at the same, I must know what I am to do, whether in dealing with the wardens on the Border I am to recognize commissions signed by the Lord Darnley as King of Scotland.'²

Randolph, ashamed and indignant at the deception of which he and Throgmorton had been the instru-

¹ Bedford to the Queen, October 13: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Bedford to Cecil, October 13 and October 26: *MS. Ibid.*

ments, insisted 'that the Queen of Scots meant evil and nothing but evil,' and that however long she was borne with she would have to be brought to reason by force at last. 'You, my lord,' he wrote anxiously to Leicester, 'do all you can to move her Majesty; it is looked for at your hand, and all worthy and godly men of this nation shall love and honour you for ever; let it be handled so that this Queen may know how she has been misguided and ill-advised to take so much upon her—not only against these noblemen, but far above that if she had power to her will.' ¹

But it was from Murray himself that Elizabeth had to encounter the most inconvenient remonstrances. To save England from a Catholic revolution and to save England's Queen from the machinations of a dangerous rival, the Earl of Murray had taken arms against his sovereign, and he found himself a fugitive and an outlaw, while the sacred cause of the Reformation in his own country had been compromised by his fall. His life was safe, but Mary Stuart, having failed to take or kill him, was avenging herself on his wife, and the first news which he heard after reaching England was that Lady Murray had been driven from her home, and within a few weeks of her confinement was wandering shelterless in the woods. Submission and soft speeches would have been his more prudent part, but Murray, a noble gentleman of stainless honour, was not a person to sit down patiently as the dupe of timidity or fraud.

¹ Randolph to Leicester, October 18: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

He wrote shortly to the English council to say that in reliance on the message brought him by Sir Robert Melville he had encouraged his friends to persevere in resistance at a time when they could have made their peace; and through 'their Queen's cold dealing' both he and they were now forced to enter England. If there was an intention of helping them he begged that it might be done at once, and that Scotland might be saved from ruin.¹

By the same messenger he wrote more particularly to Cecil: 'He did not doubt,' he said, 'that Cecil understood fully the motives both of himself and his friends; they had enterprised their action with full foresight of their sovereign's indignation, being moved thereto by the Queen of England and her council's hand writ directed to them thereupon;' the 'extremities' had followed as they expected; the Queen of Scots would now agree to no condition, relying on the Queen of England's 'coldness:' he was told that the Queen's Majesty's conscience was not resolved to make open war without further motive and occasion; the Queen's Majesty was perfectly aware 'that he had undertaken nothing for any particularity of his own, but for good affection to follow her own counsel; her Majesty had been the furtherer and the doer, and he with the other noblemen had assisted therein to their power.'²

Nor were the lords contented with written protests: they were determined to hear from Elizabeth's own lips

¹ Murray to the Council, October 14: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

² Murray to Cecil, October 14: *MS. Ibid.*

an explanation of their desertion. Murray himself and the Abbot of Kilwinning were chosen as the representatives of the rest; and Bedford, after an affectation of opposition which he did not carry beyond a form, sent to the Queen on the 17th of October to prepare for their appearance in London. Pressed by the consequences of her own faults Elizabeth would have concealed her conduct if possible from her own eyes; least of all did she desire to have it thrown in her teeth before all the world. She had assured Paul de Foix at last that she would give the lords no help, and would wait to be attacked. She wished to keep clear of every overt act which would justify the Queen of Scots in appealing to France and Spain. She had persuaded herself that Mary Stuart's army would disperse in a few days for want of supplies, that the lords would return over the Border as easily as they had crossed it;¹ and that she could assist them with money behind the scenes without openly committing herself. These plans and hopes would be fatally disconcerted by Murray's appearance at the Court, and she sent Bedford's courier flying back to him with an instant and angry command to prevent so untoward a casualty. She had said again and again that 'she would give no aid that should break the peace.' The coming up of the Earl of Murray 'would give manifest cause of just complaint to the Queen of Scots;' and she added with curious self-exposure, 'neither are these kind of matters in

¹ Paul de Foix to the King of France, October 16: TEULET, vol. ii.

this open sort to be used.' If Murray had not yet set out she required Bedford 'to stay him by his authority;' if he had started he must be sent after and recalled.¹

The harshness of Elizabeth's language was softened by the council, who expressed their regret 'that the common cause had not hitherto had better success;' they promised their own support 'so far as their power and credit might extend;' but they entreated Murray 'patiently to accommodate himself to her Majesty's resolution.'²

Unluckily for Elizabeth, Murray had anticipated the prohibition, and had followed so closely behind the announcement of his approach that the couriers charged with the letters of the Queen and council met him at Ware. He opened the despatch which was addressed to himself, and immediately sent on a note to Cecil regretting that he had not been sooner made aware of the Queen's wishes, but saying that as he had come so far, he should now remain where he was till he was informed of her further pleasure.

Embarrassed, irritated, and intending at all hazards to disavow her connection with the lords, Elizabeth, since Murray had chosen to come to her, resolved to turn his presence to her advantage. When she had once made up her mind to a particular course she never

¹ Elizabeth to Bedford, October 20: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.* letter is signed by Norfolk, Pembroke, Lord William Howard, and Cecil.

² The Council to Murray, October 20: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.* The

hesitated on the details whatever they might cost. The Earl of Murray was told that he would be received; he went on to London, and on the night of his arrival the Queen sent for him and arranged, in a private interview, the comedy which she was about to enact.¹

The following morning, the 22nd of October, he was admitted to an audience in public, at which de Foix and de Mauvissière, who had by this time returned from Scotland, were especially invited to be present. De Silva describes what ensued, not as an eye-witness, but from an account which was given to him by the Queen herself.²

Elizabeth having taken her place with the council and the ambassadors at her side, the Earl of Murray entered modestly dressed in black. Falling on one knee he began to speak in Scotch, when the Queen interrupted him with a request that he would speak in French, which she said she could better understand.

¹ 'Yo fué avisado que la noche antes desta platica el de Murray estuvó con ella y con el secretario Cecil buen rato, donde se debió consultar lo que pasó el día siguiente.'—De Silva to Philip, November 5. And again, 'La Reyna oyó al de Murray la noche que llegó en secreto, y otro día hizo aquella demostracion delante del Embajador de Francia.'—Same to the same, November 10: *MS. Simancas*. A report of the proceedings in the Rolls House, which was drawn up for the inspection of Mary Stuart herself, and the Courts of France and Spain, states that 'the Queen received Murray openly and none otherwise.' The consciousness that she had received him otherwise explains words which else might have seemed superfluous.

² The account in Sir James Melville's *Memoirs* is evidently taken from the official narrative, with which in most points it verbally agrees. De Silva's is but little different. The one variation of importance will be noticed.

Murray objected that he had been so long out of practice that he could not properly express himself in French; and Elizabeth, whose object was to produce an effect on de Foix and his companion, accepted his excuse for himself; but she said that although he might not be sufficient master of the idiom to speak it, she knew that he understood it when he heard it spoken; she would therefore in her own part of the conversation make use of that language.

She then went on 'to express her astonishment that, being declared an outlaw as he was by the Queen of Scots, the Earl of Murray should have dared to come unlicensed into her presence. The Queen of Scots had been her good sister, and such she always hoped to find her. There had been differences between them which had made her fear for their friendship; but the King of France had kindly interposed his good offices between herself, her sister, and her sister's subjects; and the two ministers who had been his instruments in that good service being at the moment at her Court, she had requested both them and others to attend on the present occasion to hear what she was about to say. She wished it to be generally understood that she would do nothing which would give just offence to the Queen of Scots, or which would impair her own honour. The world, she was aware, was in the habit of saying that her realm was the sanctuary for the seditious subjects of her neighbours; and it was even rumoured that she had instigated or encouraged the insurrection in Scotland. She would not have done such a thing to be

sovereign of the universe. God, who was a just God, she well knew would punish her with the like troubles in her own country; and if she encouraged the subjects of another prince in disobedience, He would stir her own people into insurrection against herself. So far as she knew, there were two causes for the present disturbances in Scotland; the Queen of Scots had married without the consent of her Estates, and had failed to apprise the princes her neighbours of her intentions; the Earl of Murray had attempted to oppose her and had fallen into disgrace. This was the first cause. The second was that the Earl of Lennox and his house were opposed to the reformed religion; the Earl of Murray feared that he would attempt to destroy it, and with his friends preferred to lose his life rather than allow what he believed to be the truth to be overthrown. The Earl had come to the English Court to request her to intercede with his sovereign that he might be heard in his defence. There were faults which proceeded of malice which deserved the rigour of justice—one of these was treason against the person of the sovereign; and were she to understand that the Earl of Murray had meditated treason she would arrest and chastise him according to his demerits; but she had known him in times past to be well-affectioned to his mistress; he had loved her, she was confident, with the love which a subject owes to his prince. There were other faults—faults committed through imprudence, through ignorance, or in self-defence, which might be treated mercifully. The Earl of Mur-

ray's fault might be one of these; she bade him therefore say for which cause he had instigated the late disturbances.'

Elizabeth had exercised a wise caution in preparing Murray for this preposterous harangue. He commanded himself, and replied by calling God to witness of the loyalty with which he had ever served his sovereign: she had bestowed lands, honour, and rewards upon him far beyond his desert; he had desired nothing less than to offend her, and he would have stood by her with life and goods to the utmost of his ability.

Elizabeth then began again: 'She held a balance in her hand,' she said; 'in the one scale was the sentence of outlawry pronounced against him by the Queen of Scots, in the other were the words which he had just spoken. But the word of a Queen must outweigh the word of a subject in the mind of a sister sovereign, who was bound to show most favour to her own like and equal. The Earl had committed actions deserving grave reprehension: he had refused to appear when lawfully summoned; he had taken up arms and had made a league with others like himself to levy war against his sovereign. She had been told that he was afraid of being murdered, but if there had been a conspiracy against him he should have produced the proofs of it in his sovereign's presence.'

Murray replied in Scotch, the Queen interpreting as he went on. He said that it was true that there had been a conspiracy; the condition of his country was

such that he could not have saved his life except by the means which he had adopted.

Elizabeth had doubtless made it a condition of her further friendship that he should say nothing by which she could herself be incriminated; and he contented himself with entreating her to intercede for him to obtain the Queen of Scots' forgiveness. She affected to hesitate. The Queen of Scots, she said, had so often refused her mediation that she knew not how she could offer it again, but she would communicate with her council, and when she had ascertained their opinions he should hear from her. Meanwhile she would have him understand that he was in great danger, and that he must consider himself a prisoner.

The Earl was then permitted to withdraw. The Queen went aside with the Frenchmen, and assuring them that they might accept what they had witnessed as the exact truth, she begged that they would communicate it to the King of France. To de Silva, when he was next admitted to an audience, she repeated the story word by word, and to him as well as to the others she protested that rebels against their princes should receive from her neither aid nor countenance.¹

So ended this extraordinary scene. Sir James Melville's narrative carries the extravagance one point further. He describes Elizabeth as extorting from Murray an acknowledgment that she had not encouraged the rebellion, and as then bidding him depart from her

¹ De Silva to Philip, November 5: *MS. Simancas*.

presence an unworthy traitor. Sir James Melville does but follow an official report which was drawn up under Elizabeth's eye and sanction, to be sent to Scotland and circulated through Europe. It was thus therefore that she herself desired the world to believe that she had spoken; and one falsehood more or less in a web of artifice could scarcely add to her discredit. For Murray's sake however it may be hoped that he was spared this further ignominy, and that de Silva's is the truer story.

If the Earl did not declare in words however that Elizabeth was unconnected with the rebellion, he allowed her to disavow it in silence, and by his forbearance created for himself and Scotland a claim upon her gratitude. He was evidently no consenting party to the deception; and after leaving her presence he wrote to her in a letter what he had restrained himself from publicly declaring. 'Her treatment of him would have been more easy to bear,' he said, 'had he known in what he had offended;' 'he had done his uttermost with all his power to serve and gratify her;' and 'the more he considered the matter it was ever the longer the more grievous to him:' noblemen who had suffered in former times for maintaining English interests in Scotland, 'when their cause was not to be compared to the present, had been well received and liberally gratified;' while he who had 'endeavoured to show a thankful heart in her service when any occasion was presented, could in no wise perceive by her Highness's answer any affection towards his present state;' 'her declaration

had been more grievous to him than all his other troubles;’ he trusted that ‘he might in time receive from her some more comfortable answer.’¹

It does not appear that Elizabeth saw Murray any more. She was only anxious to be rid of his presence, which was an intolerable reproach to her; and with these words—the least which the occasion required, yet not without a sad dignity—he returned to his friends who had been sent on to Newcastle, where they were ordered for the present to remain. Elizabeth was left to play out in character the rest of her ignoble game. To the ambassadors, whom she intended to deceive, it was a transparent farce; and there was probably not a house in London, Catholic or Protestant, where her conduct, which she regarded as a political masterpiece, was not ridiculed as it deserved. But it must be allowed at least the merit of completeness. An elaborate account of the interview with Murray was sent to Randolph to be laid before the Queen of Scots; Elizabeth accompanied it with an autograph letter in which she attempted to impose on the keenest-witted woman living by telling her she wished ‘she could have been present to have heard the terms in which she addressed her rebellious subject.’ ‘So far was she from espousing the cause of rebels and traitors,’ she said, ‘that she should hold herself disgraced if she had so much as tacitly borne with them;’ ‘she wished her name might be blotted out from the list of princes as unworthy to hold

¹ The Earl of Murray to Queen Elizabeth, from Westminster, October 31 *Scotch MSS, Rolls House.*

a place among them,' if she had done any such thing.¹

At the same time she wrote to Randolph himself, saying frankly that her first impulse on Murray's arrival had been to accept partially, if not entirely, the conditions of peace which the Queen of Scots had offered to Tamworth. If the Queen of Scots would promise not to molest either herself or her children in the possession of the English throne, she had been ready to pledge her word that nothing should be done in England in prejudice of the Queen of Scots' title to 'the second place.' On reflection however it had seemed imprudent to show excessive eagerness. She had therefore written a letter which Randolph would deliver; and he might take the opportunity of saying that although the Darnley marriage had interrupted the friendship which had subsisted between the Queen of Scots and herself, yet that she desired only to act honourably and kindly towards her; and if the Queen of Scots would undertake to keep the peace, and would give the promise which she desired, she would send commissioners to Edinburgh to make a final arrangement.²

¹ 'Aussy je luy (Randolph) ay déclaré tout au long le discours entre moy et ung de voz subjectz lequel j'espere vous contentera; soubhaitant que voz oreilles en eussent été juges pour y entendre et l'honneur et l'affection que je monstrois en vostre endroit; tout au rebours de ce qu'on dict que je defendois voz mauvaises subjectz contre vous; laquelle chose se tiendra tousjours très éloignée de

mon cœur, estant trop grande ignominie pour une princesse à souffrir, non que à faire; soubhaitant alors qu'on me esblouisse du rang des princes comme estant indigne de tenir lieu.'—Elizabeth to the Queen of Scots, October 29: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Elizabeth to Randolph, October 29: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

In a momentary recovery of dignity she added at the close of her letter, that if the Queen of Scots refused, 'she would defend her country and subjects from such annoyance as might be intended, and would finally use all such lawful means as God should give her to redress all offences and injuries already done or hereafter to be done to her or her subjects.'¹ But an evil spirit of trickery and imbecility had taken possession of Elizabeth's intellect. The Queen of Scots naturally expressed the utmost readiness to receive commissioners sent from England to concede so much of what she had asked. By the time Mary's answer came, her Majesty, being no longer in a panic, had become sensible of the indignity of her proposal. She therefore bade Randolph 'so compass the matter that the Queen of Scots should rather send commissioners to England, as more honourable to herself;' and 'if the Queen of Scots said, as it was like she would, that the Queen of England had offered to send a commission thither, *he should answer that he indeed said so and thought so, but that he did perceive he had mistaken her message.*'²

Elizabeth's strength, could she only have known it, lay in the goodness of the cause which she represented. The essential interests both of England and Scotland were concerned in her success. She was the champion of liberty, and through her the two nations were emancipating themselves from spiritual tyranny. By the side of the Jesuits she was but a shallow driveller in

¹ Elizabeth to Randolph, October 29: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Elizabeth to Randolph, November 26: *MS. Ibid.*

the arts to which she condescended ; and she was about to find that after all the paths of honour were the paths of safety, and that she could have chosen no weapon more dangerous to herself than the chicanery of which she considered herself so accomplished a mistress. She had mistaken the nature of English and Scottish gentlemen in supposing that they would be the instruments of a disgraceful policy, and she had done her rival cruel wrong in believing that she could be duped with artifices so poor.

‘Send as many ambassadors as you please to our Queen,’ said Sir William Kirkaldy to Bedford ; ‘they shall receive a proud answer. She thinks to have a force as soon ready as you do, besides the hope she has to have friendship in England. If force of men and ships come not with the ambassadors, their coming and travail shall be spent in vain.’¹

Even Cecil perhaps now deplored the effects of his own timidity. ‘I have received,’ ^{November.} wrote Bedford to him, ‘your gentle and sorrowful letter. It grieveth me that things will frame no better. The evil news will be the overthrow of three hundred gentlemen of Scotland that are zealous and serviceable.’ Too justly Bedford feared that the Scotch Protestants in their resentment would ‘become the worst enemies that England ever had ;’ too clearly he saw that Elizabeth by her miserable trifling had ruined her truest friends ; that however anxious she might be for peace

¹ Kirkaldy to Bedford, October 31: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

‘the war would come upon her when least she looked for it;’ and that Mary Stuart now regarded her with as much contempt as hatred. ‘Alas! my lord,’ he wrote to Leicester, ‘is this the end? God help us all and comfort these poor lords. There is by these dealings overthrown a good duke, some earls, many other barons, lords, and gentlemen, wise, honest, religious. Above all am I driven to bemoan the hard case of the Earl of Murray and the Laird of Grange, whose affection to this whole realm your lordship knows right well. I surely think there came not a greater overthrow to Scotland these many years; for the wisest, honestest, and godliest are discomfited and undone. There is now no help for them, unless God take the matter in hand, but to commit themselves to their prince’s will and pleasure. And what hath England gotten by helping them in this sort? even as many mortal enemies of them as before it had dear friends; for otherwise will not that Queen receive them to mercy, if she deal no worse with them; nor without open and evident demonstration of the same cannot they assure themselves of her favour; and the sooner they thus do the sooner they shall have her to conceive a good opinion of them, and the sooner they shall be restored to their livelihoods.’¹

‘Greater account might have been made of the lords’ good-will,’ wrote Randolph. ‘If there be living a more mortal enemy to the Queen my mistress than

¹ Bedford to Leicester, November 5: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

this woman is, I desire never to be reputed but the vilest villain alive.’¹ ‘The lords,’ concluded Bedford, scornfully, ‘abandoned by man and *turned over to God*, must now do the best they can for themselves.’

And what that was, what fruit would have grown from those strokes of diplomatic genius, had Mary Stuart been equal to the occasion, Elizabeth would ere long have tasted in deposition and exile or death. Randolph, faithful to the end, might say and unsay, might promise and withdraw his word, and take on himself the blame of his mistress’s changing humour; Bedford, with ruin full in view before him, might promise at all risks ‘to obey her bidding.’ But the lords of Scotland were no subjects of England, to be betrayed into rebellion in the interests of a country which they loved with but half their hearts, and when danger came to be coolly ‘turned over to God.’ Murray might forgive, for Murray’s noble nature had no taint of self in it; but others could resent for him what he himself could pardon. Argyle, his brother-in-law, when he heard of that scene in London, bade Randolph tell his mistress ‘he found it very strange; the Queen of Scots had made him many offers, and till that time he had refused them all; if the Queen of England would reconsider herself he would stick to the English cause and fight for it with lands and life; but he demanded an answer within ten days. If she persisted he would make terms with his own sovereign.’² The ten days

¹ Randolph to Leicester, November 8: Ibid.

² Randolph to Cecil, November 19.

passed and no answer came. Argyle withdrew the check which through the Scots of the Isles he had held over Shan O'Neil, and Ireland blazed into fury and madness; while Argyle himself from that day forward till Mary Stuart's last hopes were scattered at Langside, became the enemy of all which till that hour he had most loved and fought for.

Nor was Argyle alone in his anger. Sir James Melville saw the opportunity, and urged on his mistress a politic generosity. From the day of her return from France he showed her that she had 'laboured without effect to sever her nobility from England.' The Queen of England had now done for her what for herself she could not do; and if she would withdraw her prosecutions, pardon Murray, pardon Chatelherault, pardon Kirkaldy and Glencairn, she might command their devotion for ever.¹ Melville found an ally where he could have least looked for it to repeat the same advice. Sir Nicholas Throgmorton had for the last six years been at the heart of every Protestant conspiracy in Europe. He it was of whose experienced skill Elizabeth had availed herself to light the Scotch insurrection. His whole nature revolted against the paltry deception of which he had been made the instrument; and now throwing himself passionately into the interests of the Queen of Scots, he advised the lords 'to sue for pardon at their own Queen's hands, and engage never to offend her again for the satisfaction of any prince alive;'

¹ MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*.

while more daringly and dangerously he addressed Mary Stuart herself.

‘Your Majesty,’ he said, ‘has in England many friends who favour your title for divers respects; some for conscience thinking you have the right; some from personal regard; some for religion; some for faction; some for the ill-will they bear to Lady Catherine your competitor. Your friends and enemies alike desire to see the succession settled. Parliament must meet next year at latest; and it must be your business meanwhile to assure yourself of the votes of the majority, which if you will you can obtain. You have done wisely in marrying an Englishman; we do not love strangers. Make no foreign alliance till you have seen what we can do for you. Keep on good terms with France and Spain, but do not draw too close to them. Go on moderately in religion as you have hitherto done, and you will find Catholics as well as Protestants on your side. Show clemency to the banished lords. You will thus win many hearts in England. Be careful, be generous, and you will command us all. I do not write as ‘a fetch’ to induce you to take the lords back; it is thought expedient for your service by many who have no favour to them and are different from them in religion

{The Earl of Murray has offended you it is true; but the Protestants persuade themselves that his chief fault in your eyes is his religion, and on that ground they take his side. Pardon him, restore him to favour, and win by doing so all Protestant hearts. The lords will in no wise if they can eschew it be again in the Queen

of England's debt, neither by obtaining of any favour at your hand by her intervention, nor yet for any support in time of their banishment. Allow them their charges out of their own lands, and the greater part even of the English bishops will declare for you.'¹

Never had Elizabeth been in greater danger ; and the worst features of the peril were the creations of her own untruths. Without a fuller knowledge of the strength and temper of the English Catholics than the surviving evidence reveals, her conduct cannot be judged with entire fairness. Undoubtedly the utmost caution was necessary to avoid giving the Spaniards a pretext for interference ; and it is due to her to admit that her own unwillingness to act openly on the side of the northern lords had been endorsed by that of Cecil. Yet she had been driven into a position from which, had Mary Stuart understood how to use her advantage, she would scarcely have been able to extricate herself. If the Queen of Scots had relied on her own judgment she would probably have accepted the advice of Melville and Throgmorton and her other English friends ; she would have declared an amnesty, and would have rallied all parties except the extreme Calvinistic fanatics to her side. But such a policy would have involved an indefinite prolongation of the yoke which she had already found intolerable ; she must have concealed or suspended her intention of making a religious revolution, and she must have continued to act with a forbearance towards the Pro-

¹ Letter from Sir N. Throgmorton to the Queen of Scots : Printed by Sir James Melville ; abridged.

testants which her passionate temper found more and more difficulty in maintaining. The counsels of David Rizzio were worth an army to English liberty : she had surrendered herself entirely and exclusively to Rizzio's guidance ; and when Melville attempted to move the dark and dangerous Italian 'he evidenced a disdain of danger and despised counsel.' Rizzio, 'the minion of the Pope,' preferred the more direct and open road of violence and conquest, which he believed, in his ignorance of the people amongst whom he was working, to be equally safe for his mistress, while it promised better for other objects which he had in view for himself. Already every petition addressed to the Crown was passing through his hands, and he was growing rich upon the presents which were heaped upon him to buy his favour. He desired rank as well as wealth ; and to be made a peer of Scotland, the reward which Mary Stuart intended for him, he required a share of the lands of the banished earls, the estates of Murray most especially, as food at once for his ambition and revenge.

It is time to return to his friend and emissary, Francis Yaxlee, who went at the end of August on a mission to Philip.

The conditions under which the King of Spain had promised his assistance seemed to have arrived. Mary Stuart had married Lord Darnley as he advised ; her subjects had risen in insurrection with the secret support of the Queen of England, who was threatening to send an army into Scotland for their support. She had run into danger in the interests of the Church of Rome, and

she looked with confidence to the most Catholic King to declare for her cause. Yaxlee found Philip at the beginning of October at Segovia. Elizabeth's diplomacy had been so far successful that the Emperor Maximilian was again dreaming that she would marry the Archduke Charles. He was anxious to provide his brother with a throne: he had been wounded by Mary Stuart's refusal to accept the Archduke, when his marriage with her had been arranged between himself and the Cardinal of Lorraine, with the sanction of the Council of Trent. Elizabeth had played upon his humour, and he had reverted to the scheme which had at one time been so anxiously entertained by his father and Philip.¹ The King of Spain's own hopes of any such solution of the English difficulty were waning; yet he was unwilling to offend the Emperor, and he would not throw away a card which might after all be the successful one. It was perhaps the suspicion that Philip was not acting towards her with entire sincerity which urged Mary Stuart into precipitancy; or she might have wished to force Elizabeth into a position in which it would be impossible for any Catholic sovereign to countenance her. But Elizabeth, on the one hand, had been too cautious, and Philip on the other, though wishing well to the Queen of Scots and evidently

¹ A noche recibí una carta de Chantonnay del 27 del pasado en que me escribe que habiendo dicho al Emperador de parte de V. M^a. que si era necesario que, para que se hiciese el negocio del matrimonio del Archiduque con la de Inglaterra, V. M^a. escribiese á la Reyna de su mano sobrello, y que el Emperador le habia respondido que no estaba desahuciado deste negocio, y le diria lo que sobrello habia de escribir á V. M^a. El deseo es grande que [el Emperador] tiene á este negocio.—De Silva to Philip, November 10. *MS. Simancas.*

believing that she was the only hope of the Catholic cause in England, yet could not overcome his constitutional slowness. He was willing to help her, yet only as Elizabeth had helped the Scotch insurgents, with a secrecy which would enable him to disavow what he had done. He was afraid of the Huguenot tendencies of the French Government; he was afraid that if he took an open part he might set a match to the mine which was about to explode in the Low Countries: he therefore repeated the cautions which Alva had given Beton at Bayonne; he gave Yaxlee a note for twenty thousand crowns which would be paid him by Granvelle at Brussels; he promised if Elizabeth declared war to contribute such further sums as should be necessary; but he would do it only under shelter of the name of the Pope and through the Pope's hands; in his own person he would take no part in the quarrel; the time, he said, was not ripe. He insisted especially that Mary Stuart should betray no intention of claiming the English throne during Elizabeth's lifetime. It would exasperate the Queen of England into decisive action, and justify her to some extent in an immediate appeal to arms.¹ As little would he encourage the Queen of Scots to seek assistance from her uncles in France. She might accept money wherever she could get it, but to admit a French army into Scotland would create a greater danger than it would remove.²

¹ 'Porque esto la escandalizaria y en alguna manera seria justificar mucho y daria gran ocasion para su causa.'—Answer to Yaxlee: MIG-
 ejecutar contra ellos lo que pudiese, NET vol. ii. p. 200.

² Ibid.

With this answer Yaxlee was dismissed ; and so anxious was Philip that Mary Stuart should know his opinion that he enclosed a duplicate of his reply to de Silva, with directions that it should be forwarded immediately to Scotland, and with a further credit for money should the Queen of Scots require it.

Yet Philip was more anxious for her success and more sincere in his desire to support her than might be gathered from his cautious language to her ambassador ; and his real feelings may be gathered from a letter which he wrote after Yaxlee had left Segovia to Cardinal Pacheco his minister at Rome.

PHILIP II. TO CARDINAL PACHECO.¹

October 16.

‘ I have received your letter of the 2nd of September, containing the message from his Holiness on the assistance to be given to the Queen of Scots. As his Holiness desires to know my opinion, you must tell him first that his anxiety to befriend and support that most excellent and most Christian princess in her present straits is worthy of the zeal which he has ever shown for the good cause, and is what his disposition would have led me to expect. The Queen of Scots has applied to myself as well as to his Holiness ; and possessing as I do special knowledge of the condition of that country, and having carefully considered the situation of affairs there, I have arrived at the following conclusions :—

¹ *MS. Simancas.*

‘There are three possibilities—

‘1. Either the Queen of Scots may find herself at war only with her own subjects, and may require assistance merely to reduce her own country to obedience and to maintain religion there; or,

‘2. The Queen of England, afraid for her own safety, may openly support the rebels and heretics in their insurrection, and herself undisguisedly declare war; or,

‘3. The Queen of Scots may attempt to extort by arms the recognition of her claims on the English succession.

‘In either or all of these contingencies his Holiness will act in a manner becoming his position and his character if he take part avowedly in her behalf. I myself am unwilling to come prominently forward, but I am ready to give advice and assistance, and that in the following manner:—

‘Suppose the first case that the Scotch rebels find no support from any foreign prince, their strength cannot then be great, and the Queen of Scots with very little aid from us will be able to put them down. It will be sufficient if we send her money, which can be managed secretly; and if his Holiness approves he will do well to send whatever sum he is disposed to give without delay. I shall myself do the same, and indeed I have already sent a credit to my ambassador in England for the Queen of Scot’s use.

‘If the Queen of England takes an open part, more will be required of us, and secrecy will hardly be possible even if we still confine ourselves to sending money.

Whatever be done, however, it is my desire that it be done entirely in his Holiness's name. I will contribute in my full proportion ; his Holiness shall have the fame and the honour.

‘The last alternative is far more difficult. I foresee so many inconveniences as likely to arise from it that the most careful consideration is required before any step is taken. Nothing must be done prematurely ; and his Holiness I think should write to the Queen of Scots and caution her how she proceeds. A false move may ruin all, while if she abide her time she cannot fail to succeed. Her present care should be to attach her English friends to herself more firmly, and wherever possible to increase their number ; but above all she should avoid creating a suspicion that she aims at anything while the Queen of England is alive. The question of her right to the succession must be continually agitated, but no resolution should be pressed for until success is certain. If she grasp at the crown too soon she will lose it altogether. Let her bide her time before she disclose herself : and meanwhile I will see in what form we can best interfere. The cause is the cause of God, of whom the Queen of Scots is the champion. We now know assuredly that she is the sole gate through which religion can be restored in England ; all the rest are closed.’

The unfortunate Yaxlee, having received his money in Flanders, was hurrying back to his mistress when he was caught in the Channel by a November gale, and was flung up on the coast of Northumberland a mangled body, recognizable only by the despatches found upon

his person. They told Elizabeth little which she did not know already. She was perhaps relieved from the fear of an immediate interposition from Spain, the expectation of which, as much as any other cause, had led to the strangeness of her conduct. But she knew herself to be surrounded with pitfalls into which a false step might at any moment precipitate her; and she could resolve on nothing. One day she thought of trying to persuade the Queen of Scots to establish 'religion' on the English model; 'or if that could not be obtained that there might be liberty of conscience, that the Protestants might serve God their own way without molestation.'¹ Then again in a feeble effort to preserve her dignity she would once more attempt to entrap the Queen of Scots into sending commissioners to England to sue for a settlement of the succession, which naturally did but increase Mary Stuart's exasperation.² Bothwell made a raid on the Borders and carried off five or six English prisoners. The Earl of Bedford made reprisals, in the faint hope that it might force Elizabeth into a more courageous attitude. She first blamed Bedford; then, stung by an insolent letter from the Queen of Scots, she flashed up with momentary pride and became conscious of her injustice to Murray.

The Scotch Parliament was summoned for the ensuing February, when Murray and his friends would be required to appear, and if they failed

December.

¹ Instructions to Commissioners going to Scotland, November, 1565
Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.

² Randolph to Cecil, December 15: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

to present themselves would be proceeded against for high treason. The Queen of Scots, at Rizzio's instigation, was determined to carry an Act of Attainder and forfeiture against them, which Elizabeth felt herself bound in honour to make an effort to prevent. So anxious she had been for the first two months after they had come to England to disclaim connection with them that she had almost allowed them to starve; and Randolph, on Christmas-day, wrote to Cecil that Murray 'had not at that time two crowns in the world.'¹ But this neglect was less the result of deliberate carelessness than of temporary panic; and as the alarm cooled down she recovered some perception of the obligations under which she lay.

At length therefore she consented for herself to name two commissioners if the Queen of Scots would name two others; and in writing on the subject to Randolph, under her first and more generous impulse, she said that 'her chief intention in their meeting was, if it might be, that some good might be done for the Earl of Murray.' Her timidity came back upon her before she had finished her letter; she scored out the words and wrote instead 'the chief intention of this meeting on our part is, *covertly though not manifestly*, to procure that some good might be done for the Earl.'² More painful evidence she could scarcely have given of her perplexity and alarm.

Bedford and Sir John Foster were named to repre-

¹ Randolph to Cecil, December 25: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Elizabeth to Randolph, January 10: *Ibid.*

sent England. The Queen of Scots, as if in deliberate insult, named Bothwell as a fit person to meet with them; and even this, though wounded to the quick, Elizabeth endured, lest a refusal might 'increase her malice.'¹

So the winter months passed away; and the time was fast approaching for the meeting of the Scottish Parliament. The Queen of Scots was by this time pregnant. Her popularity in England was instantly tenfold increased; while from every part of Europe warnings came thicker and thicker that mischief was in the wind. 'The young King and Queen of Scots,' wrote Sir Thomas Smith from Paris, 'do look for a further and a bigger crown, and have more intelligence and practice in England and in other realms than you think for. Both the Pope's and the King of Spain's hands be in that dish further and deeper than I think you know. The ambassadors of Spain, Scotland, and the Cardinal of Lorraine be too great in their devices for me to like. The Bishop of Glasgow looks to be a cardinal, and to bring in Popery ere it be long, not only into Scotland but into England. I have cause to say to you *vigilate!*'²

'It is written,' Randolph reported to Leicester, 'that this Queen's faction increaseth greatly among you. I commend you for that; for so shall you have religion overthrown, your country torn in pieces, and never an honest man left alive that is good or godly.'

¹ Elizabeth to Randolph, February 2: *Lansdowne MSS.* 8.

² Sir T. Smith to Cecil, March 1565-6: *French MSS. Rolls House.*

Woe is me for you when David's (Rizzio's) son shall be a king of England.'¹

1566. At length a darker secret stole abroad, that
January. Pius the Fifth, who had just succeeded to the Papal chair, had drawn away Catherine de Medici from the freer and nobler part of the French people; that she had entered on the dark course which found its outcome on the day of St Bartholomew; and that a secret league had been formed between the Pope and the King of France and the Guises for the uprooting of the reformed faith out of France by fair means or foul. Nor was the conspiracy confined to the Continent; a copy of the bond had been sent across to Scotland, which Randolph ascertained that Mary Stuart had signed.² At the moment when it arrived she had been moved in some slight degree by Melville's persuasions, and perhaps, finding that Philip also advised moderation, she was hesitating whether she should not pardon the lords after all. But the Queen-mother's messenger, M. de Villemont, entreated that she would under no circumstances whatever permit men to return to Scotland who had so long thwarted and obstructed her. The unexpected support from France blew her passion into flame again; ³ and she looked only to the meeting of the Parliament, from which the strength of the Protestants would now be absent, not only to gratify her own and Rizzio's revenge but to commence her larger

¹ Randolph to Leicester, January 29: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Randolph to Cecil, February 7: *Ibid.*

³ MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*.

and long-cherished projects. She determined to make an effort to induce the Estates to re-establish Catholicism as the religion of Scotland, leaving the Protestants for the present with liberty of conscience, but with small prospect of retaining long a privilege which when in power they had refused to their opponents.

The defeat of the lords and the humiliating exhibition of Elizabeth's fears had left Mary Stuart to outward appearance mistress of the situation. There was no power in Scotland which seemed capable of resisting her. She wrote to Pius to congratulate him on her triumph over the enemies of the faith, and to assure him that 'with the help of God and his Holiness she would leap over the wall.'¹ Bedford and Randolph ceased to hope; and Murray, in a letter modestly and mournfully beautiful, told Cecil that unless Elizabeth interfered, of which he had now small expectation, 'for anything that he could judge' he and his friends were wrecked for ever.²

Suddenly, and from a quarter least expected, a little cloud rose over the halcyon prospects of the Queen of Scots, wrapped the heavens in blackness, and burst over her head in a tornado. On the political stage Mary Stuart was but a great actress. The 'woman' had a drama of her own going on behind the scenes; the theatre caught fire; the mock heroics of the Catholic crusade burnt into ashes; and a tremendous

February.

¹ Mary Stuart to the Pope, January 21, 1566: MIGNET.

² Murray to Cecil, January 9: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*

domestic tragedy was revealed before the astonished eyes of Europe.

Towards the close of 1565 rumours went abroad in Edinburgh, coupled with the news that the Queen was enceinte, that she was less happy in her marriage than she had anticipated. She had expected Darnley to be passive in her hands, and she was finding that he was too foolish to be controlled: a proud, ignorant, self-willed boy was at the best an indifferent companion to an accomplished woman of the world; and when he took upon himself the airs of a king, when he affected to rule the country and still more to rule the Queen, he very soon became intolerable. The first open difference between them arose from the appointment of Bothwell as lieutenant-general in preference to Lennox. The Lennox clan and kindred, the Douglasses, the Ruthvens, the Lindsays, who were linked together in feudal affinity, took the affront to themselves; and Darnley, supported by his friends, showed his resentment by absenting himself from the Court.

‘The Lord Darnley,’ wrote Randolph on the 20th of December,¹ ‘followeth his pastimes more than the Queen is content withal; what it will breed hereafter I cannot say, but in the mean time there is some misliking between them.’

It was seen how Darnley, at the time of his marriage, grasped at the title of King. As he found his wishes thwarted he became anxious, and his kins-

¹ *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

men with him, that the name should become a reality, and 'the crown matrimonial' be legally secured to him at the approaching Parliament. But there were signs abroad that his wish would not be acceded to; Mary Stuart was unwilling to part with her power for the same reason that Darnley required it.

On Christmas-day Randolph wrote again of 'strange alterations.' 'A while ago,' he said,¹ 'there was nothing but King and Queen; now the Queen's husband is the common word. He was wont in all writings to be first named; now he is placed in the second. Lately there were certain pieces of money coined with their faces *Henricus et Maria*; these are called in and others framed. Some private disorders there are among themselves; but because they may be but *amandium iræ*, or 'household words,' as poor men speak, it makes no matter if it grow no further.'

In January a marked affront was passed on Darnley. M. Rambouillet brought from Paris 'the Order of the Cockle' for him. A question rose about his shield. Had 'the crown matrimonial' been intended for him he would have been allowed to bear the royal arms. The Queen coldly 'bade give him his due,' and he was enrolled as Duke of Rothsay and Earl of Ross.² Darnley retaliated with vulgar brutality. He gave roistering parties to the young French noblemen in Rambouillet's train and made them drunk.³

¹ *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² KNOX; *History of the Reformation.*

³ 'Sick with draughts of aqua composita.'

One day he was dining with the Queen at the house of a merchant in Edinburgh. He was drinking hard as usual, and when she tried to check him 'he not only paid no attention to her remonstrance, but also gave her such words as she left the place with tears.' Something else happened also, described as 'vicious,' the nature of which may be guessed at, at some festivity or other on 'Inch Island;' ¹ and as a natural consequence the Queen 'withdrew her company' from the Lord Darnley; a staircase connected their rooms, but they slept apart. ²

Side by side with the estrangement from her husband, Mary Stuart admitted Rizzio to closer and closer intimacy. Signor David, as he was called, became the Queen's inseparable companion in the council-room and the cabinet. At all hours of the day he was to be found with her in her apartments. She kept late hours, and he was often alone with her till midnight. He had the control of all the business of the State; as Darnley grew troublesome his presence was dispensed with at the council, and a signet, the duplicate of the King's, was intrusted to the favoured secretary. Finding himself so deeply detested by the adherents of Lennox, Rizzio induced the Queen to show favour to those among the banished lords who were most hostile to the King and were least determined in their Protestantism. Chatelherault was pardoned and allowed to return as a support against the Lennox faction in

¹ Sir William Drury to Cecil, | B. 10: Printed in KEITH.
February 16: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG.* | ² RUTHVEN'S *Narrative*. KEITH.

case of difficulty ;¹ while among the Congregation—as was seen in one of Randolph's letters—the worst construction was placed on the relations between the Queen and the favourite.

Thus a King's party and a Queen's party had shaped themselves within six months of the marriage : Scotland was the natural home of conspiracies, for law was powerless there, and social duty was overridden by the more sacred obligation of affinity or private bond. On the 13th of February (the date is important) Randolph thus wrote to Leicester :—

‘ I know now for certain that this Queen repenteth her marriage, that she hateth the King and all his kin ; I know that he knoweth himself that he hath a partaker in play and game with him ; I know that there are practices in hand contrived between the father and the son to come by the crown against her will ; I know that if that take effect which is intended, David, with the consent of the King, shall have his throat cut within these ten days. Many things and grievouser and worse are brought to my ears, yea of things intended against the Queen's own person.’²

It was observed on the first return of Lennox that

¹ ‘ The Duke of Chatelherault, finding so favourable address, hath much displeased both the King and his father, who is in great misliking of the Queen. She is very weary of him. Thus it is that those that depend wholly on him are not liked of her, nor they that follow her in like manner are not liked of him, as

David and others. If there should be-
between her and the Lord Darnley arise such controversy as she could not well appease, the Duke's aid she would use.’—Drury to Cecil, February 16: *Cotton, MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*

² Printed in TYTLER'S *History of Scotland*.

the enmities and friendships of his family intersected and perplexed the leading division between Catholics and Protestants. Lord Darnley had been brought to Scotland as the representative of the English Catholics and as a support to the Catholic faction ; but it was singular that the great Scottish families most nearly connected with him were Protestants ; while the Gordons, the Hamiltons, the Betons, the relations generally of Chatelherault, who was Lennox's principal rival, were chiefly on the opposite side. The confusion hitherto had worked ill for the interests of the Reformers. The House of Douglas had preferred the claims of blood to those of religion : the Earl of Ruthven, though Murray's friend, was Darnley's uncle,¹ and had stood by the Queen through the struggle of the summer ; Lindsay, a Protestant to the backbone, had married a Douglas and went with the Earl of Morton ; the desire to secure the crown to a prince of their own blood and race had overweighed all higher and nobler claims.

The desertion of so large a section of his friends had been the real cause of Murray's failure ; Protestantism was not dead in Scotland, but other interests had paralyzed its vitality, just as four years before Murray's eagerness to secure the English succession for his sister had led him into his first and fatal mistake of supporting her in refusing to ratify the Treaty of Edinburgh. The quarrel between the Queen and her

¹ Ruthven had married a half-sister of Lady Margaret Lennox.

husband flung all parties back into their natural places; Lennox, who twenty years before had been brought in from France in the interest of Henry the Eighth as a check on Cardinal Beton, drifted again into his old position in the front of the Protestant league; and Darnley's demand for the matrimonial crown, though in himself the mere clamour of disappointed vanity, was maintained by powerful noblemen, who though they neither possessed nor deserved the confidence of the Reformers, yet were recognizing too late that they had mistaken their interest in leaving them.

But the matrimonial crown it became every day more clear that Darnley was not to have; Rizzio above all others was held responsible for the Queen's resolution to refuse it, and for this, as for a thousand other reasons, he was gathering hatred on his devoted head. A foreigner, who had come to Scotland two years before as a wandering musician, was thrusting himself into the administration of the country, and pushing from their places the fierce lords who had been accustomed to dictate to their sovereign. As a last stroke of insolence he was now aiming at the chancellorship, of which the Queen was about to deprive in his favour the great chief of the House of Douglas.

While their blood was set on fire with these real and fancied indignities Lord Darnley, if his word was to be believed, went one night between twelve and one to the Queen's room. Finding the door locked he knocked, but could get no answer. At length after he had called

many times, and had threatened to break the lock, the Queen drew back the bolt. He entered and she appeared to be alone, but on searching he found Rizzio half-dressed in a closet.¹

Darnley's word was not a good one : he was capable of inventing such a story to compass his other purposes, or if it was true it might have been innocently explained. The Queen of Scots frequently played cards with Rizzio late into the night, and being a person entirely careless of appearances she might easily have been alone with him with no guilty intention under the conditions which Darnley described. However it was, he believed or pretended that he had found evidence of his dishonour, and communicated his discovery to Sir George Douglas another of his mother's brothers, who at Darnley's desire on the 10th of February informed the Earl of Ruthven.

Once before, it appeared, 'the nobility had given Darnley counsel suitable to his honour'—that is to say, they had intimated to him their own views of Rizzio's proceedings and character. Darnley had betrayed them to the Queen, who had of course been exasperated. Ruthven had been three months ill; he was then

¹ 'L'une cause de la mort de David est que le Roy quelques jours auparavant, environ une heure après minuict, seroit allé heurter à la chambre de ladicte dame, qui estoit audessus de la sienne; et d'autant que après avoir plusieurs fois heurté l'on ne luy respondoit point il auroit appellé souvent la Royne, la priant de ouvrir, et enfin la menaçant de rompre la porte; à cause de quoy elle lui auroit ouvert. Laquelle ledict Roy trouva seule dedans ladicte chambre; mais ayant cherché partout il auroit trouvé dedans son cabinet ledict David en chemise, couvert seulement d'une robbe fourrée.'—Analyse d'une dépêche de M. de Foix à la Reyne mère: TEULET, vol. ii. p. 267.

scarcely able to leave his bed and was inclined at first to run into no further trouble; but pressed at length by Darnley's oaths and entreaties, he saw in what had occurred an opportunity for undoing his work of the summer and for bringing back the banished lords. Parliament was to meet in the first week in March to proceed with the forfeitures, so that no time was to be lost. Ruthven consulted Argyle, who was ready to agree to anything which would save Murray from attainder. Maitland, who since his conduct about the marriage had been under an eclipse, gave his warm adhesion; and swiftly and silently the links of the scheme were welded. The plan was to punish the miserable minion who, whatever his other offences, was notoriously the chief instigator of the Queen's bitterness against her brother, and to give the coveted crown matrimonial to Darnley, provided he on his part 'would take the part of the lords, bring them back to their old rooms, and establish religion as it was at the Queen's home-coming.'¹

The conspirators for their mutual security drew a 'bond,' to which they required Darnley's signature, that he might not afterwards evade his responsibility. On their side they 'undertook to be liege subjects to the said Prince Henry, to take part with him in all his lawful actions, causes, and quarrels, to be friends to his friends and enemies to his enemies.' At the Parliament they would obtain for him 'the crown matrimonial for his life;' and 'failing the succession of their sovereign they

¹ Randolph to Cecil, February 20: *Scotch MSS Rolls House*.

would maintain his right to the crown of Scotland after her death.' Religion should be 'maintained and established as it was on the arrival of their sovereign lady in the realm.' 'They would spare neither life, lands, goods, nor possessions in setting forward all things to the advancement of the said noble prince, and would intercede with the Queen of England for favour to be shown both to himself and to his mother.'

Darnley promised in return that the banished noblemen 'should have free remission of all their faults' as soon as the possession of the crown matrimonial enabled him to pardon them, and till he obtained it he undertook to prevent their impeachment. The lords might return at once to Scotland in full possession of 'their lands, titles, and goods.' If they 'were meddled with' he would stand by them to the uttermost, and religion should be established as they desired.¹

Copies of these articles were carried by swift messengers to Newcastle. Rizzio's name was not mentioned; there was nothing in them to show that more was intended than a forcible revolution on the meeting of Parliament; and such as they were, they were promptly signed by Murray and his friends. Argyle subscribed, Maitland subscribed, Ruthven subscribed; Morton hesitated, but at the crisis of his uncertainty Mary Stuart innocently carried out her threat of depriving him of the chancellorship, and he added his name in a paroxysm of anger. It need not be supposed that the further

¹ Bond subscribed March 6, 1566: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

secret was unknown to any of them, but it was undesirable to commit the darker features of the plot to formal writing.

Meanwhile the Queen of Scots, all unconscious of the deadly coil which was gathering round her, had chosen the moment to order Randolph to leave Scotland. She entertained not the faintest suspicion of the conspiracy, but she knew that the English ambassador had shared Murray's secrets, that he had been Elizabeth's instrument in keeping alive in Scotland the Protestant faction, and that so long as he remained the party whom she most detested would have a nucleus to gather round. Believing that she could do nothing which Elizabeth would dare to resent, she called him before the council, charged him with holding intercourse with her rebels, and bade him begone.¹ The opportunity was ill selected, for Elizabeth had been for some time recovering her firmness; she had sent Murray money for his private necessities; in the middle of February she had so far overcome both her economy and her timidity, that she supplied him with a thousand pounds 'to be employed in the common cause and maintenance of religion;' ² and before she heard of the treatment of Randolph she had taken courage to write with something of her old manner to the Queen of Scots herself.

'She had not intended,' she said, 'to have written on

¹ The Queen of Scots to Elizabeth, both, February 20: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

Murray of the receipt of moneys from the Queen's Majesty, February, 1566: *MS. Ibid.*

² Acknowledgment by the Earl of

the subject again to her, but hearing that her intercession hitherto in favour of the lords had been not only fruitless, but that at the approaching Parliament the Queen of Scots meant to proceed to the worst extremities, she would no longer forbear to speak her mind.' The Earl of Murray had risen in arms against her only to prevent her marriage and for the defence of his own life from the malice which was borne him; he was the truest and best of her subjects; and therefore, she said, 'in the interest of both the realms we are moved to require you to have that regard that the Earl and others with him may be received to your grace, or if not that you will forbear proceeding against him and the others until some better opportunity move you to show them favour.'

March. In this mood Elizabeth was not inclined to bear with patience the dismissal of her ambassador. Proudly and coldly she replied to Mary Stuart's announcement of what she had done, 'that inasmuch as the Queen of Scots had been pleased to break the usages of nations and pass this affront upon her, as this was the fruit of the long forbearance which she had herself shown, she would be better advised before she entered into any further correspondence; she would take such measures as might be necessary for her own defence; and for the Earl of Murray, to deal plainly, she could not, for her honour and for the opinion she had of his sincerity and loyalty towards his country, but see him relieved in England, whereof she thought it convenient to advertise

¹ Elizabeth to the Queen of Scots, February 24: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

the Queen of Scots; if harm came of it she trusted God would convert the evil to those that were the cause of it.'¹

The first and probably the second of those letters never reached their destination: the events which were going forward in Scotland rendered entreaties and threats in behalf of Murray alike unnecessary.² Randolph, though ordered off, was unwilling to go till he saw the execution of the plot: he made excuses for remaining till an escort came to his door with orders to see him over the frontiers, and he was compelled to obey. Bothwell met him on the road to Berwick with apologies and protests; but Randolph said he knew that Bothwell and one other—no doubt Rizzio—were those who had advised his expulsion. They desired to force Elizabeth to declare war, when Bothwell hoped 'to win his spurs.'³

Far enough was the Queen of Scots from the triumphant war which she was imagining; far enough was Bothwell from his spurs, and Rizzio from his chancellorship and the investiture of the lands of Murray. The mine was dug, the train was laid, the match was lighted, to scatter them and their projects all to the winds.

The Parliament was summoned for Monday, the 11th of March; on the 12th the Bill of Attainder against the lords was to be brought forward and pressed to immediate completion. On Friday, the 8th, the conspirators

¹ Elizabeth to the Queen of Scots, March 3: *Lansdowne MSS.* 8. | your Majesty's letters in his behalf.

² 'A great business is in hand in Scotland, which will bring about the recall of the Earl of Murray, so that we have forborne to forward | —Randolph and Bedford to Elizabeth, March 6: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

³ Randolph to Cecil, March 6: *MS.* Ibid.

sent a safe-conduct, signed by Darnley, to bring Murray back to Scotland. Lord Hume had been gained over, and had undertaken to escort his party through the marches, and before the Earl and his companions could reach Edinburgh all would be over.¹

The outline of the intended proceedings was sketched by Randolph for Cecil's information on his arrival at Berwick.

BEDFORD AND RANDOLPH TO CECIL.²

Berwick, March 6.

'The Lord Darnley, weary of bearing the name of a king and not having the honour pertaining to such a dignity, is in league with certain of the lords for a great attempt, whereby the noblemen now out of their country may without great difficulty be restored, and in the end tranquillity ensue in that country. Somewhat we are sure you have heard of diverse discords and jars between the Queen and her husband; partly for that she hath refused him the crown matrimonial, partly for that he hath assured knowledge of such usage of himself as altogether is intolerable to be borne, which, if it were not over-well known, we would both be very loth that it could be true. To take away this occasion of slander he is himself determined to be at the apprehension and execution of him whom he is able manifestly to charge with the crime, and to have done him the most dishonour that can be to any man, much more being as he is. We

¹ Bedford and Randolph to Cecil and Leicester, March 8: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² *MS. Ibid.*

need not more plainly describe the person—you have heard of the man whom we mean.

‘The time of execution and performance of these matters is before the Parliament, as near as it is. To this determination there are privy in Scotland these—Argyle, Morton, Ruthven, Boyd, and Lidington; in England these—Murray, Grange, Rothés, myself (Bedford), and the writer hereof (Randolph).

‘If the Queen will not yield to persuasion, we know not how they propose to proceed. If she make a power at home she will be fought with; if she seek aid from abroad the country will be placed at the Queen’s Majesty’s disposal to deal as she think fit.’

In the blindness of confidence, and to prevent the chance of failure in Parliament, Mary Stuart had collected the surviving peers of the old ‘spiritual estate,’ the Catholic bishops and abbots, and placed them ‘in the antient manner,’ intending, as she herself declared, ‘to have done some good anent the restoring the auld religion, and to have proceeded against the rebels according to their demerits.’ On Thursday, the 7th, she presided in person at the choice of the Lords of the Articles, naming with her own mouth ‘such as would say what she thought expedient to the forfeiture of the banished lords;’² and on Friday there was a preliminary

¹ The Queen of Scots to the Archbishop of Glasgow, April 2: KEITH.

Ruthven said to the Queen. ‘Not I,’ said the Queen. ‘Saving your presence,’ said he, ‘you chose them all, and nominated them.’

² RUTHVEN’S narrative.—‘Who chose the Lords of the Articles?’

meeting at the Tolbooth to prepare the Bill of Attainder. The Lords of the Articles,¹ carefully as they had been selected, at first reported 'that they could find no cause sufficient for so severe a measure.'² The next day—Saturday—the Queen appeared at the Tolbooth in person, and after 'great reasoning and opposition' carried her point. 'There was no other way but the lords should be attainted.'³ The Act was drawn, the forfeiture was decreed, and required only the sanction of the Estates.⁴

The same day, perhaps at the same hour, when Mary Stuart was exulting in the consciousness of triumph, the conspirators were completing their preparations. Sunday, the 10th, had been the day on which they had first fixed to strike their blow. But Darnley was impatient. He swore that 'if the slaughter was not hasted' he would stab David in the Queen's presence with his own hand. Each hour of delay was an additional risk of discovery, and it was agreed that the deed should be done the same evening. Ruthven proposed to seize Rizzio in his own room, to try him before an extemporized tribunal, and to hang him at the market cross. So commonplace a proceeding however would not satisfy the imagination of Darnley, who desired a more dramatic revenge; he would have his enemy seized in the

¹ The Lords of the Articles were a committee chosen from the Three Estates, and according to law, chosen *by* the Estates, to prepare the measures which were to be submitted to Parliament.

² RUTHVEN's narrative.

³ KNOX.

⁴ The Queen of Scots to the Archbishop of Glasgow, April 2: KEITH.

Queen's own room, in the very sanctuary of his intimacy ; ' where she might be taunted in his presence because she had not entertained her husband as she ought of duty.' The ill-spirited boy, in retaliation for treatment which went it is likely no further than coldness and contempt, had betrayed or invented his own disgrace, to lash his kindred into fury and to break the spirit of the proud woman who had humbled him with her scorn.

The Queen's friends—Huntly, Athol, Sutherland, Bothwell, Livingston, Fleming, Sir James Balfour, and others—were in Edinburgh for the Parliament, and had rooms in Holyrood ; but as none of them dreamt of danger there were no troops there but the ordinary guard, which was scanty and could be easily overpowered. It was arranged that as soon as darkness had closed in the Earl of Morton with a party of the Douglasses and their kindred should silently surround the palace : at eight o'clock the doors should be seized and no person permitted to go out or in ; while Morton himself with a sufficient number of trusted friends should take possession of the staircase leading to the Queen's rooms, and cut off communication with the rest of the building. Meanwhile the rest——. But a plan of the rooms is necessary to make the story intelligible. The suite of apartments occupied by Mary Stuart were on the first floor in the north-west angle of Holyrood Palace. They communicated in the usual way by a staircase with the large inner quadrangle. A door from the landing led directly into the presence chamber ;

inside the presence chamber was the bedroom ; and beyond the bedroom a small cabinet or boudoir not more than twelve feet square, containing a sofa, a table, and two or three chairs. Here after the labours of the day the Queen gave her little supper parties. Darnley's rooms were immediately below, connected with the bedroom by a narrow spiral staircase, which opened close to the little door leading into the cabinet.

‘ Knowing the King's character, and that he would have a lusty princess afterwards in his arms,’ the conspirators required his subscription to another bond, by which he declared that all that was done ‘ was his own device and intention ; ’ and then after an early supper together, Ruthven, though so ill that he could hardly stand, with his brother George Douglas, Ker of Faldon-

side, and one other, followed Darnley to his
March 9. room, and thence with hushed breath and stealthy steps they ascended the winding stairs. A tapestry curtain hung before the cabinet. Leaving his companions in the bedroom, Darnley raised it and entered. Supper was on the table ; the Queen was sitting on the sofa, Rizzio in a chair opposite to her, and Murray's loose sister, the Countess of Argyle, on one side. Arthur Erskine the equerry, Lord Robert Stuart, and the Queen's French physician were in attendance standing.

Darnley placed himself on the sofa at his wife's side. She asked him if he had supped. He muttered something, threw his arm round her waist, and kissed her. As she shrank from him half surprised, the curtain was

again lifted, and against the dark background, alone, his corslet glimmering through the folds of a crimson sash, a steel cap on his head, and his face pale as if he had risen from the grave, stood the figure of Ruthven.

Glaring for a moment on Darnley, and answering his kiss with the one word 'Judas,' Mary Stuart confronted the awful apparition, and demanded the meaning of the intrusion.

Pointing to Rizzio, and with a voice sepulchral as his features, Ruthven answered :

'Let yon man come forth; he has been here over long.'

'What has he done?' the Queen answered; 'he is here by my will.' 'What means this?' she said, turning again on Darnley.

The caitiff heart was already flinching. 'Ce n'est rien!' he muttered. 'It is nothing!'¹ But those whom he had led into the business would not let it end in nothing.

'Madame,' said Ruthven, 'he has offended your honour; he has offended your husband's honour; he has caused your Majesty to banish a great part of the nobility that he might be made a lord; he has been the

¹ Bedford and Randolph in their report from Berwick, said the King answered 'It was against her honour.' But these words were used by Ruthven. An original report, printed by TEULET, vol. ii. p. 262, compared with that given by Mary

herself in the letter to the Archbishop of Glasgow, printed in KEITH, creates a belief that the words in the text were those which Darnley really used. They are more in keeping with his character.

destroyer of the commonwealth, and must learn his duty better.'

'Take the Queen your wife to you,' he said to Darnley, as he strode forward into the cabinet.

The Queen started from her seat 'all amazed,' and threw herself in his way, while Rizzio cowered trembling behind her and clung to her dress.

Stuart, Erskine, and the Frenchman, recovering from their astonishment and seeing Ruthven apparently alone, 'made at him to thrust him out.'

'Lay no hands on me,' Ruthven cried, and drew his dagger; 'I will not be handled.' In another moment Faldonside and George Douglas were at his side. Faldonside held a pistol at Mary Stuart's breast; the bedroom door behind was burst open, and the dark throng of Morton's followers poured in. Then all was confusion; the table was upset, Lady Argyle catching a candle as it fell. Ruthven thrust the Queen into Darnley's arms and bade him hold her; while Faldonside bent Rizzio's little finger back till he shrieked with pain and loosed the convulsive grasp with which he clung to his mistress.

'Do not hurt him,' Mary said faintly. 'If he has done wrong he shall answer to justice.'

'This shall justify him,' said the savage Faldonside, drawing a cord out of his pocket. He flung a noose round Rizzio's body, and while George Douglas snatched the King's dagger from its sheath, the poor wretch was dragged into the midst of the scowling crowd and borne away into the darkness. He caught Mary's bed

as he passed; Faldonside struck him sharply on the wrist; he let go with a shriek, and as he was hurried through the anteroom the cries of his agony came back upon Mary's ear; 'Madame, madame, save me! save me!—justice—I am a dead man! spare my life!'

Unhappy one! his life would not be spared. They had intended to keep him prisoner through the night and hang him after some form of trial; but vengeance would not wait for its victim. He was borne alive as far as the stairhead, when George Douglas, with the words 'This is from the King,' drove Darnley's dagger into his side; a moment more and the whole fierce crew were on him like hounds upon a mangled wolf; he was stabbed through and through with a hate which death was not enough to satisfy, and was then dragged head foremost down the staircase, and lay at its foot with sixty wounds in him.

So ended Rizzio, unmourned by living soul save her whose favour had been his ruin, unheeded now that he was dead as common carrion, and with no epitaph on his remains except a few brief words from an old servant of the palace, so pathetic because so commonplace. The body was carried into the lodge and flung upon a chest to be stripped for burial. 'Here is his destiny,' the porter moralized as he stood by; 'for on this chest was his first bed when he came to this place, and there now he lieth a very niggard and misknown knave.'¹

The Queen meanwhile, fearing the worst but not

¹ RUTHVEN'S narrative.

knowing that Rizzio actually was dead, had struggled into her bedroom, and was there left with Ruthven and her husband. Ruthven had followed the crowd for a moment, but not caring to leave Darnley alone with her had returned. She had thrown herself sobbing upon a seat; the Earl bade her not be afraid, no harm was meant to her; what was done was by the King's order.

'Yours!' she said, turning on Darnley as on a snake; 'was this foul act yours? Coward! wretch! did I raise you out of the dust for this?'

Driven to bay he answered sullenly that he had good cause; and then his foul nature rushing to his lips he flung brutal taunts at her for her intimacy with Rizzio, and complaints as nauseous of her treatment of himself.¹

'Well,' she said, 'you have taken your last of me and your farewell; I shall never rest till I give you as sorrowful a heart as I have at this present.'

Ruthven tried to soothe her, but to no purpose. Could she have trampled Darnley into dust upon the spot she would have done it. Catching sight of the

¹ The expressions themselves are better unproduced. The conversation rests on the evidence of Ruthven, which is considerably better than Darnley's, and if it was faithfully related might justify Randolph's view of the possible parentage of James the Sixth. But the recollection of a person who had been just concerned in so tremendous a scene was not likely to be very exact. Bedford and Randolph believed the worst: 'It is our part,' they said in

a despatch to the English council, 'rather to pass the matter over in silence than to make any rehearsal of things committed to us in secret; but we know to whom we write;' and they went on to describe the supposed conversation word for word as Ruthven related it. Those who are curious in Court scandals may refer to this letter, which has been printed by Mr Wright in the first volume of *Elizabeth and her Times*.

empty scabbard at his side, she asked him where his dagger was.

He said he did not know.

‘It will be known hereafter,’ she said; ‘it shall be dear blood to some of you if David’s be spilt. Poor David!’ she cried, ‘good and faithful servant! may God have mercy on your soul.’

Fainting between illness and excitement, Ruthven with a half apology sank into a chair and called for wine.

‘Is this your sickness?’ she said bitterly. ‘If I die of my child and the commonwealth come to ruin, there are those who will revenge me on the Lord Ruthven. Running over the proud list of friends with which she had fooled her fancy, she threatened him with Philip and Charles and Maximilian and her uncles and the Pope.

‘Those are over-great persons,’ Ruthven answered, ‘to meddle with so poor a man as me. No harm is meant you. If aught has been done to-night which you mislike, your husband and none of us is the cause.’

The courage and strength with which the Queen had hitherto borne up began to give way.

‘What—what have I done to be thus handled?’ she sobbed.

‘Ask your husband,’ said the Earl.

‘No,’ she said, ‘I will ask you. I will set my crown before the Lords of the Articles, and if they find I have offended, let them give it where they please.’

‘Who chose the Lords of the Articles?’ Ruthven answered with a smile, ‘you chose them all.’

At this moment the boom was heard of the alarm bell in Edinburgh. A page rushed in to say that there was fighting in the quadrangle; and the Earl, leaning heavily on a servant’s arm, rose and went down. Huntly, Sutherland, and Bothwell, hearing the noise and confusion, had come out of their rooms to know what it meant. Morton’s followers required them to surrender: they had called a few servants about them and were defending themselves against heavy odds when Ruthven appeared. Ill as he was he thrust himself into the *mêlée*, commanded both sides to drop their arms, and by the glare of a torch read to them Darnley’s bond. ‘The banished earls,’ he said, ‘would be at Holyrood in the morning, and he prayed that all feuds and passions might be buried in the dead man’s grave.’

The Queen’s friends, surprised and outnumbered, affected to be satisfied; the leaders on both sides shook hands; and Bothwell and Huntly withdrew to their own apartments, forced open the windows, dropped to the ground and fled.

This disturbance was scarcely over when the Provost of Edinburgh came out of the Canongate with four hundred of the town guard, and demanded the meaning of the uproar. The Provost was a supporter of the Queen; Mary dashed from her seat, wrenched back the casement, and cried out for help.

‘Sit down,’ some ruffian cried. ‘If you stir you

shall be cut in collops and flung over the walls.' ¹ She was dragged away, and Darnley, whose voice was well known, called out that the Queen was well, that what had been done was done by orders from himself, and that they might go home. The citizens bore no good will to Rizzio: too familiar with wild scenes to pay much heed to them, they inquired no further, and went back to their homes, leaving eighty of their number to assist Morton in the guard of the palace.

Ruthven returned for a moment, but only to call Darnley away and leave the Queen to her rest. The King withdrew, and with him all the other actors in the late tragedy who had remained in the scene of it. The ladies of the Court were forbidden to enter, and Mary Stuart was locked alone into her room amidst the traces of the fray, to seek such repose as she could find.

So closed Saturday, the 9th of March, at Holyrood. The same night another dark deed was done in Edinburgh, which passed scarce noticed in the agitation of the murder of Rizzio. Mary of Lorraine the year before her death had a chaplain named Black; he was a lax kind of man, and after being detected in sundry moral improprieties, had been banished to England, where he held a cure in the English Church near Newcastle. His old habits remained with him: he acknowledged to Lord Bedford one bad instance of seduction; but it is to be supposed that he had merit of

¹ The speaker is not known. Mary says in her letter to the Archbishop of Glasgow, 'The Lords in our face declared that we should be cut down.' It was not Ruthven, who was still absent.

some kind, for Mary Stuart, as soon as she was emancipated from the first thralldom of the Puritans, recalled him, took him into favour, and appointed him one of the Court preachers. He had better have remained in Northumberland. A citizen encountered him a little before Christmas in some room or passage where he should not have been. He received 'two or three blows with a cudgel and one with a dagger,' and had been since unable to leave his bed. While Edinburgh was shuddering over the scene in the palace, a brother or husband who had matter against the chaplain—the same perhaps who had stabbed him—finished his work, and murdered the wounded wretch where he lay.¹

In the morning at daybreak a proclamation went out in the King's name that the Parliament was postponed, and that 'all bishops, abbots, and Papists should depart the town.' Murray was expected in a few hours; no one knew how deep or how far the conspiracy had gone, and the Catholics, uncertain what to do, offered no resistance. What was to be done with the Queen was the next difficulty. They had caged their bird, but it might be less easy to hold her; and if they believed the Queen was crushed or broken, the conspirators knew little of the temper which they had undertaken to control: sleeping behind that grace of form and charin of manner there lay a spirit which no misfortune could tame—a nature like a panther's, merciless and beautiful—and along with it every dexterous

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 13 : *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

art by which women can outwit the coarser intellects of men.

In the silence and solitude of that awful night she nerved herself for the work before her. With the grey of the twilight she saw Sir James Melville passing under her window, and called to him to bring the city guard and rescue her; but Melville bowed and passed on; at that moment rescue was impossible; she had nothing to depend upon but her own courage and her husband's folly. Could she escape her friends would rally round her, and her first thought was to fly in the disguise of one of her gentlewomen. But to escape alone, even if possible, would be to leave Darnley with the lords; she resolved to play a bolder game, to divide him from them, and carry him off, and to leave them without the name of a king to shield their deed.

In the first agony of passion she had been swept away from her self-control, and she had poured on her husband the full stream of her hate and scorn. He returned to her room on the Sunday morning to find her in appearance subdued, composed, and affectionate. To Mary Stuart it was an easy matter to play upon the selfish, cowardly, and sensual nature of Darnley. As Ruthven had foreseen, she worked upon him by her caresses; she persuaded him that he had been fatally deceived in his supposed injuries; but she affected to imagine that he had been imposed on by the arts of others, and when he lied she pretended to believe him. She uttered no word of reproach, but she appealed to him through the child—his child—whose safety was

endangered ; and she prayed that at least, situated as she was, she might not be left entirely among men, and that her ladies might be allowed to attend her.

Soft as the clay of which he was made, Darnley obtained the reluctant consent of Morton and Ruthven. The ladies of the palace were admitted to assist at the Queen's morning toilet, and the instant use she made of them was to communicate with Huntly and Bothwell. The next point was to obtain larger liberty for herself. Towards the afternoon 'she made as though she would part with her child;' a midwife was sent for, who, with the French physician, insisted that she must be removed to a less confined air. To Darnley she maintained an attitude of dependent tenderness; and fooled in his idle pride by the prayers of the woman whom he believed that he had brought to his feet, he was led on to require that the guard should be removed from the gate, and that the exclusive charge of her should be committed to himself.

The conspirators, 'seeing that he was growing effeminate, liked his proposals in no way;' they warned him that if he yielded so easily 'both he and they would have cause to repent;' and satisfied that the threat of miscarriage was but 'trick and policy,' they refused to dismiss a man from his post, and watched the palace with unremitting vigilance.

So passed Sunday. As the dusk closed in, a troop of horse appeared on the road from Dunbar. In a few moments more the Earl of Murray was at the gate.

It was not thus that Mary Stuart had hoped to meet

her brother. His head sent home by Bothwell from the Border, or himself brought back a living prisoner, with the dungeon, the scaffold, and the bloody axe—these were the images which a few weeks or days before she had associated with the next appearance in Edinburgh of her father's son. Her feelings had undergone no change. He knew some secrets about her which she could not pardon the possessor, and she hated him with the hate of hell; but the more deep-set passion paled for the moment before a thirst for revenge on Rizzio's murderers.

On alighting the Earl was conducted immediately to the Queen's presence. The accomplished actress threw herself sobbing into his arms.

'Oh my brother,' she said as she kissed him, 'if you had been here I should not have been so uncourteously handled.'

Murray had 'a free and generous nature.' But a few hours had passed since she had forced the unwilling Lords of the Articles to prepare a Bill of Attainder against him; but her shame, her seeming helplessness, and the depth of her fall touched him, and he shed tears.

The following morning Murray, Ruthven, Morton, and the rest of the party, met to ^{March 11.} consider the next step which they should take. Little is known of their deliberations except from the suspected source of a letter from Mary Stuart to the Archbishop of Glasgow. Some, she said, proposed to keep her a perpetual prisoner, some to put her to death.

some 'that she should be warded in Stirling Castle till she had approved in Parliament what they had done, established their religion, and given to the King the whole government of the realm.'

Some measure of this sort they were without doubt prepared to venture; it had been implied in the very nature of their enterprise: yet to carry it out they required Darnley's countenance, and fool and coward as they knew him to be they had not fathomed the depth of his imbecility and baseness. While the lords were in consultation the Queen had wormed the whole secret from him; he told her of the plot for the return of Murray and his friends, with the promises which had been made to himself; he revealed every name that he knew, concealing nothing save that the murder had been his own act and design and provoked by his accusations against herself; he had forgotten that his own handwriting could be produced in deadly witness against him. From that moment she played upon him like an instrument; she showed him that if he remained with the lords he would be a tool in their hands; she assured him of the return of her own affection for him, and flattered his fancy with visions of greatness which might be in store for him if he would take his place again at her side; she talked of 'his allies the confederate princes,' who would be displeased if he changed his religion; she appealed again to the unborn heir of their united greatness, and she bound him soul and body to do her bidding.

After possessing him with the plans which she had

formed to escape, she sent him to the lords to promise in her name that she was ready to forget the past, and to bury all unkindness in a general reconciliation. They felt instinctively that what they had done could never really be pardoned; but Ruthven, Morton, and Murray returned with Darnley to her presence, when again, with the seeming simplicity of which she was so finished a mistress, she repeated the same assurances. She was ready, she said, to bind herself in writing if they would not trust her word; and while the two other noblemen were drawing a form for her to sign, she took Murray by the hand and walked with him for an hour. She then retired to her room. Darnley, as soon as the bond was ready, took charge of it, promising to return it signed on the following day; and meanwhile he pressed again that after so much concession on her part they were bound to meet her with corresponding courtesy, and to spare her the ignominy of being longer held a prisoner in her own palace.

Had they refused to consent, an attempt would have been made that night by Bothwell to carry her off by force. But to reject the request of Darnley, whose elevation to a share of the throne was the professed object of the conspiracy, was embarrassing and perhaps dangerous; they gave way after another warning; the guard was withdrawn, Ruthven protesting as he yielded that 'whatever bloodshed followed should be on the King's head.'

The important point gained, Darnley would not awake suspicion by returning to the Queen; he sent her

word privately that ‘all was well;’ and at eight in the evening Stewart of Traquair, Captain of the Royal Guard, Arthur Erskine, ‘whom she would trust with a thousand lives,’ and Standen, a young and gallant gentleman, assembled in the Queen’s room to arrange a plan for the escape from Holyrood. The first question was where she was to go. Though the gates were no longer occupied the palace would doubtless be watched; and to attempt flight and to fail would be certain ruin. In the Castle of Edinburgh she would be safe with Lord Erskine, but she could reach the Castle only through the streets which would be beset with enemies; and unfit as she was for the exertion, she determined to make for Dunbar.

She stirred the blood of the three youths with the most touching appeal which could be made to the generosity of man. Pointing to the child that was in her womb, she adjured them by their loyalty to save the unborn hope of Scotland. So addressed they would have flung themselves naked on the pikes of Morton’s troopers. They swore they would do her bidding be it what it would; and then ‘after her sweet manner and wise directions, she dismissed them till midnight to put all in order as she herself excellently directed.’

‘The rendezvous appointed with the horses was near the broken tombs and demolished sepulchres in the ruined Abbey of Holyrood.’¹ A secret passage led underground from the palace to the vaults of the abbey;

¹ Then standing at the south-eastern angle of the Royal Chapel.

and at midnight Mary Stuart, accompanied by one servant and her husband—who had left the lords under pretence of going to bed—‘crawled through the charnel-house, among the bones and skulls of the antient kings,’ and ‘came out of the earth’ where the horses were shivering in the March midnight air.

The moon was clear and full. ‘The Queen with incredible animosity was mounted *en croup* behind Sir Arthur Erskine upon a beautiful English double gelding,’ ‘the King on a courser of Naples;’ and then away—away—past Restalrig, past Sir Arthur’s Seat, across the bridge and across the field of Musselburgh, past Seton, past Prestonpans, fast as their horses could speed; ‘six in all—their Majesties, Erskine, Traquair, and a chamberer of the Queen.’ In two hours the heavy gates of Dunbar had closed behind them, and Mary Stuart was safe.¹

Whatever credit is due to iron fortitude and intellectual address must be given without stint to this extraordinary woman. Her energy grew with exertion; the terrible agitation of the three preceding days, the wild escape, and a midnight gallop of more than twenty miles within three months of her confinement, would have

¹ The account of the escape is taken from a letter of Antony Standen, preserved among the *Cecil MSS.* at Hatfield; the remaining details of the murder and the circumstances connected with it, are collected from RUTHVEN’s narrative, printed in KEITH; the letters of Bedford and Randolph, printed by WRIGHT; the two Italian accounts in the seventh volume of LABANOFF; CALDERWOOD’S *History*; Mary Stuart’s letter to the Archbishop of Glasgow, and a letter of Paul de Foix, printed by TEULET.

shaken the strength of the least fragile of human frames, but Mary Stuart seemed not to know the meaning of the word exhaustion ; she had scarce alighted from her horse than couriers were flying east, west, north, and south, to call the Catholic nobles to her side ; she wrote her own story to her minister at Paris, bidding the Archbishop in a postscript anticipate the false rumours which would be spread against her honour, and tell the truth—her version of the truth—to the Queen-mother and the Spanish ambassador.

To Elizabeth she wrote with her own hand, fierce, dauntless, and haughty, as in her highest prosperity.¹ ‘Ill at ease with her escape from Holyrood, and suffering from the sickness of pregnancy, she demanded to know whether the Queen of England intended to support the traitors who had slain her most faithful servant in her presence. If she listened to their calumnies and upheld them in their accursed deeds, she was not so unprovided of friends as her sister might dream ; there were princes enough to take up her quarrel in such a cause.’

The loyalty of Scotland answered well its sovereign’s summons. The faithful Bothwell, ever foremost in good or evil in Mary Stuart’s service, brought in the night-riders of Liddesdale, the fiercest of the Border marauders ; Huntly came, forgetting his father and brother’s death and his own long imprisonment ; the Archbishop of St

¹ This letter may be seen in the Rolls House ; the strokes thick and strong, firm, and without sign of slightly uneven from excitement, but tremulousness.

Andrew's—an evil omen to Darnley—was followed by a thousand Hamiltons; Erskine from the Castle sent word of his fidelity; and the Earl Marshal, Athol, Caithness, and a hundred more hurried to Dunbar with every trooper that they could raise. In four days the Queen found herself at the head of a small army of eight thousand men.

On the other hand the conspirators' plans were disconcerted hopelessly by the flight of the King. Perplexed, divided, uncertain what to do when the slightest hesitation was ruin—they lost confidence in one another and in their cause. Had they held together they could still have collected force enough to fight. The Western Highlands were at the devotion of Argyle, and he at any time could command his own terms; but Elizabeth's behaviour in the preceding autumn had for ever shaken Argyle's policy. The Queen 'not venturing,' as she said herself, 'to have so many at once on her hands,' sent to say she would pardon the rebellion of the summer and would receive into favour all who had not been present at or been concerned in the murder of Rizzio. 'They seeing now their liberty and restitution offered them, were content to leave those who were the occasion of their return, and took several appointments as they could.'¹ Glencairn joined Mary at Dunbar; Rothes followed; and then Argyle, the central pillar of the Protestant party. Three only of those who had been in England refused to desert their friends—the stainless noble

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 21.

Murray, Kirkaldy of Grange, and the Laird of Patarrow. 'These standing so much upon their honour and promise would not leave the other without likelihood to do them good.'¹

Thus within a week from her flight Mary Stuart was able to return in triumph to Edinburgh. She had succeeded so entirely that she was already able to throw off the mask towards Darnley. Sir James Melville met her on the road: she 'lamented to him the King's folly and ingratitude;' and it was to no purpose that the old far-sighted diplomatist warned her against indulging this new resentment; the grudge never left her heart,² and she had made the object of it already feel the value of the promises with which she had wrought upon his weakness. 'The King spoke to me of the lords,' said Melville, 'and it appeared that he was troubled that he had deserted them, finding the Queen's favour but cold.'³

The conspirators, or 'the Lords of the new attemptate' as they were called, made no effort to resist. Erskine threatened to fire on them from the Castle, and before the Queen reached Holyrood, Ruthven, Morton, Maitland, Lindsay, Faldonside, even Knox, were gone their several ways, most of them making for the Border to take shelter with Bedford at Berwick. Murray too left Edinburgh with them, and intended to share their fortunes; but Ruthven and Morton, generous as himself, wrote to beg him 'as the rest had fallen off, not to endanger himself on their account, but to make his peace

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 21

² MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*

³ *Ibid.*

if he was able ;¹ and Murray, feeling that he would do more good for them and for his country by remaining at home than by going with them into a second exile, returned to his sister and was received with seeming cordiality.

Bothwell, whose estates had been forfeited for his share in the Arran conspiracy, was rewarded for his services by 'all that had belonged to Lidington.' The unfortunate King, 'contemned and disesteemed of all,' was compelled to drain the cup of dishonour. He declared before the council 'that he had never counselled, commanded, consented to, assisted, or approved' the murder of Rizzio. His words were taken down in writing and published at the market cross of every town in Scotland. The conspirators retorted with sending the Queen the bond which they had exacted from him, in which he claimed the deed as exclusively his own ; while the fugitives at Berwick addressed a clear, brief statement of the truth to the Government in England :

MORTON AND RUTHVEN TO CECIL.²

Berwick, March 27.

'The very truth is this :—the King, having conceived a deadly hatred against David Rizzio, an Italian, and some others his accomplices, did a long time ago move unto his ally the Lord Ruthven that he might in no way endure the misbehaviour and offence of the foresaid David, and that he might be fortified by him

¹ Randolph to Cecil, March 21 : *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

and some others of the nobility to see the said David executed according to his demerits; and after due deliberation the said Lord Ruthven communicated this the King's mind to the Earl of Morton, with whom having deeply considered the justice of the King's desires in respect of the manifold misbehaviours and misdeeds of the said David Rizzio, tending so manifestly to the great danger of the King's and Queen's Majesties and the whole estate of that realm and commonweal—he not ceasing to abuse daily his great estate and credit to the subversion of religion and the justice of the realm, as is notoriously known to all Scotland and more particularly to us—we, upon the considerations aforesaid, found good to follow the King's determination anent the foresaid execution; and for divers considerations we were moved to haste the same, considering the approaching Parliament, wherein determination was taken to have ruined the whole nobility that then was banished; whereupon we perceived to follow a subversion of religion within the realm, and consequently of the intelligence betwixt the two realms grounded upon the religion; and to the execution of the said enterprise the most honest and the most worthy were easily induced to approve and fortify the King's deliberation.

‘How be it in action and manner of execution, more was followed of the King's advice kindled by an extreme choler than we minded to have done.

‘This is the truth, whatever the King say now, and we are ready to stand by it and prove it.’

CHAPTER XLV.

THE MURDER OF DARNLEY.

THE murder of Rizzio had deranged Mary Stuart's projects in Scotland, and had obliged her to postpone her intended restoration of Catholicism; but her hold on parties in England was rather increased than injured by the interruption of a policy which would have alarmed the moderate Protestants. The extreme Puritans still desired to see the succession decided in favour of the children of Lady Catherine Grey; but their influence in the State had been steadily diminishing as the Marian horrors receded further into the distance. The majority of the peers, the country gentlemen, the lawyers and the judges, were in favour of the pretensions which were recommended at once by justice and by the solid interests of the realm. The union of the crowns of Scotland and England was the most serious desire of the wisest of Elizabeth's statesmen, and the marriage of Mary Stuart with Darnley had removed the prejudice which had attached before to her alien birth.

The difficulty which had hitherto prevented her recognition, had been the persistency with which she identified herself with the party of revolution and ultramontane fanaticism. The English people had no desire for a Puritan sovereign, but as little did they wish to see again the evil days of Bonner and Gardiner. They were jealous of their national independence; they had done once for all with the Pope, and they would have no priesthoods, Catholic or Calvinist, to pry into their opinions or meddle with their personal liberty. For a creed they would be best contented with a something which would leave them in communion with Christendom and preserve to them the form of superstition without the power of it.

Had Elizabeth allowed herself to be swayed by the ultra-Protestants, Mary Stuart would have appealed to arms and would have found the weightiest portion of the nation on her side. Had the Queen of Scots' pretensions been admitted so long as her attitude to the Reformation was that of notorious and thorough-going hostility, she would have supplied a focus for disaffection. A prudent and reasonable settlement would have been then made impossible; and England sooner or later would have become the scene of a savage civil war like that which had lacerated France.

Elizabeth, with the best of her advisers, expected that as she grew older Mary Stuart would consent to guarantee the liberties which England essentially valued, and that bound by conditions which need not have infringed her own liberty of creed, she could be

accepted as the future Queen of the united island. It was with this view that the reversion of the crown had been held before Mary Stuart's eyes coupled with the terms on which it might be hers, while the Puritans had been forbidden to do anything which might have driven her to the ultimatum of force.

The intrigues with Spain, the Darnley marriage, and the attitude which the Queen of Scots had assumed in connection with it, had almost precipitated a crisis. Elizabeth had been driven in despair to throw herself on the fanaticism of the Congregation, to endorse the demands of Knox that the Queen of Scots should abjure her own religion, and afterwards to retreat from her position with ignominious and dishonourable evasions. Yet the perplexity of a sovereign whose chief duty at such a time was to prevent a civil war, deserves or demands a lenient consideration. Had Elizabeth declared war in the interest of Murray and the Protestants, she would have saved her honour, but she would have provoked a bloody insurrection; while it would have become more difficult than ever to recognize the Queen of Scots, more hopeless than ever to persuade her into moderation and good sense. If Elizabeth's conduct in its details had been alike unprincipled and unwise, the broader bearings of her policy were intelligible and commendable; her caprice and vacillation arose from her consciousness of the difficulties by which she was on every side surrounded. The Queen of Scots herself had so far shown in favourable contrast with her sister of England: she had deceived her enemies, but she had

never betrayed a friend. The greater simplicity of her conduct however was not wholly a virtue : it had been produced by the absence of all high and generous consideration. Ambition for herself and zeal for a creed which suited her habits were motives of action which involved and required no inconsistencies. From the day on which she set foot in Scotland she had kept her eye on Elizabeth's throne, and she had determined to restore Catholicism ; but her public schemes were but mirrors in which she could see the reflection of her own greatness, and her creed was but the form of conviction which least interfered with her self-indulgence : the passions which were blended with her policy made her incapable of the restraint which was necessary for her success ; while her French training had taught her lessons of the pleasantness of pleasure, for which she was at any time capable of forgetting every other consideration. Elizabeth forgot the woman in the Queen, and after her first mortification about Leicester preserved little of her sex but its caprices. Mary Stuart when under the spell of an absorbing inclination could fling her crown into the dust and be woman all.

Could she have submitted to the advice so consistently pressed upon her by Philip, Alva, Melville, Throgmorton, by every wise friend that she possessed, the impatience of the English for a settlement of the succession would have rendered her victory certain. She had only to avoid giving occasion for just complaint or suspicion, and the choice of the country notwithstanding her creed—or secretly perhaps in consequence of it

—would have inevitably at no distant time have been determined in her favour. Elizabeth she knew to be more for her than against her. The Conservative weight of the country party would have far outbalanced the Puritanism of the large towns.

But a recognition of her right to an eventual inheritance was not at all the object of Mary Stuart's ambition; nor in succeeding to the English throne did she intend to submit to trammels like those under which she had chafed in Scotland. She had spoken of herself not as the prospective but as the actual Queen of England; ¹ she had told the lords who had followed her to Dunbarton that she would lead them to the gates of London; she would not wait; she would make no compromise; she would wrench the sceptre out of Elizabeth's hands with a Catholic army at her back as the first step of a Catholic revolution. Even here—so far had fortune favoured her—she might have succeeded could she but have kept Scotland united, could she but have availed herself skilfully of the exasperation of the Lords of the Congregation when they found themselves betrayed and deserted, could she have remained on good terms with her husband and his father, and kept the friends of the House of Lennox in both countries true

¹ 'That Queen the other day was in a merchant's house in Edinburgh where was a picture of the Queen's Majesty, when some had said their opinions how like or unlike it was to the Queen's Majesty of England, 'No,' said she, 'it is not like, for I

am Queen of England.' These high words, together with the rest of her doings and meanings towards this realm, I refer to others to consider.' —Bedford to Leicester, February 14, 1566. *PLPYSIAN MSS. Cambridge.*

to her cause. That opportunity she had allowed to escape. It remained to be seen whether she had learnt prudence from the catastrophe from which she had so narrowly escaped; whether she would now abandon her more dangerous courses, and fall back on moderation; or whether if she persisted in trying the more venturous game she could bring herself to forego the indulgence of those personal inclinations and antipathies which had caused the tragedy at Holyrood. If she could forget her injuries, if she could renounce with Rizzio's life her desire to revenge his murder, if she avoided giving open scandal to the Catholic friends of Darnley and his mother, her prospects of an heir would more than re-establish her in the vantage-ground from which she had been momentarily shaken.

Elizabeth, either through fear or policy, seemed as anxious as ever to disconnect herself from the Congregation. The English Government had been informed a month beforehand of the formation of the plot; they had allowed it to be carried into execution without remonstrance; but when the thing was done and Murray was restored the Queen made haste to clear herself of the suspicion of having favoured it. Sir Robert Melville was residing in London, and was occupied notoriously in gaining friends for the Scotch succession. Elizabeth sent for him, and when it was too late to save Rizzio she revealed to him the secret information which had been supplied by Randolph; nay, in one of the many moods into which she drifted in her perplexities, she even spoke of Argyle and Murray as 'rebels pre-

tending reformation of religion.' There were too many persons in England and Scotland who were interested in dividing the Protestant noblemen from the English Court. The Queen's words were carried round to rend still further what remained of the old alliance; and Randolph, discredited on all sides, could but protest to Cecil against the enormous mischief which Elizabeth's want of caution was producing.¹

It appeared as if the Queen had veered round once more and was again throwing her-
April.
 self wholly into Mary Stuart's interests. She replied to the letter which the Queen of Scots addressed to her from Dunbar by sending Melville to Scotland with assurances of sympathy and help; she wrote to Darnley advising him 'to please the Queen of Scots in all things,' and telling him that she would take it as an injury to herself if he offended her again; she advised Murray 'to be faithful to the Queen his sovereign' under pain of her own displeasure.² As to the second set of fugitives who had taken shelter in England—Morton, Ruthven, and the rest—she told Bedford that she would neither acquit nor condemn them till she was more fully informed of their conduct, and that for the present they might remain under his protection;³ but she insisted that they must move to a distance from the frontier, and Melville was allowed to promise Mary Stuart 'that they should meet with nothing but rigour.'

¹ Randolph to Cecil, June 17.
 The letter is addressed significantly
 'To Mr Secretary's self, and only
 for himself.'—*Burghley Papers*, vol. i.

² Sir R. Melville to Elizabeth,
 April 1: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

³ Elizabeth to Bedford, April 2:
MS. Ibid.

De Silva informed Philip that the terror of the scene through which she had passed had destroyed the hope which the Queen of Scots had entertained of combining her subjects against the Queen of England. 'She had found them a people fierce, strange, and changeable; she could trust none of them;¹ and she had therefore responded graciously to the tone which Elizabeth assumed towards her.' In an autograph letter of passionate gratitude Mary Stuart placed herself as it were under her sister's protection; she told her that in tracing the history of the late conspiracy she had found that the lords had intended to imprison her for life, and if England or France came to her assistance they had meant to kill her; she implored Elizabeth to shut her ears to the calumnies which they would spread against her, and with engaging frankness she begged that the past might be forgotten; she had experienced too deeply the ingratitude of those by whom she was surrounded to allow herself to be tempted any more into dangerous enterprises; for her own part she was resolved never to give offence to her good sister again; nothing should be wanting to restore the happy relations which had once existed between them; and should she recover safely from her confinement she hoped that in the summer Elizabeth would make a progress to the north, and that at last she might have an opportunity of thanking her in person for her kindness and forbearance.'²

¹ De Silva to Philip: *MS. Simancas*.

² The Queen of Scots to Elizabeth, April 4: *Scotch MSS. Printed by LABANOFF*, vol. vii. p. 300.

This letter was sent by the hands of a certain Thornton, a confidential agent of Mary Stuart, who had been employed on messages to Rome. 'A very evil and naughty person, whom I pray you not to believe,' was Bedford's credential for him in a letter of the 1st of April to Cecil. He was on his way to Rome again on this present occasion. The public in Scotland supposed that he was sent to consult the Pope on the possibility of divorcing Darnley; and it is remarkable that the Queen of Scots at the close of her own letter desired Elizabeth to give credit to him on some secret matter which he would communicate to her. She perhaps hoped that Elizabeth would now assist her in the dissolution of a marriage which she had been so anxious to prevent.

It was not till her return to Edinburgh that the whole circumstances became known to her which preceded the murder; and—whether she had lost in Rizzio a favoured lover, or whether the charge against her had been invented by Darnley to heat the blood of his kindred—in either case his offence against the Queen was irreparable and deadly, and every fresh act of baseness into which he plunged increased the loathing with which she regarded him. The poor creature laboured to earn his pardon by denouncing accomplice after accomplice. Maitland's complicity was unsuspected till it was revealed by Darnley. He gave up the names of three other gentlemen 'whom only he and no man else knew to be privy.'¹ Maitland's lands were seized, and he had him-

¹ Randolph to Cecil, April 2: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

self to fly into the Highlands. One of the three gentlemen was executed; but the Queen while she used his information repaid his baseness with deserved scorn. The bond which he had signed was under her eyes; and the stories which he had told against her were brought forward by the lords in their own justification. While distrust and fear and suspicion divided home from home and friend from friend, the contempt and hate of all alike was centred on the unhappy caitiff who had betrayed both parties in turn; and Darnley, who was so lately dreaming of himself as sovereign of England and Scotland, was left to wander alone about the country as if the curse of Cain was clinging to him.¹

May. Meanwhile Elizabeth was reaping a harvest of inconveniences from her exaggerated demonstrations of friendliness. The Queen of Scots taking her at her word demanded that Morton and Ruthven should be either surrendered into her hands, or at least should not be permitted to remain in England. Elizabeth would have consented if she had dared, but Argyle and Murray identified their cause with that of their friends. Murray was so anxious that they should do well that 'he wished himself banished for them to have them as they were.' Though they had generously begged him to run no risks in their interest, he had told his sister 'that they had incurred their present danger only on his

¹ 'He is neither accompanied nor looked upon by any nobleman; attended by certain of his own servants and six or eight of his guard, | he is at liberty to do or go what or where he will.'—Randolph to Cecil, April 25; *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

account;’ while Argyle sent word to Elizabeth that if she listened to the Queen of Scots’ demands he would join Shan O’Neil.¹ Vainly Elizabeth struggled to extricate herself from her dilemma; resentment was still pursuing her for her treachery in the past autumn. She dared not shelter the conspirators, for the Queen of Scots would no longer believe her fair speeches, and de Silva was watching her with keen and jealous eyes;² she dared not surrender or expel them lest the last Englishman in Ireland should be flung into the sea. She could but shuffle and equivocate in a manner which had become too characteristic. Ruthven was beyond the reach of human vengeance: he had risen from his sick bed to enact his part in Holyrood, he had sunk back upon it to die. To Morton she sent an order, a copy of which could be shown to the Queen of Scots, to leave the country; but she sent with it a private hint that England was wide, and that those who cared to conceal themselves could not always be found.³ Argyle she tried to soothe and work upon, and she directed Randolph to ‘deal with him.’ She understood, she said, ‘that there was a diminution of his good will towards her service, and specially in the matter of Ireland,’ and that ‘he alleged a lack of her favour in time of his need.’

¹ Randolph to Cecil, May 13 and May 23: *MS. Ibid.*

² ‘Con todas las promesas y demostraciones que esta Reyna ha hecho á la de Escocia al presente de la prometer ayuda y serle amiga y no consentir estos ultimos conspira-

dores en su Reyno, como oygo estan en Newcastle.’—De Silva to Philip, May 18: *MS. Simancas.*

³ Morton to Cecil, May 16; Leicester to Cecil, July 11: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

‘She had been right sorry for the trouble both of him and his friends; she had done all that in honour she could do, omitting nothing for the Earl of Murray’s preservation but open hostility; she trusted therefore that he would alter his mind and withdraw him from the favouring of that principal rebel being sworn cruel adversary to the state of all true religion.’ If possible Randolph was to move Argyle by reasoning and remonstrance; if he failed, ‘sooner than O’Neil should receive any aid from thence she would be content to have some portion of money bestowed secretly by way of reward to the hindrance of it.’ And yet, she said—her thrifty nature coming up again—the money was not to be promised if the Earl could be prevailed on otherwise; ‘of the matter of money she rather made mention as of a thing for Randolph to think upon until he heard farther from her than that he should deal with any person therein.’¹

June. But Elizabeth was not to escape so easily, and Argyle’s resentment had reached a heat which a more open hand than Elizabeth’s would have failed to cool. Murray was ready to forget his own wrongs, but Argyle would not forget them for him, and would not forget his other friends. ‘If the Queen of England,’ the proud M’Callum-More replied, ‘would interfere in behalf of the banished lords, and would undertake that in Scotland there should be no change of religion,’ he on his part ‘would become O’Neil’s enemy, and hinder

¹ Elizabeth to Randolph, May 23: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*, and *Lansdowne MSS.* 9.

what he could the practices between the Queen his sovereign and the Papists of England.’¹ But Elizabeth must accept his terms ; it was a matter with which money, in whatever quantity, had nothing to do. The practices with the English Catholics had begun again, or rather, in spite of Mary Stuart’s promises to abstain from such transactions for the future, they had never ceased ; and a curious discovery was about to be made in connection with them. A report had been sent by Murray to Cecil that there was an Englishman about the Court at Holyrood who was supposed to have come there on no good errand ; he was one of the Rokebys of Yorkshire, and was closely connected with the great Catholic families there. But Cecil it seems knew more of Rokeby’s doings than Murray knew. He had gone across the Border to be out of the way of the bailiffs ; and Cecil, who suspected that Mary Stuart was still playing her old game, and had before been well acquainted with Rokeby, sent him word ‘ that he might purchase pardon and help if he would use his acquaintance in Scotland to the contentation of the Queen’s Majesty,’ in other words, if he would do service as a spy. Rokeby, who wanted money and had probably no honour to lose, made little objection. His brother-in-law, Lascelles, who was one of Mary Stuart’s staunchest friends and correspondents, gave him letters of introduction, and with these he hastened to Edinburgh, and was introduced by Sir James Melville to the Queen.

¹ Randolph to Cecil, June 13 : *Scotch MSS.* Ibid.

In a letter to Cecil he thus describes his reception :—

‘ In the evening, after ten o’clock, I was sent for in secret manner, and being carried into a little closet in Edinburgh Castle the Queen came to me ; and so doing the duty belonging to a prince, I did offer my service, and with great courtesy she did receive me, and said I should be very welcome to her, and so began to ask me many questions of news from the Court of England and of the Queen and of the Lord Robert. I could say but little ; so being very late, she said she would next day confer with me in other causes, and willed me take my ease for the night.

‘ The next night after I was sent for again, and was brought to the same place, where the Queen came to me, she sitting down on a little coffer without a cushion and I kneeling beside. She began to talk of her father, Lascelles, and how much she was beholden to him, and how she trusted to find many friends in England, whensoever time did serve ; and did name Mr Stanley, Herbert, and Dacres, from whom she had received letters, and by means she did make account to win friendship of many of the nobility—as the Duke of Norfolk, the Earls of Derby, Shrewsbury, Northumberland, Westmoreland, and Cumberland. She had better hopes of them for that she thought them all to be of the old religion, which she meant to restore again with all expedition, and thereby win the hearts of the common people. Besides this she practised to have two of the worshipful of every shire of England, and such as were of her religion, to be made her friends, and sought of me to know the names of such as

were meet for that purpose. I answered and said I had little acquaintance in any shire of England but only Yorkshire, and there were great plenty of Papists. She told me she had written a number of letters to Christopher Lascelles with blank superscriptions; and he to direct them to such as he thought meet for that purpose. She told me she had received friendly letters from diverse, naming Sir Thomas Stanley and one Herbert, and Dacres with the crooked back—thus meaning that after she had friended herself in every shire in England with some of the worshipful or of the best countenance of the country, she meant to cause wars to be stirred in Ireland, whereby England might be kept occupied; then she would have an army in readiness, and herself with her army to enter England—and the day that she should enter her title to be read, and she proclaimed Queen. And for the better furniture of this purpose she had before travailed with Spain, with France, and with the Pope for aid; and had received fair promises with some money from the Pope, and more looked for.’¹

Such a revelation as this might have satisfied Elizabeth that it was but waste of labour to attempt any more to return to cordiality and confidence with the Queen of Scots; yet, either from timidity, or because she would not part with the hope that Mary Stuart might eventually shake off her dreams and qualify herself for the succession by prudence and good sense, she would not submit to the conditions on which Argyle offered to remain her friend.

¹ Christopher Rokeby to Cecil, June 1566: *Hatfield MSS.* Printed in *the Burghley Papers*, vol. i.

She could not conceal that she was aware of Mary Stuart's intrigues with her subjects; but she chose to content herself with reading her a lecture, as excellent as it was useless, on the evil of her ways. Messengers were passing and repassing continually between the Court at Holyrood and Shan O'Neil. Other and more sincere English Catholics than Rokeby were coming day after day to Holyrood to offer their swords and to be admitted to confidence. Elizabeth, in the middle of June, sent Sir Henry Killigrew to remonstrate, and 'to demand such present answer as should seem satisfactory,'¹ while to his public instructions she added a private letter of her own.

'Madam,' she wrote to the Queen of Scots, 'I am informed that open rebels against my authority are receiving countenance and favour from yourself and your councillors. The news, madam, I must tell you with your pardon do much displease us. Remove these briars, I pray you, lest some thorn prick the hand of those who are to blame in this. Such matters hurt to the quick. It is not by such ways as these that you will attain the object of your wishes. These be the by-paths which those follow who fear the open road. I say not this for any dread I feel of harm that you may do me. My trust is in Him who governs all things by His justice, and with this faith I know no alarm. The stone recoils often on the head of the thrower, and you will hurt yourself—you have already hurt yourself—more than you can

¹ Instructions to Sir H. Killigrew, sent to the Queen of Scots, June 15. Cecil's hand: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

hurt me. Your actions towards me are as full of venom as your words of honey. I have but to tell my subjects what you are, and I well know the opinion which they will form of you. Judge you of your own prudence—you can better understand these things than I can write them. Assure me under your own hand of your good meaning, that I may satisfy those who are more inclined than I am to doubt you. If you are amusing yourself at my expense, do not think so poorly of me that I will suffer such wrong without avenging it. Remember, my dear sister, that if you desire my affection you must learn to deserve it.’¹

Essentially Elizabeth was acting with the truest regard for the Queen of Scots’ interests, and was in fact behaving with extraordinary forbearance. It was unfortunate that petty accidents should have so perpetually given her rival a temporary advantage and an excuse for believing herself the injured party. Among the Catholics of whose presence at her Court Sir H. Killigrew was instructed to complain, the spy of Cecil had been especially named. Already the Queen of Scots had been warned to beware how she trusted Rokeby; and at once, with an affected anxiety to meet Elizabeth’s wishes, she ordered his arrest and the seizure of his papers. Cecil’s letters to him were discovered in his correspondence, and the evidence of the underplot was too plain to permit Elizabeth to return upon so doubtful a ground.²

¹ Elizabeth to the Queen of Scots, June 13: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Killigrew to Cecil, July 4: *MS. Ibid.*

These however and all subsidiary questions were soon merged in the great event of the summer. On the 19th of June, in Edinburgh Castle, between nine and ten in the morning, was born James Stuart heir-presumptive to the united crowns of England and Scotland. Better worth to Mary Stuart's ambition was this child than all the legions of Spain and all the money of the Vatican; the cradle in which he lay, to the fevered and anxious glance of English politicians, was as a Pharos behind which lay the calm waters of an undisturbed succession and the perpetual union of the too long divided realms. Here if the occasion was rightly used lay the cure for a thousand evils; where all differences might be forgotten, all feuds be laid at rest, and the political fortunes of Great Britain be started afresh on a newer and brighter career.

Scarcely even in her better mind could the birth of the Prince of Scotland be less than a mortification to Elizabeth—knowing, as she could not fail to know, the effect which it would produce upon her subjects. Parliament was to have met in the spring, and she had attempted to force herself into a resolution upon her own marriage, which would enable her to encounter the House of Commons. In the middle of February she believed that she had made up her mind to the Archduke. Sir Richard Sackville had been selected as a commissioner to arrange preliminaries at Vienna; and she had gone so far as to arrange in detail the conditions on which her intended husband was to reside in England.

‘I do understand this to be the state of his [Sackville’s] despatch,’ wrote Sir N. Throgmorton to Leicester.¹ ‘Her Majesty will tolerate the public contract for the exercise of the Archduke’s Roman religion, so as he will promise secretly to her Majesty to alter the said religion hereafter. She doth further say that if the Archduke will come to England she promiseth to marry him unless there be some apparent impediment. She maketh the greatest difficulty to accord unto him some large provision to entertain him at her and the realm’s cost as he demandeth.’

So far had her purpose advanced—even to a haggling over the terms of maintenance; yet at the last moment the thought of losing Leicester for ever became unbearable. He was absent from the Court, and Elizabeth determined to see him once more before the fatal step was taken.

‘After this was written,’ Throgmorton concluded, ‘I did understand her Majesty had deferred the signing of Sackville’s despatch until your Lordship’s coming.’

Cecil at the same time wrote to inform Leicester of the Queen’s resolution; and either the Earl believed that it was his policy to appear to consent, or else, if he may be credited with any interval of patriotism, he was ready for the moment to forget his own ambition in the interest of England.²

¹ February, 1566, endorsed, in Leicester’s hand—‘A very considerable letter.’—PEPYSIAN MSS. *Magdalen College, Cambridge.*

² ‘I heartily thank you, Mr Se-

cretary, for your gentle and friendly letter, wherein I perceive how far her Majesty hath resolved touching the matter she dealt in on my coming away. I pray God her Highness

As however it had been Mary Stuart's first success after her marriage with Darnley which had driven Elizabeth towards a sacrifice which she abhorred; so Rizzio's murder, the return of Murray and his friends, and the recovered vitality of the Protestants in Scotland, gave her again a respite. As Mary Stuart's power to hurt her grew fainter, the Archduke once more ceased to appear indispensable; and when Leicester came back to the Court Sackville's mission was again put off. Again the Queen began to nourish convulsive hopes that she could marry her favourite after all. Again Cecil had to interfere with a table of damning contrasts between the respective merits of the Austrian Prince and the English Earl;¹ and again, when remonstrance seemed

may so proceed therein as may bring but contentation to herself and comfort to all that be hers. Surely there can be nothing that shall so well settle her in good estate as that way—I mean her marriage—whensoever it shall please God to put her in mind to like and to conclude. I know her Majesty hath heard enough thereof, and I wish to God she did hear that more that here abroad is wished and prayed for. Good will it doth move in many, and truly it may easily appear necessity doth require of all. We hear ourselves much also when we be there, but

methinks it is good sometimes that some that be there should be abroad, for that is sooner believed that is seen than heard; and in hope, Mr Secretary, that her Majesty will now earnestly intend that which she hath of long time not yet minded, and delay no longer her time, which cannot be won again for any gift, I will leave that with trust of happiest success, for that God hath left it the only means to redeem us in this world.'—Leicester to Cecil, February 20, 1566: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xxxix., *Rolls House*.

¹ DE MATRIMONIO REGINÆ ANGLIÆ CUM EXTERO PRINCIPE.

April, 1566.

Reasons to move the Queen to accept Charles.

Reasons against the Earl of Leicester

' Besides his person { his birth.
 { his alliance.

' She shall not diminish the

I. ' Nothing is increased by mar-

to fail, the pale shadow of Lady Dudley was called up

honour of a prince to match with a prince.

2. 'When she shall receive messages from kings, her husband shall have of himself by birth and countenances to receive them.

3 'Whatsoever he shall bring to the realm he shall spend it here in the realm.

4. 'He shall have no regard to any person but to please the Queen.

5. 'He shall have no opportunity nor occasion to tempt him to seek the crown after the Queen, because he is a stranger, and hath no friends in the realm to assist him.

6. 'By marriage with him the Queen shall have the friendship of King Philip, which is necessary, considering the likelihood of falling out with France.

7. 'No Prince of England ever remained without good amity of the House of Burgundy, and no prince ever had less alliance than the Queen of England hath, nor any prince ever had more cause to have friendship and power to assist her estate.

8. 'The French King will keep Calais against his pact.

9. 'The Queen of Scots pretendeth title to the crown of England, and so did never foreign prince since the Conquest.

10. 'The Pope also, and all his parties, are watching adversaries to this crown.'—*Burghley Papers*, vol. i. p. 444.

riage of him, either in riches, estimation, or power.

2. 'It will be thought that the slanderous speeches of the Queen with the Earl have been true.

3. 'He shall study nothing but to enhance his own particular friends to wealth, to office, to lands, and to offend others—

Sir H. Sidney.	Leighton.
Earl Warwick.	Christmas.
Sir James Crofts.	Middleton.
Henry Dudley.	Middlemore.
John Dudley.	Colshill.
Foster.	Wiseman.
Sir F. Jobson.	Killigrew.
Appleyard.	Molyneux.
Horsey.	

4. 'He is infamed by the death of his wife.

5. 'He is far in debt.

6. 'He is like to prove unkind, or jealous of the Queen's Majesty.

out of the tomb and waved the lovers once more asunder.¹

Thus the season passed on; summer came, and James's birth found Elizabeth as far from marriage as ever; Parliament had been once more postponed, but the public service could be conducted no longer without a subsidy, and a meeting at Michaelmas was inevitable.

Scarcely was Mary Stuart delivered and the child's sex made known, than Sir James Melville was in the saddle. The night of the 19th he slept at Berwick; on the evening of the 22nd he rode into London. A grand party was going forward at Greenwich: the Queen was in full force and spirit, and the Court in its summer splendour. A messenger glided through the crowd and spoke to Cecil; Cecil whispered to his mistress, and Elizabeth flung herself into a seat, dropped her head upon her hand, and exclaimed 'The Queen of Scots is the mother of a fair son, and I am but a barren stock.' Bitter words!—how bitter those only knew who had watched her in the seven years' struggle between passion and duty.

She could have borne it better perhaps had her own scheme been carried out for a more complete self-sacrifice, and had Leicester been the father of the future king. Then at least she would have seen her darling honoured and great; then she would have felt secure of

¹ It was probably at this time Appleyard made his confession that 'he had covered his sister's murder,' and that Sir Thomas Blount was secretly examined by the council. | There is little room for doubt that the menace of exposure was the instrument made use of to prevent Elizabeth from ruining herself.—*See cap. 39.*

her rival's loyalty and of the triumph of those great principles of English freedom for which she had fought her long, and as it now seemed, her losing battle. The Queen of Scots had challenged her crown, intrigued with her subjects, slighted her councils, and defied her menaces, and this was the result.

But Elizabeth had been apprenticed in self-control. By morning she had overcome her agitation and was able to give Melville an audience.

The ambassador entered her presence radiant with triumph. The Queen affected, perhaps she forced herself to feel, an interest in his news, and she allowed him to jest upon the difficulty with which the prince had been brought into the world. 'I told her,' he reported afterwards,¹ 'that the Queen of Scots had dearly bought her child, being so sore handled that she wished she had never been married. This I said by the way to give her a scare from marriage and from Charles of Austria.' Elizabeth smiled painfully and spoke as graciously as she could, though Melville believed that at heart she was burning with envy and disappointment. The trial was doubtless frightful, and the struggle to brave it may have been but half successful; yet when he pressed her to delay the recognition no longer she seemed to feel that she could not refuse, and she promised to take the opinion of the lawyers without further hesitation. So great indeed had been the disappointment of English statesmen at the last trifling

¹ MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*.

with the Archduke that they had abandoned hope. The Scottish Prince was the sole object of their interest, and all the motives which before had recommended Mary Stuart were working with irresistible force. Whatever might be the Queen's personal reluctance, Melville was able to feel that it would avail little; the cause of his mistress, if her game was now played with tolerable skill, was virtually won. Norfolk declared for her, Pembroke declared for her, no longer caring to conceal their feelings; even Leicester, now that his own chances were over, became 'the Queen of Scots' avowed friend,' and pressed her claims upon Elizabeth, 'alleging that to acknowledge them would be her greatest security, and that Cecil would undo all.'¹ All that Melville found necessary was to give his mistress a few slight warnings and cautions.

July. Her recognition as second person he knew that she regarded as but a step to the dethronement of Elizabeth; nor did he advise her to abandon her ambition. He did not wish her to slacken her correspondence with the Catholics; she need not cease 'to entertain O'Neil;' but he required her only to be prudent and secret. 'Seeing the great mark her Majesty shot at, she should be careful and circumspect, that her desires being so near to be obtained should not be overthrown for lack of management.'²

August. Schooled for once by advice, Mary Stuart wrote from her sick bed to Melville's brother

¹ MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*.

² *Ibid*.

Robert. The letter appeared to be meant only for himself, but it was designed to be shown among the Protestant nobility of England. She declared in it that she meant nothing but toleration in religion, nothing but good in all ways; she protested that she had no concealed designs, no unavowed wishes; her highest ambition went no farther than to be recognized by Parliament, with the consent of her dear sister.

With these words in their hands the Melvilles made swift progress in England. Elizabeth's uncertainties and changes had shaken her truest friends; and even before the Parliament some popular demonstrations were looked for.

'There are threats of disturbance,' de Silva wrote in August, 'and trouble is looked for before the meeting of Parliament. For the present we are reassured, but it is likely enough that something will happen. The Queen is out of favour with all sides: the Catholics hate her because she is not a Papist, the Protestants because she is less furious and violent in heresy than they would like to see her; while the courtiers complain of her parsimony.'¹ James Melville was soon able to send the gratifying assurance to the Queen of Scots, that should Elizabeth continue the old excuses and delays 'her friends were so increased that many whole shires were ready to rebel, and their captains already named by election of the nobility.'²

In such a world and with such humours abroad the

¹ De Silva to Philip, August 23, 1566: *MS. Simancas*.

² MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*.

approaching session could not fail to be a stormy one ; and Elizabeth knew, though others might affect to be ignorant, that if shewas forced into a recognition of Mary Stuart a Catholic revolution would not be many months distant.

At the beginning of August, to gather strength and spirit for the struggle, she went on progress, not to the northern counties where the Queen of Scots had hoped to meet her, but first to Stamford on a visit to Cecil, thence round to Woodstock, her old prison in the perilous days of her sister, and finally, on the evening of the 31st, she paid Oxford the honour which two years before she had conferred on the sister University. The preparations for her visit were less gorgeous, the reception itself far less imposing, yet the fairest of her cities in its autumnal robe of sad and mellow loveliness, suited the Queen's humour, and her stay there had a peculiar interest.

She travelled in a carriage. At Wolvercot, three miles out on the Woodstock road, she was met by the heads of houses in their gowns and hoods. The approach was by the long north avenue leading to the north gate ; and as she drove along it she saw in front of her the black tower of Bocardo, where Cranmer had been long a prisoner, and the ditch where with his brother martyrs he had given his life for the sins of the people. The scene was changed from that chill, sleety morning, and the soft glow of the August sunset was no unfitting symbol of the change of times ; yet how soon such another season might tread upon the heels of the de-

parting summer none knew better than Elizabeth. She went on under the archway and up the corn-market between rows of shouting students. The students cried in Latin 'Vivat Regina.' Elizabeth amidst bows and smiles answered in Latin also, 'Gratias ago, gratias ago.'

At Carfax, where Bishop Longlands forty years before had burnt Tyndal's Testaments, a professor greeted her with a Greek speech, to which with unlooked-for readiness she replied again in the same language. A few more steps brought her down to the great gate of Christ Church, the splendid monument of Wolsey and of the glory of the age that was gone. She left the carriage, and with de Silva at her side she walked under a canopy across the magnificent quadrangle to the Cathedral. The dean after evening service entertained her at his house.

The days of her stay were spent as at Cambridge—in hearing plays or in attending the exercises of the University. The subjects chosen for disputation in the schools mark the balance of the two streams of ancient and modern thought, and show the matter with which the rising mind of England was beginning to occupy itself. There were discussions on the tides—whether or how far they were caused by the attraction of the moon. There were arguments on the currency—whether a debt contracted when the coin was pure could be liquidated by the payment of debased money of the same nominal value. The keener intellects were climbing the stairs of the temple of Modern Science, though as yet they were

few and feeble and they were looked upon askance with orthodox suspicion. At their side the descendants of the schoolmen were working on the old safe methods, proving paradoxes by laws of logic amidst universal applause. The Professor of Medicine maintained in the Queen's presence that it was not the province of the physician to cure disease, because diseases were infinite, and the infinite was beyond the reach of art ; or again, because medicine could not retard age, and age ended in death, and therefore medicine could not preserve life. With trifles such as these the second childhood of the authorities was content to drowse away the hours. More interesting than either science or logic were perilous questions of politics, which Elizabeth permitted to be agitated before her.

The Puritan formula that it was lawful to take arms against a bad sovereign was argued by examples from the Bible and from the stories of the patriot tyrannicides of Greece and Rome. Doctor Humfrey deserted his friends to gain favour with the Queen, and protested his horror of rebellion ; but the defenders of the rights of the people held their ground, and remained in possession of it. Pursuing the question into the subtleties of theology, they even ventured to say that God himself might instigate a regicide, when Bishop Jewel, who was present, stepped down into the dangerous arena and closed the discussion with a vindication of the divine right of kings.

More critically—even in that quiet haven of peaceful thought—the great subject of the day, which Elizabeth called her death-knell, still pursued her. An eloquent

student discoursed on the perils to which a nation was exposed when the sovereign died with no successor declared. The comparative advantages were argued of elective and hereditary monarchy. Each side had its hot defenders; and though the votes of the University were in favour of the natural laws of succession, the champion of election had the best of the argument, and apparently best pleased the Queen. When in the peroration of his speech he said he would maintain his opinion 'with his life, and, if need were, with his death,'¹ she exclaimed, 'Excellent—oh, excellent!'

At the close of the exercises she made a speech in Latin as at Cambridge. She spoke very simply, deprecating the praises which had been heaped upon her. She had been educated well, she said, though the seed had fallen on a barren soil; but she loved study if she had not profited by it, and for the Universities she would do her best that they should flourish while she lived, and after her death continue long to prosper.

So five bright days passed swiftly, and on the sixth she rode away over Magdalen Bridge to Windsor. As she crested Headington Hill she reined in her horse and once more looked back. There at her feet lay the city in its beauty, the towers and spires springing from amidst the clustering masses of the college elms; there wound beneath their shade the silvery lines of the Cherwell and the Isis.

'Farewell, Oxford!' she cried; 'farewell, my good

¹ 'Hoc vitâ et si opus est et morte comprobabo.'

subjects there!—farewell, my dear scholars, and may God prosper your studies!—farewell, farewell!’¹

The Queen of Scots meanwhile had recovered rapidly from her confinement, and it seemed as if she had now but to sit still and wait for the fortune which time had so soon to bestow; yet Melville, on his return to Scotland, found her less contented than he expected. The Pope, if it was true that she had desired a divorce from her husband, had not smiled upon her wishes; and Melville’s well-meant efforts to console her for her domestic troubles with her prospects in England, failed wholly of their effect. Five days after James’s birth, Killigrew reported that although Darnley was in the Castle and his father in Edinburgh, ‘small account was made of them;’ Murray, though he continued at the Court, ‘found his credit small and his state scarce better than when he looked daily for banishment;’ Maitland was still a fugitive, and his estates, with the splendid royalties of Dunbar, were in possession of Bothwell; ‘Bothwell’s credit with the Queen was more than all the rest together.’²

It seemed as if Mary Stuart, brave as she might be, in that stormy sea of faction and conspiracy required a man’s arm to support her: she wanted some one on whose devotion she could depend to shield her from a second night of terror, and such a man she had found in Bothwell—the boldest, the most reckless, the most unprincipled of all the nobles in Scotland. Her choice though imprudent was not unnatural. Bothwell from

¹ NICHOLLS’S *Progresses of Elizabeth*.

² Killigrew to Cecil, June 24

his earliest manhood had been her mother's staunchest friend ; Bothwell, when the English army was before Leith—though untroubled with faith in Pope or Church or God, had been more loyal than the Catholic lords ; and though at that time but a boy of twenty-two he had fought the cause of France and of Mary of Lorraine when Huntly and Seton were standing timidly aloof. Afterwards when Mary Stuart returned, and Murray and Maitland ruled Scotland, Bothwell continued true to his old colours, and true to the cause which the Queen of Scots in her heart was cherishing. Hating England, hating the Reformers, hating Murray above all living men, he had early conceived projects of carrying off his mistress by force from their control—nor was she herself supposed to have been ignorant of his design. The times were then unripe, and Bothwell had retired from Scotland to spend his exile at the French Court, in the home of Mary Stuart's affection ; and when he came back to her out of that polished and evil atmosphere, she found his fierce northern nature varnished with a thin coating of Parisian culture, saturated with Parisian villany, and the Earl himself with the single virtue of devotion to his mistress, as before he had been devoted to her mother. Her own nature was altogether higher than Bothwell's ; yet courage, strength, and a readiness to face danger and dare crime for their sakes, attract some women more than intellect however keen, or grace however refined. The affection of the Queen of Scots for Bothwell is the best evidence of her innocence with Rizzio.

As soon as she had become strong enough to move

she left the close hot atmosphere of the Castle, and at the end of July, attended by her cavalier, she spent her days upon the sea or at the Castle of Alloa on the Forth. She had condescended to acquaint Darnley with her intention of going, but with no desire that he should accompany her; and when he appeared uninvited at Alloa he was ordered back to the place from which he came. 'The Queen and her husband,' wrote the Earl of Bed-

ford on the 3rd of August, 'agree after the
August. old manner. It cannot for modesty nor for

the honour of a Queen be reported what she said of him.'¹ Sir James Melville, who dreaded the effect in England of the alienation of the friends of Lady Lennox, again remonstrated and attempted to cure the slight with some kind of attention. But Melville was made to feel that he was going beyond his office; in her violent moods Mary Stuart would not be trifled with, and at length he received a distinct order 'to be no more familiar with the Lord Darnley.'² Water parties and hunting parties in the Highlands consumed the next few weeks. Though inexorable towards her husband the Queen, as the summer went on, found it necessary to take her brother into favour again, and to gain the confidence of the English Protestants by affecting a readiness to be guided by his advice. Maitland's peace had been made also, though with more difficulty. Bothwell, who was in possession of his estates, refused to part with them and in a stormy scene in the Queen's presence Murray

¹ Bedford to Cecil, August 3: *Cotton. MSS. CALIG. B. 10.*

² MELVILLE'S *Memoirs*.

told him 'that twenty as honest men as he should lose their lives ere he left Liddington.'¹ The Queen felt however that her demand for recognition in England would be effective in proportion to the unanimity with which she was supported by her own nobility; she felt the want of Maitland's help; and visiting her resentment for the death of Rizzio on her miserable husband alone, she was ready to forget the share which Maitland had borne in it, and exerted herself to smooth down and reconcile the factions at the Court. She contrived to bring Maitland, Murray, Argyle, and Bothwell secretly together; 'the matter in dispute' was talked over and at last amicably settled.²

From Maitland to Morton was a short step. The lords now all combined to entreat his pardon from the Queen, and in the restoration to favour of the nobles whom he had invited to revenge his own imagined wrongs, and had thus deserted and betrayed, the miserable King read his own ruin. One after another he had injured them all; and his best hope was in their contempt. Even Murray's face he had good cause to dread. He with Rizzio had before planned Murray's murder, and now seeing Murray at the Queen's side he let fall some wild passionate words as if he would again try to kill him. So at least the Queen reported, for it was she who carried the story to Murray, 'and willed the Earl to speer it at the King;' it was believed afterwards that she desired to create a quarrel which would

¹ Advertisements out of Scotland, August, 1566: *MS. Rolls House*.

² Maitland to Cecil, September 20: *MS. Ibid.*

rid her of one or both of the two men whom she hated worst in Scotland. But if this was her object she had mistaken her brother's character; Murray was not a person to trample on the wretched or stoop to ignoble game, he spoke to Darnley 'very modestly' in the Queen's presence; and the poor boy might have yet been saved could he have thrown himself on the confidence of the one noble-hearted person within his reach. He muttered only some feeble apology however, and fled from the Court 'very grieved.' He could not bear, so some one wrote, 'that the Queen should use familiarity with man or woman, especially the Lords of Argyle and Murray which kept most company with her.'¹

September. Lennox, as much neglected as his son, was living privately at Glasgow, and between Glasgow and Stirling the forlorn Darnley wandered to and fro, 'misliked of all,' helpless and complaining, and nursing vague impossible schemes of revenge. He had signed the articles by which he bound himself to maintain the Reformation; he now dreamt of taking from Mary the defence of the Church. He wrote to the Pope and to Philip complaining that the Queen of Scots had ceased to care for religion, and that they must look to him only for the restoration of Catholicism. His letters, instead of falling harmless by going where they were directed, were carried to Mary, and might have aggravated her animosity against him had it ad-

¹ Advertisements out of Scotland, August, 1566. *MS. Rolls House.*

mitted of aggravation. Still more terrified, he then thought of flying from the kingdom. The Scotch council was about to meet in Edinburgh, in the middle of September; the Queen desired that he would attend the session with her; he refused, and as soon as she was gone he made arrangements to escape in an English vessel which was lying in the Forth. 'In a sort of desperation' he communicated his project to the French ambassador, du Croq, who had remained after the Queen's departure at Stirling. He told him it seems that he should go to the Scilly Isles; perhaps like Sir Thomas Seymour with a notion of becoming a pirate chief there. When du Croq questioned him on his reasons for such a step, he complained 'that the Queen would give him no authority;' 'all the lords had abandoned him, he said; he had no hope in Scotland and he feared for his life.'

Better far it would have been had they allowed him to go, better for himself, better for Mary Stuart, better for human history which would have escaped the inky stain which blots its page; yet his departure at such a time and in such a manner would attract inconvenient notice in England—it would be used in Parliament in the debate on the succession. Du Croq carried word to Mary Stuart. Lennox, after endeavouring in vain to dissuade him, wrote to her also in the hope that he might appease her by giving proofs of his own loyalty; and Darnley, finding his purpose betrayed, followed the French ambassador to Edinburgh, and on the evening of the 29th of September presented himself at the gates

of Holyrood. He sent in word of his arrival—but he said he would not enter as long as Murray, Argyle, and Maitland were in the palace. The Queen went out to him, carried him to her private apartments, and kept him there for the night. The next morning the council met and he was brought or led into their presence. There they sat—a hard ring of stony faces: on one side the Lords of the Congregation who had risen in insurrection to prevent his marriage with the Queen, whom afterwards he had pledged his honour to support and whom he had again betrayed—now, by some inexplicable turn of fortune, restored to honour while he was himself an outcast; on the other side Huntly, Caithness, Bothwell, Athol, the Archbishop of St Andrew's, all Catholics, all Rizzio's friends, yet hand in hand now with their most bitter enemies, united heart and soul to secure the English succession for a Scotch Princess, and pressing with the weight of unanimity on the English Parliament; yet he who had been brought among them in the interest of that very cause was excluded from share or concern in the prize; every noble present had some cause of mortal enmity against him; and as he stood before them desolate and friendless he must have felt how short a shrift was allowed in Scotland for a foe whose life was inconvenient.

The letter of the Earl of Lennox was read aloud. Mary Stuart said that she had tried in vain to draw from her husband the occasion of his dissatisfaction; she trusted that he would tell the lords what he had concealed from herself; and then turning to him with

clasped hands like a skilled actress on the stage, 'Speak,' she said, 'speak; say what you complain of; if the blame is with me do not spare me.'

The lords followed, assuring him with icy politeness that if he had any fault to find they would see it remedied.

Du Croq implored him to take no step which would touch his own honour or the Queen's.

What could he say? Could he tell the truth that he believed his Royal Mistress and those honourable lords were seeking how to rid the world of him? That was his fear; and she and they and he alike knew it—but such thoughts could not be spoken. And yet he had spirit enough to refuse to cringe or to stand at the bar to be questioned as a prisoner. He said a few unmeaning words and turned to go, and they did not dare detain him. 'Adieu, Madam,' he said as he left the room, 'you will not see my face for a long space; gentlemen, adieu.'¹

Four days later they heard that the ship
was ready in which he was about to sail; and October.
it appears as if they had resolved to let him go. But in an evil hour for himself he had another interview with the French ambassador; du Croq, after a long conversation, persuaded him that the clouds would clear away and that fortune would again look beneficently upon him. The English ship sailed without him, and Darnley remained behind to drift upon destruction, 'hated,' as

¹ Du Croq to the Archbishop of Glasgow, October 15; The Lords of Scotland to the Queen-mother of France, October 8: *Printed in Keith.*

du Croq admitted, 'by all men and by all parties—because being what he was he desired to be as he had been and to rule as a king.'¹ In him the murderers of Rizzio found a scapegoat, and the Queen accepted with seeming willingness the vicarious sacrifice. The political relations between England and Scotland relapsed into their old bearings. Maitland was found again corresponding with the English ministers on the old subject of the union of the realms, while the Queen of Scots herself wrote to Cecil with affected confidence and cordiality, just touching—enough to show that she understood it—on the treachery of Rokeby, but professing to believe that Cecil wished well to her and would assist her to gain her cause.²

So stood the several parties in the two kingdoms when Elizabeth returned from her progress and prepared to meet her Parliament.³ Four years had passed since

¹ Du Croq to the Queen-mother of France, October 17: TEULET, vol. ii.

² Maitland to Cecil, October 4; The Queen of Scots to Cecil, October 5: *MS. Rolls House*.

³ An entry in the Privy Council Register shows how anxiously the English Government were still watching the Queen of Scots, and how little they trusted her assurances.

October 8, 1566.

'A letter to Sir John Foster, Warden of the Middle Marches, touching the intelligence received out of Scotland of the sending of the Earl of Argyle towards Shan O'Neil

with a hundred soldiers of those that were about the Scottish Queen's own person, with commission also to levy all his own people and the people of the Isles to assist Shan against the Queen's Majesty. And because the understanding of the truth of this matter is of great importance, and necessary to be bolted out with speed, he is required that under pretence of some other message he take occasion to send with convenient speed some discreet person to the Scottish Court, to procure by all the best means he may to bolt out the very certainty hereof. And in case he shall find indeed that the said

the last troubled session : spring after spring, autumn after autumn, notice of a Parliament had gone out ; but ever at the last moment Elizabeth had flinched, knowing well what lay before her. Further delay was at last impossible : the Treasury was empty, the humour of the people was growing dangerous. Thus at last on the 30th of September the Houses reassembled. The first fortnight was spent in silent preparations ; on the 14th the campaign opened with a petition from the bishops, which was brought forward in the form of a statute in the House of Commons. It will be remembered that after the Bill was passed in the last session empowering the Anglican prelates to tender the vote of allegiance to their predecessors in the Tower, they had been checked in their first attempt to put the law in execution by a denial of the sacredness of their consecration, and the judges had confirmed the objection. To obviate this difficulty and to enable the bench at last to begin their work of retaliation, a Bill was brought in declaring that ‘ inasmuch as the bishops of the Church of England had been nominated according to the provisions of the Act of Henry the Eighth,¹ and had been consecrated according to the form provided in the Prayer-book, they should be held to have been duly and

advertisements are true, then to demand audience of the Scottish Queen and to deliver unto her the Queen's Majesty's letter,* sent herewith, requiring answer with speed ; and in

case he shall find the said enterprise is intended only, and not executed, then he shall procure to stay the same by the best means he may.’

¹ 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 20.

* Not found.

lawfully appointed, any statute, law, or canon to the contrary notwithstanding.' In this form, untrammelled by further condition, the Act went from the Commons to the Lords, and had it passed in its first form there would have been an immediate renewal of the attempt to persecute. The Lords however were better guardians than the Commons of English liberties. Out of 81 peers 22 were the bishops themselves, who as the promoters of the Bill unquestionably voted for it in its fulness; yet it was sent back, perhaps as an intimation that there had been enough of spiritual tyranny, and that the Church of England was not to disgrace itself with imitating the iniquities of Rome. A proviso was added that the Act should be retrospective only as it affected the general functions of the episcopal office,¹ but was not to be construed as giving validity to the requisition of the oath of allegiance in the episcopal courts, or as giving the bishops power over the lives or lands of the

¹ 'Provided always that no person or persons shall at any time hereafter be impeached or molested in body, lands, livings, or goods, by occasion or means of any certificate by any Archbishop or Bishop heretofore made, or before the last day of this present Session of Parliament to be made by authority of any Act passed in the first session of this present Parliament, touching or concerning the refusal of the oath declared and set forth by Act of Parliament in the first year of the reign of our Sovereign Lady the Queen: and that all tenders of the said oath

made by any Archbishop or Bishop aforesaid, or before the last day of the present Session to be made by authority of any Act established in the first Session of this present Parliament, and all refusals of the same oath so tendered, or before the last day of this present Session to be tendered by any Archbishop or Bishop by authority of any law established in the first session of this present Parliament, shall be void, and of none effect or validity in the law.'—Statutes of the Realm, 8 *Elizabeth*, cap. 1.

prisoners who had refused to swear.¹ The Bill, although thus modified, left the bench with powers which for the future they might abuse; and although there was an understanding that those powers were not to be put in force, eleven lay peers still spoke and voted absolutely against admitting the episcopal position of men who had been thrust into already occupied sees.² To have thrown the measure out altogether however would have been equivalent to denying the Church of England a right to exist: it passed with this limitation, and the bishops, with a tacit intimation that they were on their good behaviour, were recognized as legitimate.

The Consecration Bill was however but a preliminary skirmish, preparatory to the great question which both Houses, with opposite purposes, were determined to bring forward. The House of Commons was the same which had been elected at the beginning of the reign in the strength of the Protestant reaction. The oscillation of

¹ 'La peticion que se dió en el Parlamento por parte de los obispos Protestantes acerca de su confirmacion se pasó por la Camara baja sin contradiccion. En la alta tuvo once contradicciones, pero pasóse; no confirmandolo ellos sino á lo que hasta aqui se habia hecho en el ejercicio de su officio; con tanto que no se entendiese la confirmacion contra lo que hubiesen hecho ni podrian hacer en materia de sangre ni de bienes temporales. Lo de la sangre se entiende por el juramento que pedian á Bonner el buen Obispo de Londres, y á otros, acerca de lo de

la religion, que es por lo que principalmente dicen que pedian la confirmacion; aunque daban á entender que por otros fines lo de bienes temporales han sentido; pero no fué segun entiendo este el intento; sino que obviar á que no les pierdan los, que no querian hacer el juramento.' —De Silva to the King, November 11, 1566; *MS. Simancas*.

² Non-contents—Earls Northumberland, Westmoreland, Worcester, and Sussex; Lords Montague, Morley, Dudley, Darcy, Mounteagle, Cromwell, and Mordaunt.

public feeling had left the majority of the members unaffected; they were still anxious to secure the reversion of the crown to the dying Lady Catherine and her children; and the tendencies of the country, generally in favour of the Scotch succession, made them more desirous than ever not to let the occasion pass through their hands. The House of Lords was in the interest of Mary Stuart, but some divisions had been already created by her quarrel with Darnley. The Commons perhaps thought that although the peers might prefer the Queen of Scots, they would acquiesce in the wife of Lord Hertford sooner than endure any more uncertainty; the Peers may have hoped the same in favour of their own candidate: they may have felt assured that when the question came once to be discussed, the superior right of the Queen of Scots, the known opinions of the lawyers in her favour, the scarcely concealed preference of the great body of English gentlemen, with the political advantages which would follow on the union of the crowns, must inevitably turn the scale for Mary Stuart, whatever the Commons might will. Both Houses at all events were determined to bear Elizabeth's vacillation no longer, to believe no more in promises which were made only to be broken, and either to decide once for all the future fortunes of England, or lay such a pressure on the Queen that she should be forbidden to trifle any more with her subjects' anxiety for her marriage.

On the 17th of October Cecil brought forward in the Lower House a statement of the expenses of the French and Irish wars. On the 18th Mr Molyneux, a barrister,

proposed at once, amidst universal approbation, 'to revive the suit for the succession,' and to consider the demands of the exchequer only in connection with the determination of an heir to the throne.¹

Elizabeth's first desire was to stifle the discussion at its commencement. Sir Ralph Sadler rose when Molyneux sat down, and 'after divers propositions' 'declared that he had heard the Queen say in the presence of the nobility that her Highness minded to marry.' Sadler possessed the confidence of the Protestants, and from him, if from any one, they would have accepted a declaration with which so steady an opponent of the Queen of Scots was satisfied; but the disappointment of the two previous sessions had taught them the meaning of words of this kind; a report of something said elsewhere to 'the nobility' would not meet the present irritation; 'their mind was to continue their suit, and to know her Highness's answer.'

Elizabeth found it necessary to be more specific. The next day, first Cecil, then Sir Francis Knowles, then Sir Ambrose Cave, declared formally that the 'Queen by God's special providence was moved to marry, that she minded for the wealth of the commons to prosecute the same, and persuaded to see the sequel of that before further suit touching the succession.'² Cecil and Cave were good Protestants, Knowles was an advanced Puritan,

¹ 'October 18.—Motion made by Mr Molyneux for the reviving of the suit for the succession, and to proceed with the subsidy, was very well allowed by the House.'—*Commons' Journals*, 8 Elizabeth.

² *Commons' Journals*, 8 Elizabeth.

yet they were no more successful than Sadler; 'the lawyers' still insisted; the House went with them in declining to endure any longer a future which depended on the possible 'movements' of the Queen's mind; and a vote was carried to press the question to an issue and to invite the Lords to a conference. The Lords, as eager as the Commons, instantly acquiesced. Public business was suspended, and committees of the two Houses sat daily for a fortnight, preparing an address to the Crown.¹

¹ Cecil, who was a member of the Commons' Committee, has left a paper of notes touching the main points of the situation:—

‘October, 1556.

‘To require both marriage and the stablishing of the succession is the uttermost that can be desired.

‘To deny both, the uttermost that can be denied.

‘To require marriage is most natural, most easy, most plausible to the Queen's Majesty.

‘To require certainty of succession is most plausible to all people.

‘To require the succession is hardest to be obtained, both for the difficulty to discuss the right and the loathsomeness of the Queen's Majesty to consent thereto.

‘The difficulty to discuss it is by reason of—

1. ‘The uncertainty of indifference in the parties that shall discuss it.

2. ‘The uncertainty of the right pretended.

‘The loathsomeness to grant it is by reason of natural suspicion

against a successor that hath right by law to succeed.

‘Corollarium.

‘The mean betwixt them is to determine effectually to marry, and if it succeed not, then proceed to discussion of the right of succession.’ —*Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xl.

Another paper, also in Cecil's hand, contains apparently a rough sketch for the address to the Crown:—

‘That the marriage may proceed effectually.

‘That it may be declared how necessary it is to have the succession stablished for sundry causes.

‘Surety and quietness of the Queen's Majesty, that no person may attempt anything to the furtherance of any supposed title when it shall be manifest how the right is settled. Whereunto may also be added sundry devices to stay every person in his duty, so as her Majesty may reign assuredly.

‘The comfort of all good subjects that may remain assured, how and whom to obey lawfully, and how

In spite of her struggles the Queen saw the net closing round her. Fair speeches were to serve her turn no longer, and either she would have to endure some husband whom she detested the very thought of, or submit to a settlement the result of which it was easy to foresee. Into her feelings, or into such aspect of them as she chose to exhibit, we once more gain curious insight through a letter of de Silva. So distinctly was Elizabeth's marriage the object of the present move of the House of Commons that the Queen of Scots, in dread of it, was contented to withdraw the pressure for a determination in her own favour, and consented to bide her time.

GUZMAN DE SILVA TO PHILIP II.¹

October 26.

'The Parliament is in full debate on the succession. The Queen is furious about it; she is advised that if the question come to a vote in the Lower House the greatest number of voices will be for the Lady Catherine. This

to avoid all errors in disobedience, whereby civil wars may be avoided.

'And because presently it seemeth very uncomfortable to the Queen's Majesty to hear of this at this time, and that it is hoped that God will direct her heart to think more comfortably hereof, it may be required that her marriage may proceed with all convenient speed; and that if her Majesty cannot condescend to enter into the disquisition and stabilishing of the succession in this Ses-

sion, that yet for the satisfaction of her people she will prorogue this Parliament until another short time, within which it may be seen what God will dispose of her marriage, and then to begin her Parliament again, and to proceed in such sort as shall seem meetest then for the matter of succession, which may with more satisfaction be done to her Majesty if she shall then be married.'—*Domestic MSS. Rolls House.*

¹ *MS. Simancas.*

lady and her husband Lord Hertford are Protestants ; and a large number, probably an actual majority of the Commons, being heretics also, will declare for her in self-defence.

‘ I have never ceased to urge upon the Queen the inconvenience and danger to which she will be exposed if a successor is declared, and on the other hand her perfect security as soon as she has children of her own. She understands all this fully, and she told me three days ago that she would never consent. The Parliament, she said, had offered her two hundred and fifty thousand pounds as the price of her acquiescence ; but she had refused to accept anything on conditions. She had requested a subsidy for the public service in Ireland and elsewhere, and it should be given freely and graciously or not at all. She says she will not yield one jot to them let them do what they will ; she means to dissemble with them and hear what they have to say, so that she may know their views, and the lady which each declares for¹—meaning the Queen of Scots and Lady Catherine. I told her that if she would but marry, all this worry would be at an end. She assured me she would send this very week to the Emperor and settle everything ; and yet I learn from Sir Thomas Heneage, who is the person hitherto most concerned in the Archduke affair, that she has grown much cooler about it.

‘ The members of the Lower House are almost all Protestants, and seeing the Queen in such a rage at

¹ ‘ Por conocer las voluntades y saber la dama de cada uno.’

them, I took occasion to point out to her the true character of this new religion, which will endure no rule and will have everything at its own pleasure without regard to the sovereign authority; it was time for her to see to these things, and I bade her observe the contrast between these turbulent heretics and the quiet and obedience of her Catholic subjects. She said she could not tell what those devils were after.¹ They want liberty, madam, I replied, and if princes do not look to themselves and work in concert to put them down, they will find before long what all this is coming to.²

‘She could not but agree with me: she attempted a defence of her own subjects, as if there was some justice in their complaints of the uncertainty of the succession; but she knows at heart what it really means, and by and by when she finds them obstinate she will understand it better. I told her before that I knew they would press her, and she would not believe me.

‘Melville, the agent of the Queen of Scots, was with me yesterday. That Queen’s disagreement with her husband is doing her much mischief here; yet she has so much credit with the good all over the realm that the

¹ ‘Respondíome que no sabia que querian *estos demonios*.’

² Elizabeth had before affected to be alarmed at the revolutionary tendencies of Protestantism. On the 15th of the preceding July, de Silva wrote—

‘The Queen must be growing anxious. She often says to me that she wonders at the tendency of sub-

jects now-a-days to anarchy and revolution. I invariably reply that this is the beginning, middle, and end of the inventors of new religions. They have an eye only to their own interests; they care neither for God nor law, as they show by their works; and princes ought to take order among themselves and unite to chastise their excesses.’—*MS. Simancas*.

blame is chiefly laid on the Lord Darnley. I have told Melville to urge upon them the necessity of reconciliation; and I have written to the Commendador Mayor of Castile at Rome to speak to the Pope about it, and to desire his Holiness to send them his advice to the same effect. Melville tells me the lords there are working together wonderfully well. He has given this Queen to understand that since she is reluctant to have the succession discussed, his mistress is so anxious to please her that she will not press for it; she will only ask that if the question is forced forward after all, she may have notice in time that she may send some one to plead in her behalf.

‘This Queen is full of gratitude for her forbearance; she has told her that her present resolution is to keep the matter quiet; should her endeavours be unsuccessful however, the Queen of Scots shall have all the information and all the help which she herself can give.

‘Melville learns from a private source that this Queen will fail in her object. The question will be forced in the Queen of Scots’ interest, and with the best intentions. Her friends are very numerous; we shall soon see how things go.’

Melville’s information was right. Having failed in full Parliament, Elizabeth tried next to work on the committee. The Marquis of Winchester was put forward to prevent the intended address. He brought to bear the weight of an experience which was older than the field of Bosworth; but he was listened to with impatience;

not a single voice either from Peers or Commons was found to second him. Unable to do anything through others, the Queen sent for the principal noblemen concerned to remonstrate with them herself in private.

The Duke of Norfolk was the first called, and rumour said, though she herself afterwards denied the words, that she called him traitor and conspirator. Leicester, Pembroke, Northampton, and Lord William Howard came next. Norfolk had complained of his treatment to Pembroke: Pembroke told her that the Duke was a good friend both to the realm and to herself; if she would not listen to advice and do what the service of the commonwealth required, they must do it themselves.

She was too angry to argue; she told Pembroke he spoke like a foolish soldier, and knew not what he was saying. Then seeing Leicester at his side, 'You, my lord,' she said, 'you! If all the world forsook me I thought that you would be true!'

'Madam,' Leicester said, 'I am ready to die at your feet!'

'What has that to do with it?' she answered.

'And you, my Lord Northampton,' she went on—turning from one to the other; 'you who when you had a wife of your own already could quote Scripture texts to help you to another;¹ you forsooth must meddle with marriages for me! You might employ yourself better I think.'

She could make nothing of them nor they of her.

¹ Northampton's divorce and second marriage had been one of the great scandals of the days of Edward.

Both Queen and lords carried their complaints to de Silva; the lords urging him to use his influence to force her into taking the Archduke; Elizabeth complaining of their insolence and especially of the ingratitude of Leicester. Her very honour, she said, had suffered for the favour which she had shown to Leicester; and now she would send him to his house in the country, and the Archduke should have nothing to be jealous of.¹

The committee went on with the work.
November.

On the 2nd of November the form of the address was still undetermined; they were undecided whether to insist most on the marriage, or on the nomination, or on both. In some shape or other however a petition of a serious kind would unquestionably be presented, and Elizabeth prepared to receive it with as much self-restraint as she could command. Three days later she understood that the deliberations were concluded. To have the interview over as soon as possible Elizabeth sent for the committee at once; and on the afternoon of the 5th of November, 'by her Highness's special commandment,' twenty-five lay Peers, the Bishops of Durham and London, and thirty members of the Lower House presented themselves at the palace at Westminster.

The address was read by Bacon.

After grateful acknowledgments of the general government of the Queen the two Houses desired, first, to express their wish that her Highness would be pleased

¹ De Silva to Philip, November 4: *MS. Simancas*.

to marry 'where it should please her, with whom it should please her, and as soon as it should please her.'

Further, as it was possible that her Highness might die without children, her faithful subjects were anxious to know more particularly the future prospects of the realm. Much as they wished to see her married, the settlement of the succession was even more important, 'carrying with it such necessity that without it they could not see how the safety of her royal person or the preservation of her Imperial crown and realm could be or should be sufficiently and certainly provided for.' 'Her late illness (the Queen had been unwell again), the amazedness that most men of understanding were by fruit of that sickness brought unto,' and the opportunity of making a definite arrangement while Parliament was sitting, were the motives which induced them to be more urgent than they would otherwise have cared to be. History and precedent alike recommended a speedy decision. They hoped that she might live to have a child of her own; but she was mortal, and should she die before her subjects knew to whom their allegiance was due, a civil war stared them in the face. The decease of a prince leaving the realm without a government was the most frightful disaster which could befall the commonwealth; with the vacancy of the throne all writs were suspended, all commissions were void, law itself was dead. Her Majesty was not ignorant of these things. If she refused to provide a remedy 'it would be a dangerous burden before God upon her Majesty!' They had therefore felt it to be their duty to present this address;

and on their knees they implored her to consider it and to give them an answer before the session closed.¹

Elizabeth had prepared her answer; as soon as Bacon ceased, she drew herself up and spoke as follows:—

‘If the order of your cause had matched the weight of your matter, the one might well have craved reward, and the other much the sooner be satisfied. But when I call to mind how far from dutiful care, yea rather how nigh a traitorous trick, this tumbling cast did spring, I muse how men of wit can so hardly use that gift they hold. I marvel not much that bridleless colts do not know their rider’s hand, whom bit of kingly rein did never snaffle yet. Whether it was fit that so great a cause as this should have had this beginning in such a public place as that, let it be well weighed. Must all evil bodings that might be recited be found little enough to hap to my share? Was it well meant, think you, that those that knew not how fit this matter was to be granted by the Prince, would prejudicate their Prince in aggravating the matter? so all their arguments tended to my careless care of this my dear realm.’

So far she spoke from a form which remains in her own handwriting.² She continued perhaps in the same style; but her words remain only in the Spanish of de Silva.

‘She was not surprised at the Commons,’ she said; ‘they had small experience and had acted like boys;

¹ D’EWES’ *Journals*, 8 *Elizabeth*. | *MSS.*, *Elizabeth*, vol. xli. *Rolls*

² Answer to the Parliament by | *House*
the Queen; Autograph: *Domestic* |

but that the Lords should have gone along with them she confessed had filled her with wonder. There were some among them who had placed their swords at her disposal when her sister was on the throne, and had invited her to seize the crown; ¹ she knew but too well that if she allowed a successor to be named, there would be found men who would approach him or her with the same encouragement to disturb the peace of the realm. If she pleased she could name the persons to whom she alluded. When time and circumstances would allow she would see to the matter of their petition before they asked her; she would be sorry to be forced into doing anything which in reason and justice she was bound to do; and she concluded with a request that her words should not be misinterpreted.'

So long as she was speaking to the lay Peers she controlled her temper; but her passion required a safety-valve, and she rarely lost an opportunity of affronting and insulting her bishops.

Turning sharp round where Grindal and Pilkington were standing—

'And you *doctors*,' she said—it was her pleasure to ignore their right to a higher title; ² 'you, I understand,

¹ 'Entre los cuales habia habido algunos que reynando su hermana le ofrecian á ella ayuda y la querian mover á que quisiese procurar en su vida la corona.'—De Silva al Rey, 11 November, 1566: *MS. Simancas*. It is tolerably certain that the Queen used these words. De Silva

heard them first from the Queen herself, and afterwards from the Lords who were present.

² 'Volviendose á los obispos que se hallaron presentes á la plática, dijo, Vosotros doctores, no les llamando obispos, que haceis muchas oraciones,' &c.

make long prayers about this business. One of you dared to say, in times past, that I and my sister were bastards; and you must needs be interfering in what does not concern you. Go home and amend your own lives, and set an honest example in your families. The Lords in Parliament should have taught you to know your places; but if they have forgotten their duty I will not forget mine. Did I so choose I might make the impertinence of the whole set of you an excuse to withdraw my promise to marry; but for the realm's sake, I am resolved that I will marry; and I will take a husband that will not be to the taste of some of you. I have not married hitherto out of consideration for you, but it shall be done now, and you who have been so urgent with me will find the effects of it to your cost. Think you the prince who will be my consort will feel himself safe with such as you, who thus dare to thwart and cross your natural Queen?'

She turned on her heel and sailed out of the hall of audience, vouchsafing no other word. At once she sent for de Silva, and after profuse thanks to himself and Philip for their long and steady kindness, swelling with anger as she was, she gave him to understand that her course was chosen at last and for ever; she would accept the Archduke and would be all which Spain could desire.

Many of the peers came to her in the evening to make their excuses: they said that they had been misled by the council, who had been the most in favour of the address; and they had believed themselves to be acting as she had herself desired. The Upper House

she might have succeeded in controlling ; but the Commons were in a more dangerous humour. They were prepared for a storm when they commenced the debate ; and they were not disposed to be lectured into submission. The next day Cecil rose in his place : the Queen, he said, had desired him to tell them that she was displeased, first, that the succession question should have been raised in that House without her consent having been first asked ; and secondly, because ‘by the publication abroad of the necessity of the matter,’ and the danger to the realm if it was left longer undecided, the responsibility of the refusal was thrown entirely upon her Majesty. The ‘error,’ she was ready to believe, had risen chiefly from want of thought, and she was ready to overlook it. For the matter itself her Highness thought that by her promises to marry she had rather deserved thanks than to be troubled with any new petition. ‘The word of a prince spoken in a public place’ should have been taken as seriously meant ; and if her Majesty had before told them that she was unwilling, they should have been more ready to believe her when she said that she had made up her mind. Time and opportunity would prove her Majesty’s sincerity, and it was unkind to suppose that she would fail in producing children. Loyal subjects should hope the best. Her Majesty had confidence in God’s goodness ; and except for the assurance that she would have an heir, she would not marry at all. On this point she required the Houses to accept her word. For the succession she was not surprised at their uneasiness ;

she was as conscious as they could be of the desirableness of a settlement. At the present moment however, and in the existing state of parties in the realm, the thing was impossible, and she would hear no more of it.¹

The Queen expected that after so positive a declaration she would escape further annoyance; but times were changing, and the relations with them between sovereigns and subjects. The House listened in silence, not caring to conceal its dissatisfaction. The Friday following, being the 8th of November, 'Mr Lambert began a learned oration for iteration of the suit to the Queen on the succession.'²

Whether they were terrified by the spectre of a second York and Lancaster war, or whether they were bent on making an effort for Lady Hertford before they were dissolved and another House was elected in the Scottish interest, or whether they disbelieved Elizabeth's promises to marry, notwithstanding the vehemence of her asseverations, the Commons seemed resolute at all hazards to persevere. Other speeches followed on the same side, expressing all of them the same fixed determination; and matters were now growing serious. The Spanish ambassador never lost a chance of irritating the Queen against the Protestant party; and on Saturday, stimulated by de Silva's invectives, and convinced, perhaps with justice, that she was herself essentially right, Elizabeth sent down an order that the subject

¹ Report made to the Commons' | *MSS. Rolls House.*
House by Mr Secretary: *Domestic* | ² *Commons' Journals.*

should be approached no further on pain of her displeasure. The same night a note was flung into the presence-chamber saying that the debate on the succession had been undertaken because the commonwealth required it, and that if the Queen interfered it might be the worse for her.¹

In the most critical period of the reign of Henry the Eighth, speech in Parliament had been ostentatiously free; the Act of Appeals had been under discussion for two years and more, Catholic and Protestant had spoken their minds without restraint; yet among the many strained applications of the treason law no peer or commoner had been called to answer for words spoken by him in his place in the legislature. The Queen's injunction of silence had poured oil into the fire, and raised a fresh and more dangerous question of privilege. As soon as the House met again on Monday morning Mr Paul Wentworth rose to know whether such an order 'was not against the liberties' of Parliament.² He and other members inquired whether a message sent by a public officer was authority sufficient to bind the House, or if neither the message itself nor the manner in which it was delivered was a breach of privilege, 'what offence it was for any of the House to declare his opinion to be otherwise.'³ The debate lasted

¹ 'A noche echáron en la camera de presencia un escrito que contenia en sustancia que se habia tratado en el Parlamento de la sucesion porque convenia al bien del Reyno, y que si la Reyna no consentia que se tratase dello que veria algunas cosas que no

le placieran.'—De Silva to Philip, November 11: *MS. Simancas*.

² *Commons' Journals*, 8 *Elizabeth*.

³ Note of Proceedings in Parliament, November 11: *Domestic MSS*, *Elizabeth*, vol. xli.

five hours, and (a rare if not unprecedented occurrence) was adjourned.

Elizabeth, more angry than ever, sent for the Speaker; she insisted 'that there should be no further argument;' if any member of either House was dissatisfied he must give his opinion before the council.

The Commons having gone so far had no intention of yielding; and de Silva watched the crisis with a malicious hope of a collision between the two Houses and of both with the Queen. The Lower House, he said, was determined to name a successor, and was all but unanimous for Lady Catherine; the Peers were as decided for the Queen of Scots.¹ A dissolution would leave the Treasury without a subsidy, and could not be thought of save at the last extremity. On the return of the Speaker the Commons named a committee to draw up an answer, which, though in form studiously courteous, was in substance as deliberately firm.² The finishing touch was given to it by Cecil, and the sentences added in his hand were those which insisted most on the liberty of Parliament, and most justified the attitude which the Commons had assumed.

After thanking the Queen for her promise to marry, and assuring her that whatever she might think to the

¹ 'Ellos pretenden libertad de proceder á lo del nombramiento de la sucesion en la qual en la camara superior tendra mucha parte la de Escocia; se tiene por cierto y assi lo creo que Caterina tendra casi todos los de la Camara baja, y assi parece

que inclina todo á emocion.'—De Silva to Philip, November 13: *MS. Simancas*.

² Draft of an Address to the Queen, submitted to the Committee of the Commons' House: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xli.

contrary they meant nothing but what became them as loyal subjects, they said that they submitted reluctantly to her resolution to postpone the settlement of the succession, *being most sorry that any manner of impediment had appeared to her Majesty so great as to stay her from proceeding in the same.*¹ They had however received a message implying ‘that they had deserved to be deprived, or at least sequestered, *much to their discomfort and infamy,*² from their ancient and laudable custom, always from the beginning necessarily annexed to their assembly, and by her Majesty *always*³ confirmed—that is, a lawful sufferance and dutiful liberty to treat and devise matters honourable to her Majesty and profitable to the realm.’ Before this message reached them ‘they had made no determination to deal in any way to her discontentation; they therefore besought her of her motherly love that they might continue in their course of duty, honouring and serving her like children, without any unnecessary, *unaccustomed,*⁴ or undeserved yoke of commandment; so⁵ should her Majesty continue the singular favour of her honour, wherein she did excel all monarchs, for ruling her subjects without misliking; and they also would enjoy the like praise above all other people for obeying without constraint—than the which

¹ The words in Italics were added by Cecil.

² Added in Cecil's hand.

³ The word first written was graciously.' Cecil scratched through graciously,' as if it implied that the

liberties of the House of Commons depended on the pleasure of the Sovereign, and substituted 'always.'

⁴ Cecil's hand.

⁵ The conclusion is entirely Cecil's.

no prince could desire more earthly honour, nor no people more earthly praise.'

No one knew better than Elizabeth how to withdraw from an indefensible position, and words so full of firmness and dignity might perhaps have produced an effect; but before the address could be presented a fresh apple of discord was thrown into the arena.

A book had appeared in Paris, written by a refugee Scot named Patrick Adamson. The subject of it was the birth of James; and the Queen of Scots' child was described as the heir of the English throne. Copies had been scattered about London, and Elizabeth had already directed Mary Stuart's attention to the thing 'as a matter strange and not to be justified.'¹

On the 21st of November, on occasion of a measure laid before the House against the introduction of seditious books from abroad, a Mr Dalton brought forward this production of Adamson in the fiercest Protestant spirit.

How say you,' he exclaimed, 'to a libel set forth in print calling the Infant of Scotland Prince of England, Scotland, and Ireland? Prince of England, Scotland, and Ireland! What enemy to the peace and quietness of the realm of England—what traitor to the crown of this realm hath devised, set forth, and published this dishonour against the Queen's most excellent Majesty and the crown of England? Prince of England, and Queen Elizabeth as yet having no child!—Prince of

¹ Elizabeth to Bedford, November 13: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

England, and the Scottish Queen's child!—Prince of Scotland and England, and Scotland before England! who ever heard or read that before this time? What true English heart may sustain to hear of this villany and reproach against the Queen's Highness and this her realm? It is so that it hath pleased her Highness at this time to bar our speech; but if our mouths shall be stopped, and in the mean time such despite shall happen and pass without revenge, it will make the heart of a true Englishman break within his breast.'

With the indignity of the matter being,' as he afterwards said, 'set on fire,' Dalton went on to touch on dangerous matters, and entered on the forbidden subject of the Scottish title. The Speaker gently checked him, but not before he had uttered words which called out the whole sympathy of the Commons, and gave them an opportunity of showing how few friends in that House Mary Stuart as yet could count upon.¹

The story was carried to the Queen: she chose to believe that the House of Commons intended to defy her; she ordered Dalton into arrest and had him examined before the Star Chamber; she construed her own orders into a law, and seemed determined to govern the House of Commons as if it was a debating society of riotous boys.

The Commons behaved with great forbearance: they replied to the seizure of the offending member by requesting 'to have leave to confer upon the liberties

¹ Mr Dalton's Speech, according to the Report: *Domestic MSS.*, *Elizabeth*, vol. xli.

of the House. The original question of the succession was lost in the larger one of privilege, and the address which they had previously drawn seemed no longer distinct enough for the occasion. The council implored Elizabeth to consider what she was doing. As soon as her anger cooled she felt herself that she had gone too far, and not caring to face a conference, 'foreseeing that thereof must needs have ensued more inconvenience than were meet,' she drew back with temper not too ruffled to save her dignity in giving way. Her intention had been to extort or demand the sanction of the House for the prosecution of Dalton. Discovering in time that if they refused she had no means of compelling them, she would not risk an open rupture. The prisoner was released 'without further question or trial,' and on the 25th she sent orders to the Speaker 'to relieve the House of the burden of her commandment.' She had been assured, she said, that they had no intention of molesting her, and that they had been 'much perplexed' by the receipt of her order; 'she did not mean to prejudice any part of the laudable liberties heretofore granted to them;' she would therefore content herself with their obedient behaviour, and she trusted only that if any person should begin again to discuss any particular title, the Speaker would compel him to be silent.¹

The Commons were prudent enough to make the

¹ Note of the words of the Queen to the Speaker of the House of Commons: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xli. Leicester to Cecil, November 27: *MS. Ibid.*

Queen's retreat an easy one. Having succeeded in resisting a dangerous encroachment of the crown they did not press their victory. The message sent through the Speaker was received by the House 'most joyfully, with most hearty prayers and thanks for the same,'¹ and with the consent of all parties the question of Parliamentary privilege was allowed to drop.

Yet while ready to waive their right of discussing further the particular pretensions of the claimants of the crown, the Commons would not let the Queen believe that they acquiesced in being left in uncertainty. Two months had passed since the beginning of the session, and the subsidy had not been so much as discussed. The succession quarrel had commenced with the first motion for a grant of money, and had lasted with scarcely an interval ever since.

It was evident that although Elizabeth's objection to name a successor was rested on general grounds, it applied as strongly to Lady Catherine as to the Queen of Scots, and had arisen professedly from the Queen's own experience in the lifetime of her sister; yet the Commons either suspected that she was secretly working in the Scottish interest, or they thought at all events that her procrastination served only to strengthen that interest, and that Mary Stuart's friends every day grew more numerous.

The Money Bill was reintroduced on the 27th. The House was anxious to compensate by its liberality for

¹ *Commons' Journals*, 8 *Elizabeth*.

the trouble which it had given on other subjects, and the Queen was privately informed that the grant would be made unusually large. Elizabeth, determined not to be outdone, replied that although for the public service she might require all which they were ready to offer, 'she counted her subjects, in respect of their hearty good will, her best treasurers;' and 'she therefore would move them to forbear at that time extending their gift as they proposed.' The manner as well as the matter of the message was pointedly gracious, yet the Commons would have preferred her taking the money and listening to their opinions; and the bribe was as unsuccessful as the menace, in keeping them silent. They voted freely the sum which she would consent to take. It amounted in a rough estimate to an income tax of seven per cent. for two years; but an attempt was made to attach a preamble to the Bill which would commit the Queen in accepting it to what she was straining every nerve to avoid. Referring to the promise which she had made to the Committee, 'the Commons humbly and earnestly besought her with the assistance of God's grace, having resolved to marry, to accelerate without more loss of time all her honourable actions tending thereto;' while 'submitting themselves to the will of Almighty God, in whose hands all power and counsel did consist, they would at the same time beseech Him to give her Majesty wisdom well to foresee, opportunity speedily to consult, and power with assent of the realm sufficiently to fulfil without unnecessary delay, all that should be needful to her sub-

jects and their posterity in the stablishing the succession of the crown, first in her own person and progeny, and next in such persons as law and justice should peaceably direct—according to the answer of Moses: ‘The Lord God of the spirit of all flesh set one over this great multitude which may go out and in before them, and lead them out and in, that the Lord’s people may not be as sheep without a shepherd.’¹

The meaning of language such as this could not be mistaken. All the political advantages of the Scottish succession would not compensate to ‘the Lord’s people’ for such a shepherd as the person into whose hands they seemed to be visibly drifting. It was a grave misfortune for the Protestants that they could produce no better candidate than Lady Catherine Grey, who had professed herself a Catholic when Catholicism seemed likely to serve her turn; and to whom, notwithstanding her legal claim through the provisions of the will of Henry the Eighth, there were so many and so serious objections. The friends of the Queen of Scots had set in circulation a list of difficulties in the way of her acknowledgment, the weight of which fanaticism itself could not refuse to admit.²

¹ Preamble for the Subsidy Bill: *Domestic MSS.*, vol. xli. *Rolls House*.

² ‘Whatever be said, it is notorious that when Sir Charles Brandon married the French Queen he had a wife already living.

‘The Lady Katherine is therefore illegitimate.

‘Even if this were not so, yet such hath been her life and behaviour, and so much hath she stained herself and her issue, as she is to be thought unworthy of the crown.

It is uncertain whether the preamble was ever forced on Elizabeth's attention. The draft of it alone

For she was married, as you know, to the Lord Herbert; the marriage was performed and perfected by all necessary circumstances; there was consent of parties, consent of parents, open solemnizing, continuance till lawful years of consent, and in the mean time, carnal copulation; all which, save the last, are commonly known, and the last, which might be most doubtful, is known by confession of them both. She herself hath earnestly acknowledged the same.

'A divorce was procured by the Earl of Pembroke in Queen Mary's reign, against their wills, so that it cannot be legal.

'Afterwards, she by dalliance fell to carnal company with the Earl of Hertford, which was not descried till the bigness of her belly bewrayed her ill hap. The marriage between them was declared unlawful by the Bishop who examined it.

'The mother wicked and lascivious; the issue bastarded.

'If she were next in the blood royal, her fault is so much the more to have so foully spotted the same. She can have no lawful children. Deut. xiii. 23:—It is written, 'a bastard and unlawful-born person may not bear rule in the church and commonweal;' a law devised to punish the parents for their sins, so that such a mother ought in no case to be allowed to succeed.

'Next as to King Henry's will:—

'He had no power to bequeath the crown, except so far as Parliament gave him leave; and Parliament could only give him leave so far as the power of Parliament extended. The words of the statute give him no absolute or unlimited power to appoint an unfit person to the crown, not capable of the same—as unto a Turk, an infidel, an infamous or opprobrious person, a fool or a madman.

'But again, he had power to order the succession, either by Letters Patent, or by his will, signed with his own hand.

'He has not done it by Letters Patent; of that there is no doubt.

'His will, there are witnesses sufficient, and some of them that subscribed the same testament can truly and plainly testify, that he did not subscribe.

'The stamp might be appended when the King was void of memory, or else when he was deceased, as indeed it happened, as more manifestly appeared by open declaration made in Parliament by the late Lord Paget and others, that the King did not sign it with his own hand, and as it is plain and probable enough by the pardon obtained for one William Clerke for putting the stamp to the said will after the King was departed.

'As to the enrolment in Chancery,

remains to show what the Commons intended; and either they despaired of prevailing on the Queen to accept the grant while such a prelude was linked to it, and were unwilling to embarrass the public service; or they preferred another expedient to which they trusted less objection might be raised: the preamble at all events was abandoned; they substituted for it a general expression of gratitude for the promise to marry, and sent the Bill to the Lords on the 17th of December.

Meanwhile on the 5th a measure was introduced which, if less effective in the long run for the protection of the Reformation than the declaration of a Protestant successor, would have ended at once the ambiguity of the religious position of Elizabeth. The Thirty-nine Articles, strained and cracked by three centuries of evasive ingenuity, scarcely embarrass now the feeblest of consciences. The clergyman of the nineteenth century subscribes them with such a smile as might have been worn by Samson when his Philistine mistress bound his arms with the cords and withes. In the first years of Elizabeth they were the symbols by which the orthodox Protestant was distinguished from the concealed Catholic. The liturgy with purposed ambiguity could be used by

and the evidence on the Rolls that the will was accepted and acted on, this is nothing. It was his will whether signed or not, and so far as legacies, etc., were concerned, such as he had power to make by the common law, so far it might be acted on. But in so far as the suc-

cession was concerned, it was invalid, because the form prescribed by the empowering statute, 35 Hen. VIII., had not been observed.'—Answer to Mr Hales' Book of the Succession, December, 1566: *Domestic MS.*, *Elizabeth*, vol. xli.

those who were Papists save in the name; the Articles affirmed the falsehood of doctrines declared by the Church to be divine, and the Catholic who signed them either passed over to the new opinions or imperilled his soul with perjury. In their anxiety for conciliation, and for the semblance of unanimity, Elizabeth's Government had as yet held these formulas at arm's length: the Convocation of 1562 had reimposed them so far as their powers extended; but the decrees of Convocation were but shadows until vitalized by the legislature; and both Queen and Parliament had refused to give the authority of law to a code of doctrines which might convulse the kingdom.

On the failure of the suit for the succession, a Bill was brought into the Lower House to make subscription to the Articles a condition for the tenure of benefices in the Church of England. The move was so sudden and the Commons were so swift that there was no time for resistance. It was hurried through its three readings and given to the bishops to carry through the Lords. A letter from de Silva to Philip shows the importance which both Catholic and Protestant attached to it:—

DE SILVA TO PHILIP II.

December, 1566.

‘Religion is again under discussion here; these heretic bishops are urging forward their malicious pretences; they say that it is desirable for the realm to profess an uniform belief, and they desire to have their

doctrine enforced by temporal penalties as soon as it has been sanctioned by Parliament.

‘The Catholics are in great alarm and entreat the Queen to withhold her sanction. I spent some time with her yesterday, and to bring on the subject I said that the Subsidy Bill having been passed it would be well if she let the Parliament end. The longer it lasted the more annoyance it would cause to her; and she might assure herself that these popular assemblies could not fail to produce disquiet, more particularly where the Commons had liberty of speech and were so much inclined to novelties.

‘She agreed with me in this. She said the Commons had now entered upon a subject which was wholly alien to their duties; they were acting in contradiction to their late professions, and she would endeavour to send them about their business before Christmas.

‘I pointed out to her the mischievous intention of the men who had brought these religious questions forward. They had no care for her or for the commonwealth, and they simply meant sedition. She was at peace so far and had lived and reigned in safety all these years on the principles on which Cecil had carried on the government. If there was now to be a change, the insolence of the upholders of novelties would disturb everything. Hitherto the Pope and the Catholic powers had abstained from declaring against her, in the belief that her subjects were equitably and wisely governed, and that she would allow no one to be injured or offended. Should they now see her preparing to change her course

they would perhaps reconsider the situation and troubles might ensue, of which I, as the minister of your Majesty who so ardently desired her well-being, could not but give her honest warning.

‘She went into the subject at some length. She said that those who were engaged upon it had given her to understand that it was for her own good, and had promised every one of them to stand by her and defend her against all her enemies.

‘I told her she could not but see that these new religionists were only frightening her—in order that they might bring her to declare more decisively for them and against the Catholics. They pretended that if she separated herself from them—if she did not yield in all points to what they wished—she would be in danger on account of the sentence which had been given at Rome in favour of Queen Catherine. I could assure her that she had but to express a desire to that effect and the Pope would immediately remove the difficulty; I knew, in fact, that he was extremely anxious to remove it. Being her father’s daughter, born in his house, having been named by him with consent of Parliament to succeed after her sister, and being Queen in possession, she had nothing really to fear—she would find powerful friends everywhere.

‘It was true, she admitted, that the Pope had offered to reverse the sentence, but he had made it a condition that she should submit to him absolutely and unreservedly.

‘If his Holiness had done this, I said, he was not

actuated by any covetous ambition, but by the sincerest interest in herself and the realm. In the present Pope she might feel the fullest confidence; and at all events there was no more reason for making innovations now than there had been at the beginning of her reign. She would do better to wait till time should enable her to see her way.

‘She said that she thought as I did: she believed however that her people were afraid if she married the Archduke that the old religion would be brought in again; they were pressing forward these changes as a precaution.

‘A little while ago, I said, her council were most afraid that she would not marry at all.

‘True, she answered; that was their fear or their pretended fear—and their present conduct showed how dishonest they had been. Marry however she would, if it was only to vex them. She would have been glad, she said, had there been any one in Parliament who could have checked the Bill in its progress; if it passed the Lords she feared she would be unable to resist the pressure which would be brought to bear upon her.’

Either Elizabeth feared another quarrel and distrusted her own strength, or she wished to deceive de Silva into believing her opposition to the Bill to be more sincere than it really was. The remonstrances of the Catholics however and her own better judgment prevailed at last. She collected her courage and sent a message to the Peers desiring that the Bill of Religion should go no further. The bishops were the persons in the Upper

House, for whom alone the question had much interest; and Elizabeth understood how to manage them. The Commons had resisted one order—the bishops thought they could resist another. Their first impulse was to entreat the Queen to reconsider her command—to let the debate go forward, and ‘if the Bill was found good by the Lords that she would be pleased for the glory of God to give her gracious assent to the same.’¹ A petition to this effect was presented carrying the signatures of the two archbishops and thirteen bishops. The Queen sent immediately for Parker and three or four more, and inquired which of them had been the original promoters of the Bill. Though it first appeared in the Lower House, she said, it must have been set in motion by some one on the Bench; and though she had no objection to the doctrine of the Articles—‘for it was that which she did openly profess’—she objected seriously to sudden irregular action ‘without her knowledge and consent’ on a question of such magnitude.

Had Elizabeth scolded in the tone usual with her towards the Church authorities she might have found them obstinate; but she spoke reasonably and they were frightened. The archbishops, though their names headed the signatures to the petition, disclaimed eagerly the responsibility of the initiation. She bade them find out by whom it had been done. The Archbishop of Canterbury reported to Cecil ‘that most of his brethren answered, as he had done, that they knew nothing of

¹ Petition of the Bishops to the Queen, December, 1566: *Domestic MSS., Elizabeth*, vol. xli.

it.' Having extracted a disavowal from the majority of the Bench, Elizabeth was able to shield her objections behind their indifference; she had checkmated them and the obnoxious measure disappeared.

Thus gradually the storms of the session were blowing over. The Queen seemed at last to have really resolved on marriage, and her determination gave her courage to encounter her other difficulties with an increase of firmness. She promised the advocates of the Scotch title that the will of Henry the Eighth should be examined immediately on the close of the session, and that a fair legal opinion should be taken on the Queen of Scots' claims;¹ and she gave Mary Stuart a significant evidence of her good will in closing promptly and peremptorily a discussion which had commenced at Lincoln's Inn, in the interests of the rival candidate. The lawyers, disappointed of their debate in the House of Commons, began it again in the Inns of Court—where there was no privilege to protect incautious speakers. Mr Thornton, an eloquent advocate of Lady Catherine, was sent to the Tower; and even Cecil earned the thanks of the Queen of Scots by the energy with which he seconded his mistress in silencing opposition.²

¹ De Silva to Philip, December 16: *MS. Simancas*.

² On the 5th of January, Murray thanked Cecil in his own and the Queen's name for 'his cordial dealing.' 'Her Majesty,' wrote Maitland to him, 'is very well satisfied with your behaviour. I pray you so

continue, not doubting but you shall find her a thankful princess.' 'Melville,' he added, 'reports nothing but good of you, touching the repairing the injury done against my mistress at Lincoln's Inn.'—*Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

Cecil's conduct in the succession

Elizabeth herself wrote to the Queen of Scots, no longer insisting on the treaty of Leith—no longer sti-

struggle is not easy to make out. Neither memorandum nor letter of his own remain to show his real feelings; but though he might naturally have been looked for among the supporters of Lady Catherine Grey, he seems to have given thorough satisfaction to the friends of the Queen of Scots. He must have written to Maitland immediately after Elizabeth's first answer to the address of the Houses, regretting her resolution to leave the question unsettled; and he must have led Maitland to suppose that he had wished Mary Stuart to have been the person nominated; for Maitland, answering his letter on the 11th of November, gave him 'heartly thanks for the pains which he had taken in the busy matter which he had in hand,' and then went on more pointedly—

'I look not in my time to see the matter in any perfection, for I think it is not the pleasure of God to have the subjects of this isle thoroughly settled in their judgment; for which cause he doth keep things most necessary undetermined, so as they shall always have somewhat where-with to be exercised. The experience I have had of late in my own person makes me the less to marvel when I hear your doings are misconstrued by backbiters. Whosoever will meddle with public affairs and princes must be content to bear

that burden. I never doubted the sincerity of your intentions, and I doubt not time shall convince those that think the contrary even in their own conscience, whenas themselves shall be content to justify your councils, which now are ignorant to what scope they are directed.'

On the 17th of November, Mary Stuart herself wrote to Cecil, saying 'that the bruits were passed which reported him to be a hinderer to her advancement, and that she knew him to be a wise man.'

On the 18th Murray wrote that 'he had always found Cecil most earnest to produce good feeling and a sound understanding between England and Scotland, and between the two Queens: and so,' he said, 'my trust is that ye will continue favourable to the end in all her Highness's affairs, which for my own part I will most earnestly crave of you, being most assured there is no daughter in the isle doth more reverence her natural mother nor my Sovereign the Queen your mistress. Nor sure I am can she be induced by any means to seek or procure that which may in any sort offend her Majesty.'—*Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

It is possible that even Cecil's vigilance had been laid asleep by the submissive attitude which the Queen of Scots had assumed towards Elizabeth, and by the seeming restoration of Murray to her confidence.

pulating for embarrassing conditions. Substantially conceding all the points which were in dispute between them, she proposed that they should mutually bind themselves by a contract in which Mary Stuart should undertake to do nothing against Elizabeth during the lifetime of herself or her children; while Elizabeth would 'engage never to do or suffer anything to be done to the prejudice of the Queen of Scots' title and interest as her next cousin.'¹

The Queen of Scots declared herself, in ^{1567.} reply, assured of Elizabeth's 'good mind and ^{January.} entire affection' towards her; 'she did not doubt that in time her sister would proceed to the perfecting and consideration of that which she had begun to utter, as well to her own people as to other nations—the opinion which her sister had of the equity of her cause;' and she promised to send a commission to London to settle the terms in which the contract 'might pass orderly to both their contentments.'²

Thus the struggle was over; though unrecognized by a formal Act of Parliament Mary Stuart had won the day and was virtually regarded as the heir-presumptive to the English throne. Elizabeth's own wishes had pointed throughout to this conclusion, if the Queen of Scots would consent to seek her object in any other capacity than as the representative of a revolution. The reconciliation of the two factions in Scotland and the

¹ Elizabeth to the Queen of Scots, December, 1566: *MS. Rolls House*.

² The Queen of Scots to Elizabeth, Jan. 3. 1567: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House*.

restoration of Murray and Maitland to confidence and authority were accepted as an indication of a changed purpose; and harassed by her subjects, goaded into a marriage which she detested, and exhausted by a struggle which threatened a dangerous breach between herself and the nation, Elizabeth closed the long chapter of distrust, and yielded or prepared to yield all that was demanded of her.

Having thus made up her mind she resolved to break up the Parliament and to punish the refractory House of Commons by a dissolution. After another election the Puritans would be in a minority. The succession could be legally established without division or quarrel, guarded by such moderate guarantees as might secure the mutual toleration of the two creeds.

For the first time in parliamentary history a session had been wasted in barren disputes. On the 2nd of January between two and three in the afternoon the Queen appeared in the House of Lords to bring it to an end. The Commons were called to the bar; the Speaker, Mr Onslow, read a complimentary address, in which he described the English nation as happy in a sovereign who understood her duties, who prevented her subjects from injuring one another and knew 'how to make quiet among the ministers of religion.' He touched on the many excellences of the constitution, and finally with some imprudence ventured an allusion to the restrictions on the royal authority.

'There be,' he said, 'for the prince provided princely prerogatives and royalties, yet not such as the prince

can take money or other things or do as she will at her own pleasure without order ; but quietly to suffer her subjects to enjoy their own without wrongful oppression ; whereas other princes by their liberty do take as pleaseth them.'

'Your Majesty,' he went on turning to Elizabeth, 'has not attempted to make laws contrary to order, but orderly has called this Parliament, which perceived certain wants and thereunto have put their helping hands, and for help of evil manners good laws are brought forth.'

Then going to the sorest of all sore and wounding subjects, he concluded, 'we give hearty thanks to God for that your Highness has signified your pleasure of your inclination to marriage, which afore you were not given unto ; which is done for our safeguard, that when God shall call you you may leave of your own body to succeed you. Therefore God grant us that you will shortly embrace the holy state of matrimony when and with whom God shall appoint and shall best like your Majesty.'

Elizabeth's humour, none the happiest at the commencement, was not improved by this fresh chafing of her galled side. She had come prepared to lecture others, not to listen to a homily. She beckoned Bacon to her and spoke a few words to him. He then rose and said that the general parts of the Speaker's address her Majesty liked well, and therefore he need not touch on them ; on the latter and more particular expressions used in it a few words were necessary.

‘Politick orders,’ he said, ‘be the rules of all good acts, and touching them that you have made to the overthrowing of good laws’ (your Bill of Religion, with which you meant to tyrannize over conscience), ‘these deserve reproof as well as the others deserve praise. In which like cause you err in bringing her Majesty’s prerogative into question, and for that thing wherein she meant not to hurt any of your liberties. Her Majesty’s nature however is mild ; she will not be austere ; and therefore though at this time she suffer you all to depart quietly into your counties for your amendment, yet as it is needful she hopeth the offenders will hereafter use themselves well.’

The Acts of the session were then read out and received the royal assent ; all seemed over, and it was by this time dusk ; when Elizabeth herself in the uncertain light rose from the throne, stood forward in her robes, and spoke,

‘My Lords and other Commons of this assembly : although the Lord Keeper hath according to order very well answered in my name, yet as a periphrasis I have a few words further to speak unto you, notwithstanding I have not been used nor love to do it in such open assemblies. Yet now, not to the end to amend his talk, but remembering that commonly princes’ own words are better printed in the hearers’ memory than those spoken by her command, I mean to say thus much unto you.

‘I have in this assembly found such dissimulation where I always professed plainness, that I marvel thereat ; yea two faces under one hood, and the body rotten,

being covered with the two vizors succession and liberty—which they determined must be either presently granted, denied, or deferred; in granting whereof they had their desire; and denying or deferring thereof, those things being so plaudable as indeed to all men they are, they thought to work me that mischief which never foreign enemy could bring to pass—which is the hatred of my Commons.

‘ But alas ! they began to pierce the vessel before the wine was fined, and began a thing not foreseeing the end, how by this means I have seen my well-willers from my enemies, and can as meseemeth very well divide the House into four :—

‘ 1. The broachers and workers thereof, who are in the greatest fault.

‘ 2. The speakers, who by eloquent tales persuaded the rest, are next in degree.

‘ 3. The agreeers, who being so light of credit that the eloquence of those tales so overcame them that they gave more credit thereunto than unto their own wits.

‘ 4. Those that sat still and mute and meddled not therewith, but rather wondered disallowing the matter; who in my opinion are most to be excused.

‘ But do you think that either I am so unmindful of your surety by succession, wherein is all my care, considering I know myself to be but mortal ? No, I warrant you. Or that I went about to break your liberties ? No, it never was in my meaning ; but to stay you before you fell into the ditch. For all things have their time ; and although perhaps you may have after me a better-

learned or wiser, yet I assure you, none more careful over you ; and therefore henceforth, whether I live to see the like assembly or no, or whoever it be, yet beware how you prove your prince's patience as you have now done mine.

‘ And now to conclude all this ; notwithstanding, not meaning to make a Lent of Christmas, the most part of you may assure yourselves that you depart in your prince's grace.

‘ My Lord Keeper, you will do as I bid you.’

Again Bacon rose and in a loud voice said, ‘ The Queen's Majesty doth dissolve this Parliament. Let every man depart at his pleasure.’

Elizabeth swept away in the gloom, passed to her barge, and returned to the palace. The Lords and Commons scattered through the English counties, and five years went by before another Parliament met again at Westminster in a changed world.

On that evening the immediate prospect before England was the Queen's marriage with an Austrian Catholic prince, the recognition more or less distant of the Catholic Mary Stuart as heir-presumptive, the establishment with the support and sanction of the Catholic powers of some moderate form of Government, under which the Catholic worship would be first tolerated and then creep on towards ascendancy. It might have ended, had Elizabeth been strong enough, in broad intellectual freedom ; more likely it would have ended in the reappearance of the Marian fanaticism, to be encountered by passions as fierce and irrational as itself ;

and to the probable issue of that conflict conjecture fails to penetrate.

But the era of toleration was yet centuries distant ; and the day of the Roman persecutors was gone never more to reappear. Six weeks later a powder barrel exploded in a house in Edinburgh, and when the smoke cleared away the prospects of the Catholics in England were scattered to all the winds.

The murder of Henry Stuart Lord Darnley is one of those incidents which will remain till the end of time conspicuous on the page of history. In itself the death of a single boy, prince or king though he might be, had little in it to startle the hard world of the sixteenth century. Even before the folly and falsehood by which Mary Stuart's husband had earned the hatred of the Scotch nobility, it had been foreseen that such a frail and giddy summer pleasure-boat would be soon wrecked in those stormy waters. Had Darnley been stabbed in a scuffle or helped to death by a dose of arsenic in his bed, the fair fame of the Queen of Scots would have suffered little, and the tongues that dared to mutter would have been easily silenced. But conspiracies in Scotland were never managed with the skilful villany of the Continent ; and when some conspicuous person was to be removed out of the way, the instruments of the deed were either fanatic religionists who looked on themselves as the servants of God, or else they had been wrought up to the murder point by some personal passion which was not contented with the death of its victim, and required a fuller satisfaction in the picturesqueness of dramatic re-

venge. The circumstances under which the obstacle to Mary Stuart's peace was disposed of challenged the attention of the whole civilized world, and no after efforts availed in court, creed, or nation, to hide the memory of the scenes which were revealed in that sudden lightning flash.

The disorders of the Scots upon the Border had long been a subject of remonstrance from the English Government. The Queen of Scots, while the Parliament was sitting at Westminster, desired to give some public proof of her wish to conciliate; and after the strange appearance of Darnley in September at the council at Edinburgh, she proposed to go in person to Jedburgh and hear the complaints of Elizabeth's wardens. The Earl of Bothwell had taken command of the North Marches: he had gone down to prepare the way for the Queen's appearance, and on her arrival she was greeted with the news that he had been shot through the thigh in a scuffle and was lying wounded in Hermitage Castle. The Earl had been her companion throughout the summer; her relations with him at this time—whether innocent or not—were of the closest intimacy; and she had taken into her household a certain Lady Reres, who had once been his mistress.

1566. She heard of his wound with the most
October. alarmed anxiety; on every ground she could ill afford to lose him;¹ and careless at all times of bodily fatigue or danger, she rode, on the 15th of

¹ 'Ce ne luy eust pas esté peu de perte de le perdre!' were the unsuspicious words of du Croq on the 17th of October.—TEULET, vol. ii. p. 289.

October, twenty-five miles over the moors to see him. The Earl's state proved to be more painful than dangerous, and after remaining two hours at his bed-side she returned the same day to Jedburgh. She had not been well: 'thought and displeasure,' which, as she herself told Maitland,¹ 'had their root in the King,' had already affected both her health and spirits. The long ride, the night air, and 'the great distress of her mind for the Earl,' proved too much for her; and though she sat her horse till her journey's end, she fainted when she was lifted from the saddle, and remained two hours unconscious. Delirium followed with violent fever, and in this condition she continued for a week. She was frequently insensible; food refused to remain upon her stomach; yet for the first few days there seemed to be 'no tokens of death;' she slept tolerably, and on Tuesday and Wednesday the 22nd and 23rd she was thought to be improving. An express had been sent to Glasgow for Darnley, but he did not appear. On Friday the 25th there was a relapse; shiverings came on, the body grew rigid, the eyes were closed, the mouth set and motionless; she lost consciousness so entirely that she was supposed to be dying or dead; and in expectation of an immediate end a menacing order to keep the peace was sent out by Murray, Maitland, Huntly, and the other Lords who were in attendance on her.

The physician, 'Master Naw,' however, 'a perfytt man of his craft,' 'would not give the matter over.' He

¹ Maitland to the Archbishop of Glasgow: *Printed in* KEITH.

restored the circulation by chafing the limbs; the Queen came to herself at last, broke into a profuse perspiration, and fell into a natural sleep. When she awoke, the fever was gone, but her strength was prostrated. For the few next days she still believed herself in danger, and with the outward signs, and so far as could be seen with the inward spirit, of Catholic piety, she prepared to meet what might be coming upon her. The Bishop of Ross was ever on his knees at her bedside; and courageous always, she professed herself ready to die if so it was to be. She recommended the Prince to the lords; through Murray she bequeathed the care of him to Elizabeth—through du Croq to the King of France and Catherine de Medici—and for Scotland she implored them all as her last request ‘to trouble no man in his conscience that professed the Catholic faith,’ in which she herself had been brought up and was ready to die.

How much of all this was real, how much theatrical, it is needless to inquire; the most ardent admirer of Mary Stuart will not claim for her a character of piety, in any sense of the word which connects it with the moral law; those who regard her with most suspicion will not refuse her the credit of devotion to the Catholic cause.

In a week all alarm was at an end. At length, but so late that his appearance was an affront, Darnley arrived: he was received with coldness; but for the interposition of Murray he would not have been allowed to remain a single night, and the next morning he was

dismissed to return to his father. In unhappy contrast the Earl of Bothwell was brought as soon as he could be moved to Jedburgh; and on the 10th of November the Court broke up, and proceeded by slow ^{November.} journeys towards Edinburgh for the Prince's baptism. At Kelso the Queen found a letter from her husband. It seems that he had been again writing in complaint of her to the Pope and the Catholic powers.¹ He was probably no less unwise in the words which he used to herself; and she exclaimed passionately in Murray's and Maitland's presence 'that unless she was freed of him in some way she had no pleasure to live, and if she could find no other remedy she would put hand to it herself.'²

Leaving Kelso and skirting the Border, she looked from Halydon Hill over Berwick and the English lines, and that fair vision of the future where Darnley was the single darkening image. A train of knights and gentlemen came out to do her homage and attend her to Ayemouth; the Berwick batteries as she went by saluted the heiress of the English crown; all through Northumberland, through Yorkshire, to the very gates of London, had she cared to visit Elizabeth, Mary Stuart would have been then received with all but regal honours. The Earl of Bedford—of all English nobles the most determined of her opponents—was preparing

¹ De Silva in a letter, late in the winter, to Philip, spoke of writing to the Queen of Scots—'Á cerca del mal oficio que su marido habia hecho

contra ella con V. M^d. y con el Papa y Principes en lo de su religion.'—*MS. Simancas.*

² CALDERWOOD.

to be present at the approaching baptism to make his peace as Elizabeth's representative. From Dunbar she wrote to Cecil and the rest of the council as to 'her good friends,' to whom she committed the care of 'her cause.' From thence she passed on to Craigmillar¹ to recruit her strength in the keen, breezy air.

Some heavy weight still hung upon her spirits: her brilliant prospects failed to cheer her. 'The Queen is at Craigmillar,' wrote du Croq at the end of November; 'she is still sick, and I believe the principal part of her disease to consist of a deep grief and sorrow: nor can she, it seems, forget the same; again and again she says she wishes she were dead.'²

To the lords who had attended her to Dalkeith the cause of her trouble was but too notorious. Instead of listening to her entreaties to relieve her of her husband, the Pope had probably followed the advice of de Silva, and had urged her to be reconciled to him: at any rate she must have known the anxiety of her English friends, and must have felt more wearily than ever the burden of the chain with which she had bound herself. Bothwell, Murray, Maitland, and Huntly continued at her side, and at Craigmillar they were joined by Argyle.

The lords and gentlemen who had been concerned in Rizzio's murder had by this time most of them received their pardon; but the Queen had still found herself unable to forgive Morton, who, with Lindsay, young Ruthven, and Ker, was still in exile in England.

¹ Three miles south of Edinburgh, on the road to Dalkeith

² Du Croq to the Archbishop of Glasgow: KEITH.

Their friends had never ceased to intercede for them.

One morning, while Argyle was still in bed, Murray and Maitland came to his room; December. and Maitland, beginning upon the subject, said that the 'best way to obtain Morton's pardon was to promise the Queen to find means to divorce her from her husband.'

Argyle said he did not know how it could be done.

'My Lord,' said Maitland, 'care you not for that, we shall find the means to make her quit of him well enough, if you and Lord Huntly will look on and not take offence.'

Scotland was still entangled in the Canon Law, and some trick could be made available if the nobles agreed to allow it. Huntly entered as the others were talking. They offered him the restoration of the Gordon estates if he would consent to Morton's return: he took the price, and agreed with the rest to forward the divorce.

The four noblemen then went together to Bothwell, who professed equal readiness; he accompanied them to the Queen; and Maitland in the name of the rest undertook to deliver her from Darnley on condition that she pardoned Morton and his companions.

Mary Stuart was craving for release: she said generally that she would do what they required; but embarrassed as she was by her connection with Rome, she was unable to understand how a divorce could be managed, or how, if they succeeded, they could save the legitimacy of her child. So obvious a difficulty could not have been unforeseen. Under the old law of the Church the dis-

solution of marriage was so frequent and facile, that by a kind of tacit agreement children born from connections assumed at the time to be lawful, were, like Mary and Elizabeth of England, allowed to pass as legitimate, and to succeed to their fathers' estates. The Earl of Angus and Queen Margaret were divorced, yet the English council had tried in vain to fix a stigma on the birth of Lady Lennox. Archbishop Parker more recently had divorced Hertford and Lady Catherine Grey, yet their son was still the favourite for the succession, of the English Protestants. Bothwell was ready with an instance from his own experience. The marriage between his own father and mother had been declared invalid, yet he had inherited the earldom without challenge.

The interests which depended on the young Prince of Scotland however were too vast to be lightly put in hazard; there was another and a shorter road out of the difficulty.

'Madam,' said Maitland, 'we are here the chief of your Grace's council and nobility; we shall find the means that your Majesty shall be quit of your husband without prejudice of your son, and albeit that my Lord of Murray here present be little less scrupulous for a Protestant than your Grace is for a Papist, I am assured he will look through his fingers thereto, and will behold our doings, saying nothing to the same.'

The words were scarcely ambiguous, yet Murray said nothing. Such subjects are not usually discussed in too loud a tone, and he may not have heard them distinctly. He himself swore afterwards 'that if any man said he

was present when purposes were held in his audience tending to any unlawful or dishonourable end, he spoke wickedly and untruly.’¹

But Mary herself—how did she receive the dark suggestion? This part of the story rests on the evidence of her own friends, and was drawn up in her excuse and defence. According to Argyle and Huntly she said she ‘would do nothing to touch her honour and conscience;’ ‘they had better leave it alone;’ ‘meaning to do her good it might turn to her hurt and displeasure.’²

She may be credited with having refused her consent to the proposals then made to her; and yet that such a conversation should have passed in her presence (of the truth of the main features of it there is no room for doubt) was serious and significant. The secret was ill kept: it reached the ears of the Spanish ambassador, who, though he could not believe it true, wrote an account of it to Philip.³ The Queen was perhaps serious in her reluctance; perhaps she desired not to know what was intended till the deed was done.

‘This they should have done,
And not have spoken of it. In her ’twas villany;
In them it had been good service.’

Those among the lords, at all events, who were most

¹ Reply of Murray to the declarations of the Earls of Huntly and Argyle: KEITH.

² Declarations of Huntly and Argyle: KEITH.

³ ‘Habia entendido que viendo algunos el desgusto que habia entre estos Reyes, habian ofrecido á la

Reyna de hacer algo contra su marido, y que ella no habia venido en ello. Aunque tuve este aviso de buena parte, parecióme cosa que no se debia creer que se hubiese tratado con la Reyna semejante platica.’—De Silva to Philip, January 18. *MS. Simancas.*

in Mary Stuart's confidence concluded that if they went their own way they had nothing to fear from her resentment. Four of the party present—Argyle, Huntly, Maitland, and Bothwell, with a cousin of Bothwell, Sir James Balfour—signed a bond immediately afterwards, while the Court was still at Craigmillar, to the following purpose:—

‘That for sae meikle as it was thought expedient and profitable for the commonweal, by the nobility and lords underwritten, that sic an young fool and proud tyran (as the King) should not bear rule of them—for divers causes therefore they all had concluded that he should be put forth by one way or other—and whosoever should take the deed in hand or do it, they should defend and fortify it, for it should be by every one of them reckoned and holden done by themselves.’¹

The curtain which was thus for a moment drawn aside again closes. The Queen went in the first week of December to Stirling, where Darnley was allowed to join her; and the English Catholics, who had been alarmed at the rumours which had gone abroad, flattered themselves into a hope that all would again go well. The King would make amends for the past by affection and submission; Mary Stuart would in time obliterate the painful feelings which her neglect of him had aroused.²

¹ Ormeston's confession: PITCHAIRN's *Criminal Trials of Scotland*.

² ‘El Rey de Escocia ha ya viente dias que esta con la Reyna, y comen juntos; y aunque parece que no perderá tan presto del todo el des-

gusto del Rey por las cosas pasadas, todavía piensa que el tiempo, y estar juntos, y el Rey determinado de complacerle, hará mucho en la buena reconciliacion.’—De Silva to Philip, December 18; *MS. Simancas*.

A few days after, the Earl of Bedford arrived from England; the Parliament was then approaching its conclusion; the storm had subsided, and Elizabeth, free to act for herself, had commissioned Bedford to tell the Queen of Scots that her claims should be investigated as soon as possible, and 'should receive as much favour as she could desire to her contentation.'¹ The ambassador had brought with him a magnificent font of gold weighing 330 ozs., as a splendid present to the heir of the English throne. The Prince, who was to have been dipped in it at his baptism, had grown too large by the delay of the ceremony; but Elizabeth suggested that it might be used for 'the next child.'²

The time had been when these things would have satisfied Mary Stuart's utmost hopes, and have filled her with exultation. Her thoughts, interests, and anxieties were now otherwise occupied. On the 15th, at five in the evening, the Prince was baptized by torch-light in Stirling Chapel; the service was that of the Catholic Church; the Archbishop of St Andrew's, the most abandoned of all Episcopal scoundrels, officiated, supported by three of his brethren. The French ambassador carried the child into the aisle; the Countess of Argyle, the same who had been present at Rizzio's murder, held him at the font as Elizabeth's representative; and three of the Scottish noblemen—Eglinton, Athol, and Ross—were present at the ceremony. The rest, with the English ambassador, stood outside the

¹ Instructions to the Earl of Bedford going to Scotland: KEITH.

² Ibid.

door. It boded ill for the supposed reconciliation that the Prince's father, though in the castle at the time, remained in his own room, either still brooding over his wrongs and afraid that some insult should be passed upon him, or else forbidden by the Queen to appear.

As soon as the baptism was over the suit for the restoration of Morton was continued: Bedford added his intercession to that of Murray; Bothwell, Athol, and all the other noblemen joined in the entreaty; and on the 24th the Queen with some affectation of reluctance gave way. George Douglas, who had been the first to strike Rizzio, and Faldonside, who had held a pistol to her breast, were alone excepted from a general and final pardon.¹

Under any circumstances it could only have been with terror that Darnley could have encountered Morton and young Ruthven; but the conversation at Craigmillar, which had stolen into England, had been carried equally to his own ear. He knew that the pardon of Rizzio's murderers had been connected with his own destruction; and a whisper had reached him also of the bond which, though unsigned by the Queen, had been 'drawn by her own device.'² So long as Morton remained in exile he could hope that the conspiracy against him was incomplete. The proclamation of the pardon was his death-knell, and the same night, swiftly, 'without word spoken or leave taken, he stole away from Stirling and fled to his father.'

¹ Bedford to Cecil, December 30: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

² Deposition of Thomas Crawford: *MS. Ibid.*

That at such a crisis he should have been attacked by a sudden and dangerous illness was, to say the least of it, a singular coincidence. A few miles from the castle blue spots broke out over his body, and he was carried into Glasgow languid and drooping, with a disease which the Court and the friends of the Court were pleased to call small-pox.

There for a time he lay, his father absent, himself hanging between life and death, attended only by a few faithful servants, while the Queen with recovered health and spirits spent her Christmas with Bothwell at Drummond Castle and Tullibardine, waiting the issue of the disease.

Unfortunately for all parties concerned, the King after a few days was reported to be ^{1567.} January. slowly recovering. Either the natural disorder was too weak to kill him, or the poison had failed of its work. The Queen returned to Stirling: the favourite rode south to receive the exiles on their way back from England. 'In the yard of the hostelry of Whittingham,' Bothwell and Morton met; and Morton, long after—on the eve of his own execution, when to speak the truth might do him service where he was going, and could do him no hurt in this world—thus described what passed between them:—

'The Earl of Bothwell,' said Morton, 'proposed to me the purpose of the King's murder, seeing that it was the Queen's mind that he should be taken away, because she blamed the King of Davie's slaughter more than me.'

Morton 'but newly come from one trouble, said that he was in no haste to enter into a new,' and required to be assured that the Queen indeed desired it.

Bothwell said 'he knew what was in the Queen's mind, and she would have it done.'

'Bring me the Queen's hand for a warrant,' Morton said that he replied, 'and then I will answer you.'¹

Rash and careless as Mary Stuart's passion made her, she was not so blind to prudence as to commit her signature as her husband had done. Bothwell promised that he would produce an order from her, but it never came, and Morton was saved from further share in the conspiracy.

On the 14th of January the Queen brought the Prince to Edinburgh; on the 20th she wrote a letter to the Archbishop of Glasgow at Paris complaining of her husband's behaviour to her, while the poor wretch was still lying on his sick bed;² and about the same time she was rejoined by Bothwell on his return from the Border. So far the story can be traced with confidence. At this point her conduct passes into the debateable land, where her friends meet those who condemn her with charges of falsehood and forgery. The evidence is neither conflicting nor insufficient: the dying depositions of the instruments of the crime taken on the steps of the scaffold, the 'undesigned coincidences' between the stories of many separate witnesses, with letters which, after the keenest inquiry, were declared to be in her

The Earl of Morton's confession: *Illustrations of Scottish History*, p. 494.

² The Queen of Scots to the Archbishop of Glasgow, January 20: KEITH.

own handwriting, shed a light upon her proceedings as full as it is startling ; but the later sufferings of Mary Stuart have surrounded her name with an atmosphere of tenderness, and half the world has preferred to believe that she was the innocent victim of a hideous conspiracy.

The so-called certainties of history are but probabilities in varying degrees ; and when witnesses no longer survive to be cross-questioned, those readers and writers who judge of truth by their emotions can believe what they please. To assert that documents were forged, or that witnesses were tampered with, costs them no effort ; they are spared the trouble of reflection by the ready-made assurance of their feelings.

The historian, who is without confidence in these easy criteria of certainty, can but try his evidence by such means as remain. He examines what is doubtful by the light of what is established, and offers at last the conclusions at which his own mind has arrived, not as the demonstrated facts either of logic or passion, but as something which after a survey of the whole case appears to him to be nearest to the truth.¹

¹ The story in the text is taken from the depositions in ANDERSON and PITCAIRN ; from the deposition of Crawford, in the Rolls House ; and from the celebrated casket letters of Mary Stuart to Bothwell. The authenticity of these letters will be discussed in a future volume in connection with their discovery, and with the examination of them which

then took place. Meantime I shall assume the genuineness of documents, which, without turning history into a mere creation of imaginative sympathies, I do not feel at liberty to doubt. They come to us after having passed the keenest scrutiny both in England and Scotland. The handwriting was found to resemble so exactly that of the

The Queen then, after writing the letter of complaint against her husband to the Archbishop of Glasgow, suddenly determined to visit his sick bed. On Thursday the 23rd of January she set out for Glasgow attended by her lover. They spent the night at Callendar together.¹ In the morning they parted; the Earl returned to Edinburgh; Mary Stuart pursued her journey attended by Bothwell's French servant Paris, through whom they had arranged to communicate.

The news that she was on her way to Glasgow anticipated her appearance there. Darnley was confined to his bed; Lennox, who suspected mischief, when he heard that she was coming, sent a gentleman, named Crawford, a noble, fearless kind of person, to apologize for his inability to meet her. It seems that after hearing of the bond at Craigmillar Darnley had written some letter to her, the inconvenient truths of which had been irritating; and she had used certain bitter expressions about him which had been carried to his ears. Both

Queen that the most accomplished expert could detect no difference. One of the letters could have been invented only by a genius equal to that of Shakspeare; and that one once accomplished, would have been so overpoweringly sufficient for its purpose that no forger would have multiplied the chances of detection by adding the rest. The inquiry at the time appears to me to supersede authoritatively all later conjectures. The English council, among whom were many friends of Mary Stuart, had the French originals before

them, while we have only translations, or translations of translations.

¹ 'When Bothwell was conducting the Queen to Glasgow, where she was going to the King, at Callendar after supper, late, Lady Reres came to Bothwell's room, and seeing me there, said, 'What does M. Paris here?' 'It is all the same,' said he, 'Paris will say nothing.' And thereupon she took him to the Queen's room.' — Examination of French Paris; ANDERSON'S *Collection*. Paris was Bothwell's servant.

father and son believed that she intended to be revenged; and Crawford when he gave his message did not conceal that his master was afraid of her.

‘There is no remedy against fear,’ the Queen said shortly.

‘Madam,’ Crawford answered, ‘I know so far of my master that he desires nothing more than that the secrets of every creature’s heart were writ in their faces.’¹

Crawford’s suspicions were too evident to be concealed. The Queen did not like them; she asked sharply if he had more to say; and when he said he had discharged his commission, she bade him ‘hold his peace.’

Lord Darnley had made some use of his illness; as he lay between life and death he had come to understand that he had been a fool, and for the first time in his life had been thinking seriously. When the Queen entered his room she found him lying on his couch, weak and unable to move. Her first question was about his letter; it was not her cue to irritate him, and she seemed to expostulate on the credulity with which he had listened to calumnies against her. He excused himself faintly. She allowed her manner to relax, and she inquired about the cause of his illness.

A soft word unlocked at once the sluices of Darnley’s heart; his passion gushed out uncontrolled, and with a wild appeal he threw himself on his wife’s forgiveness.

‘You are the cause of it,’ he said; ‘it comes only

¹ Crawford’s deposition : *MS. Rolls House*.

from you who will not pardon my faults when I am sorry for them. I have done wrong, I confess it; but others besides me have done wrong, and you have forgiven them, and I am but young. You have forgiven me often, you may say; but may not a man of my age, for want of counsel, of which I am very destitute, fall twice or thrice and yet repent and learn from experience? Whatever I have done wrong forgive me; I will do so no more. Take me back to you; let me be your husband again or may I never rise from this bed. Say that it shall be so,' he went on with wild eagerness; 'God knows I am punished for making my God of you—for having no thought but of you.'¹

He was flinging himself into her arms as readily as she could hope or desire; but she was afraid of exciting his suspicions by being too complaisant. She answered kindly that she was sorry to see him so unwell; and she asked him again why he had thought of leaving the country.

He said that 'he had never really meant to leave it; yet had it been so there was reason enough; she knew how he had been used.'

She went back to the bond of Craigmillar. It was necessary for her to learn who had betrayed the secret and how much of it was known.

Weak and facile as usual, Darnley gave up the name of his informant; it was the Laird of Minto; and then

¹ Crawford's deposition. The conversation as related by Darnley to Crawford, tallies exactly with that given by Mary herself to Bothwell in the casket letters.

he said that 'he could not believe that she who was his own proper flesh would do him harm;' 'if any other would do it,' he added with something of his old bravado, 'they should buy him dear unless they took him sleeping.'

Her part was difficult to act. As she seemed so kind he begged that she would give him his food; he even wished to kiss her, and his breath after his illness was not pleasant. 'It almost killed me,' she wrote to Bothwell, 'though I sat as far from him as the bed would allow: he is more gay than ever you saw him; in fact he makes love to me, of the which I take so great pleasure that I enter never where he is but incontinent I take the sickness of my sore side which I am so troubled with.'¹

When she attempted to leave the room he implored her to stay with him. He had been told, he said, that she had brought a litter with her; did she mean to take him away?

She said she thought the air of Craigmillar would do him good; and as he could not sit on horseback she had contrived a means by which he could be carried.

The name of Craigmillar had an ominous sound. The words were kind, but there was perhaps some odd glitter of the eyes not wholly satisfactory.

He answered that if she would promise him on her honour to live with him as his wife and not to leave him any more, he would go with her to the world's end,

¹ Mary Stuart to Bothwell: *ANDERSON'S Collection*

and care for nothing; if not he would stay where he was.

It was for that purpose, she said tenderly, that she had come to Glasgow; the separation had injured both of them, and it was time that it should end; 'and so she granted his desire and promised it should be as he had spoken, and thereupon gave him her hand and faith of her body that she would love him and use him as her husband;' she would wait only till his health was restored; he should use cold baths at Craigmillar, and then all should be well.

Again she returned to his letter; she was still uneasy about his knowledge of the bond, and she asked whether he had any particular fear of either of the noblemen. He had injured Maitland most, and he shivered when she named him. He felt but too surely with what indifference Maitland would set his heel on such a worm as he was.

She spoke of Lady Reres, Bothwell's evil friend. Darnley knew what that woman had been and suspected what she might be. He said he liked her not, and wished to God she might serve the Queen to her honour; but he would believe her promise, he would do all that she would have him do, and would love all that she loved.

She had gained her point; he would go with her, and that was all she wanted. A slight cloud rose between them before she left the room. He was impatient at her going, and complained that she would not stay with him: she on her part said that he must keep her

promise secret : the lords would be suspicious of their agreement, and must not know of it.

He did not like the mention of the lords ; the lords, he said, had no right to interfere ; he would never excite the lords against her, and she he trusted would not again make a party against him.

She said that their past disagreements had been no fault of hers. He and he alone was to blame for all that had gone wrong.

With these words she left him. Mary Stuart was an admirable actress ; rarely perhaps on the world's stage has there been a more skilful player. But the game was a difficult one ; she had still some natural compunction, and the performance was not quite perfect.

Darnley, perplexed between hope and fear, affection and misgiving, sent for Crawford. He related the conversation which had passed, so far as he could recollect it, word for word, and asked him what he thought.

Crawford, unblinded by passion, answered at once 'that he liked it not ;' if the Queen wished to have him living with her, why did she not take him to Holyrood ? Craigmillar— a remote and lonely country house—was no proper place for him ; if he went with her he would go rather as her prisoner than her husband.

Darnley answered that he thought little less himself ; he had but her promise to trust to, and he feared what she might mean ; he had resolved to go however ; 'he

would trust himself in her hands though she should cut his throat.’¹

And Mary, what was her occupation after parting thus from her husband? Late into the night she sat writing an account of that day’s business to her lover, ‘with whom,’ as she said, ‘she had left her heart.’ She told him of her meeting with Crawford, and of her coming to the King; she related, with but slight verbal variations, Darnley’s passionate appeal to her, as Darnley himself had told it to his friend.

‘I pretend,’ she wrote, ‘that I believe what he says; you never saw him better or heard him speak more humbly. If I did not know his heart was wax, and mine a diamond whereinto no shot can enter but that which comes from your hand, I could almost have had pity on him; but fear not, the plan shall hold to the death.’

If Mary Stuart was troubled with a husband, Bothwell was inconvenienced equally with a wife.

‘Remember in return,’ she continued, ‘that you suffer not yourself to be won by that false mistress of yours, who will travel no less with you for the same; I believe they learnt their lesson together. He has ever a tear in his eye. He desires I should feed him with my own hands. I am doing what I hate. Would you not laugh to see me lie so well and dissemble so well and tell truth betwixt my hands? We are coupled with two bad companions. The devil sunder us, and

¹ Crawford’s deposition: *Scotch MSS. Rolls House.*

God knit us together to be the most faithful couple that ever he united. This is my faith—I will die in it. I am writing to you while the rest are sleeping, since I cannot sleep as they do, and as I would desire—that is, in your arms, my dear love; whom I pray God preserve from all evil and send you repose.’

Without much moral scrupulousness about her, Mary Stuart had still feelings which answer to a loose man’s ‘sense of honour.’

‘I must go forward,’ she said, ‘with my odious purpose. You make me dissemble so far that I abhor it, and you cause me to do the office of a traitress. If it were not to obey you I had rather die than do it; my heart bleeds at it. He will not come with me except I promise him that I shall be with him as before, and doing this he will do all I please and come with me. To make him trust me I had to fence in some things with him; so when he asked that when he was well we should both have but one bed, I said that if he changed not purpose between now and then it should be so; but in the mean time I bade him take care that he let nobody know of it, because the lords would fear if we agreed together, he would make them feel the small account they made of him. In fine, he will go anywhere that I ask him. Alas! I never deceived anybody; but I remit me altogether to your pleasure. Send me word what to do and I will do it. Consider whether you can contrive anything more secret by medicine. He is to take medicine and baths at Craigmillar. He suspects greatly, and yet he trusts me. I am sorry to hurt any

one that depends on me ; yet you may command me in all things. About Lady Reres, he said, I pray God she may serve you to your honour. He suspects the thing you know, and of his life ; but as to the last, when I speak two or three kind words he is happy and out of doubt. Burn this letter, for it is dangerous and nothing well said in it.'

Then following the ebb and flow of her emotions to that strange point where the criminal passion of a woman becomes almost virtue in its utter self-abandonment, she appealed to Bothwell not to despise her for the treachery to which for his sake she was condescending.

'Have no evil opinion of me for this,' she concluded ; 'you yourself are the cause of it ; for my own private revenge I would not do it to him. Seeing, then, that to obey you, my dear love, I spare neither honour, conscience, hazard, nor greatness, take it I pray you in good part. Look not at that woman whose false tears should not be so much regarded as the true and faithful labour which I am bearing to deserve her place ; to obtain which—against my nature—I betray those that may hinder me. God forgive me, and God give you, my only love, the happiness and prosperity which your humble and faithful friend desires for you. She hopes soon to be another thing to you. It is late. I could write to you for ever ; yet now I will kiss your hand and end.'¹

¹ Mary Stuart to Bothwell : *ANDERSON'S Collection.*

With these thoughts in her mind Mary Stuart, Queen of Scotland, lay down upon her bed—to sleep, doubtless—sleep with the soft tranquillity of an innocent child. Remorse may disturb the slumbers of the man who is dabbling with his first experiences of wrong. When the pleasure has been tasted and is gone, and nothing is left of the crime but the ruin which it has wrought, then too the Furies take their seats upon the midnight pillow. But the meridian of evil is for the most part left unvexed; and when human creatures have chosen their road they are let alone to follow it to the end.

The next morning the Queen added a few closing words:

‘If in the mean time I hear nothing to the contrary, according to my commission I will bring the man to Craigmillar on Monday—where he will be all Wednesday—and I will go to Edinburgh to draw blood of me. Provide for all things and discourse upon it first with yourself.’

This letter and another to Maitland she gave in charge to Paris to take to Edinburgh. In delivering them she bade him tell Bothwell that she had prevented the King from kissing her, as Lady Reres could witness; and she told him to ask Maitland whether Craigmillar was to be the place, or whether they had changed their plan. They would give him answers with which he would come back to her immediately. She would herself wait at Glasgow with the King till his return.

Paris, after being a day upon the road, reached Edinburgh with his despatches on the night of Saturday the

25th. On going to Bothwell's room the next morning he found the Earl absent, and a servant directed him to a house belonging to Sir Robert Balfour, brother of James Balfour who signed the Craigmillar bond.

St Mary's-in-the-Fields, called commonly Kirk-a-Field, was a roofless and ruined church, standing just inside the old town walls of Edinburgh, at the north-western corner of the present College. Adjoining it there stood a quadrangular building which had at one time belonged to the Dominican monks. The north front was built along the edge of the slope which descends to the Cowgate; the south side contained a low range of unoccupied rooms which had been 'priests' chambers;' the east consisted of offices and servants' rooms; the principal apartments in the dwelling into which the place had been converted were in the western wing, which completed the square. Under the windows there was a narrow strip of grass-plot dividing the house from the town wall; and outside the wall were gardens into which there was an opening through the cellars by an underground passage. The principal gateway faced north and led direct into the quadrangle.

Here it was that Paris found Bothwell with Sir James Balfour. He delivered his letter and gave his message. The Earl wrote a few words in reply. 'Commend me to the Queen,' he said as he gave the note, 'and tell her that all will go well. Say that Balfour and I have not slept all night, that everything is arranged, and that the King's lodgings are ready for him. I have sent her a diamond. You may say I would send my

heart too were it in my power—but she has it already.’

A few more words passed, and from Bothwell Paris went to Maitland, who also wrote a brief answer. To the verbal question he answered, ‘Tell her Majesty to take the King to Kirk-a-Field;’ and with these replies the messenger rode back through the night to his mistress.

She was not up when he arrived; her impatience could not rest till she was dressed, and she received him in bed. He gave his letters and his message. She asked if there was anything further. He answered that Bothwell bade him say ‘he would have no rest till he had accomplished their enterprise, and that for love of her he would train a pike all his life.’ The Queen laughed. ‘Please God,’ she said, ‘it shall not come to that.’¹

A few hours later she was on the road with her victim. He could be moved but slowly. She was obliged to rest with him two days at Linlithgow; and it was not till the 30th that she was able to bring him to Edinburgh. As yet he knew nothing of the change of his destination, and supposed that he was going on to Craigmillar. Bothwell however met the cavalcade outside the gates and took charge of it. No attention was paid either to the exclamation or remonstrance; Darnley was informed that the Kirk-a-Field house was most convenient for him, and to Kirk-a-Field he was conducted.

‘The lodgings’ prepared for him were in the west wing, which was divided from the rest of the house by a

¹ Examination of Paris: PITCAIRN’S *Criminal Trials*, vol. i.

large door at the foot of the staircase. A passage ran along the ground floor from which a room opened which had been fitted up for the Queen. At the head of the stairs a similar passage led first to the King's room—which was immediately over that of the Queen—and further on to closets and rooms for the servants.

Here it was that Darnley was established during the last hours which he was to know on earth. The keys of the doors were given ostentatiously to his groom of the chamber, Thomas Nelson; the Earl of Bothwell being already in possession of duplicates. The door from the cellar into the garden had no lock, but the servants were told that it could be secured with bolts from within. The rooms themselves had been comfortably furnished, and a handsome bed had been set up for the King with new hangings of black velvet. The Queen however seemed to think that they would be injured by the splashing from Darnley's bath, and desired that they might be taken down and changed. Being a person of ready expedients too she suggested that the door at the bottom of the staircase was not required for protection. She had it taken down and turned into a cover for the bath-vat; 'so that there was nothing left to stop the passage into the said chamber but only the portal door.'¹

After this little attention she left her husband in possession; she intended herself to sleep from time to time there, but her own room was not yet ready.

The further plan was still unsettled. Bothwell's first

¹ Examination of Thomas Nelson: PITCAIRN.

notion was to tempt Darnley out into the country some sunny day for exercise and then to kill him. But 'this purpose was changed because it would be known ;'¹ and was perhaps abandoned with the alteration of the place from Craigmillar.

The Queen meanwhile spent her days at her husband's side, watching over his convalescence with seemingly anxious affection, and returning only to sleep at Holyrood. In the starry evenings, though it was midwinter, she would go out into the garden with Lady Reres, and 'there sing and use pastime.'² After a few days her apartment at Kirk-a-Field was made habitable ; a bed was set up there in which she could sleep, and particular directions were given as to the part of the room where it was to stand. Paris through some mistake misplaced it. 'Fool that you are,' the Queen said to him when she saw it, 'the bed is not to stand there ; move it yonder to the other side.'³ She perhaps meant nothing, but the words afterwards seemed ominously significant. A powder barrel was to be lighted in that room to blow the house and every one in it into the air. They had placed the bed on the spot where the powder was to stand, immediately below the bed of the King.

Whatever she meant, she contrived when it was moved to pass two nights there. The object was to

¹ Hepburn's confession : ANDERSON.

² Depositions of Thomas Nelson : PITCAIRN.

³ 'Sot que tu es, je ne veux pas que mon lit soyt en cest endroyt la, et du fait le feist oster.'—Examination of Paris : PITCAIRN.

make it appear as if in what was to follow her own life had been aimed at as well as her husband's. Wednesday, the 5th, she slept there, and Friday, the 7th, and then her penance was almost over, for on Saturday the thing was to have been done.

Among the wild youths who followed Bothwell's fortunes three were found who consented to be the instruments—young Hay the Laird of Tallo, Hepburn of Bolton, and the Laird of Ormeston—gentlemen retainers of Bothwell's house, and ready for any desperate adventure.¹ Delay only created a risk of discovery, and the Earl on Friday arranged his plans for the night ensuing.²

It seems however that at the last moment there was an impression either that the powder might fail or that Darnley could be more conveniently killed in a scuffle with an appearance of accident. Lord Robert Stuart, Abbot of St Cross, one of James the Fifth's wild brood of children whom the church had provided with land and title, had shared in past times in the King's riots, and retaining some regard for him had warned the poor creature to be on his guard. Darnley, making love to destruction, told the Queen; and Stuart, know-

¹ Hepburn on his trial said that when Bothwell first proposed the murder to him, 'he answered it was an evil purpose, but because he was servant to his Lordship he would do as the rest.' So also said Hay and Ormeston. Paris, according to his own story, was alike afraid to refuse and to consent. Bothwell told him

the lords were all agreed. He asked what Murray said. 'Murray, Murray!' said the Earl, 'il ne se veult n'ayder ni nuyre, mais c'est tout ung.' 'Monsieur,' Paris replied, 'il est sage.'—Examination of Paris: PITCAIRN.

² Examination of Hay of Tallo: ANDERSON.

ing that his own life might pay the forfeit of his interference, either received a hint that he might buy his pardon by doing the work himself, or else denied his words and offered to make the King maintain them at the sword's point. A duel, could it be managed, would remove all difficulty; and Bothwell would take care how it should end.

Something of this kind was in contemplation on the Saturday night, and the explosion was deferred in consequence. The Queen that evening at Holyrood bade Paris tell Bothwell 'that the Abbot of St Cross should go to the King's room and do what the Earl knew of.' Paris carried the message, and Bothwell answered, 'Tell the Queen that I will speak to St Cross and then I will see her.'¹

But this too came to nothing. Lord Robert went, and angry words, according to some accounts, were exchanged between him and Darnley; but a sick man unable to leave his couch was in no condition to cross swords; and for one more night he was permitted to survive.

So at last came Sunday, eleven months exactly from the day of Rizzio's murder; and Mary Stuart's words, that she would never rest till that dark business was revenged, were about to be fulfilled. The Earl of Murray, knowing perhaps what was coming, yet unable to interfere, had been long waiting for an opportunity to leave Edinburgh. Early that morning he wrote to his sister to say that Lady Murray

Feb. 9.

¹ Examination of Paris: ANDERSON.

was ill at St Andrew's, and that she wished him to join her; the Queen with some reluctance gave him leave to go.

It was a high day at the Court: Sebastian, one of the musicians, was married in the afternoon to Margaret Cawood, Mary Stuart's favourite waiting-woman. When the service was over, the Queen took an early supper with the Bishop of Argyle, and afterwards, accompanied by Cassilis, Huntly, and the Earl of Argyle, she went as usual to spend the evening with her husband, and professed to intend to stay the night with him. The hours passed on. She was more than commonly tender; and Darnley, absorbed in her caresses, paid no attention to sounds in the room below him, which had he heard them might have disturbed his enjoyment.

At ten o'clock that night two servants of Bothwell, Powrie and Patrick Wilson, came by order to the Earl's apartments in Holyrood. Hepburn, who was waiting there, pointed to a heap of leather bags and trunks upon the floor, which he bade them carry to the gate of the gardens at the back of Kirk-a-Field. They threw the load on a pair of pack-horses and led the way in the dark as they were told; Hepburn himself went with them, and at the gate they found Bothwell, with Hay, Ormeston, and another person, muffled in their cloaks. The horses were left standing in the lane. The six men silently took the bags on their shoulders and carried them to the postern door which led through the town wall. Bothwell then went in to join the Queen, and told the rest to make haste with their work and finish

it before the Queen should go. Powrie and Wilson were dismissed; Hepburn and the three others dragged the bags through the cellar into Mary Stuart's room. They had intended to put the powder into a cask, but the door was too narrow, so they carried it as it was and poured it out in a heap upon the floor.

They blundered in the darkness. Bothwell, who was listening in the room above, heard them stumbling at their work, and stole down to warn them to be silent; but by that time all was in its place. The dark mass in which the fire-spirit lay imprisoned rose dimly from the ground; the match was in its place, and the Earl glided back to the Queen's side.

It was now past midnight. Hay and Hepburn were to remain with the powder alone. 'You know what you have to do,' Ormeston whispered; 'when all is quiet above, you fire the end of the lint and come away.'

With these words Ormeston passed stealthily into the garden. Paris, who had been assisting in the arrangement, went upstairs to the King's room, and his appearance was the signal concerted beforehand for the party to break up. Bothwell whispered a few words in Argyle's ear; Argyle touched Paris on the back significantly: there was a pause—the length of a Paternoster¹—when the Queen suddenly recollected that there was a masque and a dance at the Palace on the occasion of the marriage, and that she had promised to be present.

¹ Examination of Paris: PITCAIRN.

She rose, and with many regrets that she could not stay as she intended, kissed her husband, put a ring on his finger, wished him good night, and went. The lords followed her. As she left the room, she said as if by accident, 'It was just this time last year that Rizio was slain.'¹

In a few moments the gay train was gone. The Queen walked back to the glittering halls in Holyrood; Darnley was left alone with his page, Taylor, who slept in his room, and his two servants, Nelson and Edward Seymour. Below in the darkness, Bothwell's two followers shivered beside the powder heap, and listened with hushed breath till all was still.

The King, though it was late, was in no mood for sleep, and Mary's last words sounded awfully in his ears. As soon as she was gone he went over 'her many speeches,' he spoke of her soft words and her caresses which had seemed sincere, 'but the mention of Davie's slaughter marred all his pleasure.'²

'What will she do?' said he, 'it is very lonely.' The shadow of death was creeping over him; he was no longer the random boy who two years before had come to Scotland filled with idle dreams of vain ambition. Sorrow, suffering, disease, and fear had done their work. That night, before or after the Queen's visit, he was said to have opened the Prayer-book, and to have read over the 55th Psalm,³ which by a strange coincidence was

¹ [BUCHANAN: *History of Scotland*.]

² [CALDERWOOD, vol. ii. p. 344.]

³ [Sir William Drury, the authority for this statement, says that 'he went over the 55th Psalm a few

in the English service for the day that was dawning.

True or false, such was the tale at the time; and the words have a terrible appropriateness.

‘Hear my prayer, O Lord, and hide not thyself from my petition.

‘My heart is disquieted within me, and the fear of death is fallen upon me.

‘Fearfulness and trembling are come upon me, and an horrible dread hath overwhelmed me.

‘It is not an open enemy that hath done me this dishonour, for then I could have borne it.

‘It was even thou, my companion, my guide, and my own familiar friend.’

Forlorn victim of a cruel age! Twenty-one years old—no more. At the end of an hour he went to bed, with his page at his side. An hour later they two were lying dead in the garden beyond the wall.

The exact facts of the murder were never known—only at two o’clock that Monday morning, a ‘crack’ was heard which made the drowsy citizens of Edinburgh turn in their sleep, and brought down all that side of Balfour’s house of Kirk-a-Field in a confused heap of dust and ruin. Nelson, the sole survivor, went to bed and slept when he left his master, and ‘knew nothing till he found the house falling about him;’ Edward Seymour was blown in pieces; but Darnley and his page were found forty yards away under a tree, with

hours before his death.’—Drury to Cecil, March 1567: *Border MSS. Rolls House.*]

‘no sign of fire on them,’ and with their ‘clothes scattered at their side.

Some said that they were smothered in their sleep; some that they were taken down into a stable and ‘wirried;’ some that ‘hearing the keys grate in the doors below them, they started from their beds and were flying down the stairs, when they were caught and strangled.’ Hay and Hepburn told one consistent story to the foot of the scaffold:—When the voices were silent overhead they lit the match and fled, locking the doors behind them. In the garden they found Bothwell watching with his friends, and they waited there till the house blew up, when they made off and saw no more. It was thought however that in dread of torture they left the whole dark truth untold; and over the events of that night a horrible mist still hangs unpenetrated and unpenetrable for ever.

This only was certain, that with her husband Mary Stuart’s chances of the English throne perished also, and with them all serious prospect of a Catholic revolution. With a deadly instinct the world divined the author of the murder; and more than one nobleman, on the night on which the news reached London, hastened to transfer his allegiance to Lady Catherine Grey.¹

The faithful Melville hurried up to defend his mistress—but to the anxious questions of de Silva, though he called her innocent, he gave confused answers.²

¹ De Silva to Philip, February 17: *MS. Simancas*. | veo le algo confuso.’—De Silva to Philip, February 22: *MS. Ibid*.

² ‘Aunque este salvó á la Reyna,

‘Lady Lennox demands vengeance upon the Queen of Scots,’ de Silva said; ‘nor is Lady Lennox alone in the belief of her guilt; they say it is revenge for the Italian secretary. The heretics denounce her with one voice; the Catholics are divided; her own friends acquit her; the connections of the King cry out upon her without exception.’¹

On the 1st of March, Moret, the Duke of Savoy’s ambassador at the Scotch Court, ^{March.} passed through London on his way to the Continent. He had been in Edinburgh at the time of the murder; and de Silva turned to him for comfort. But Moret had no comfort to give. ‘I pressed him,’ said de Silva, ‘to tell me whether he thought the Queen was innocent; he did not condemn her in words, but he said nothing in her favour;’² ‘the spirits of the Catholics are broken;’³ should it turn out that she is guilty, her party in England is gone, and by her means there is no more chance of a restoration of religion.’⁴

¹ De Silva to Philip, February 22; *MS.* Ibid.

² ‘Apretandole que me dixese lo que le parecia conforme á lo que el habia visto y colegido si la Reyna tenia culpa dello, aunque no la le condeño de palabra, no le salvó

nada.’—De Silva to Philip, March 1: *MS.* Ibid.

³ ‘Mucho ha este caso enflaquecido los animos de los Catolicos.’—*Ibid.*

⁴ *Ibid.*

CHAPTER XLVI.

DEATH OF O'NEIL.

1564. **T**HE Earl of Sussex having failed alike to beat Shan O'Neil in the field or to get him satisfactorily murdered, had at last been recalled, leaving the government of Ireland in the hands of Sir Nicholas Arnold. An unsuccessful public servant never failed to find a friend in Elizabeth, whose disposition to quarrel with her ministers was usually in proportion to their ability. She had shared the confidence of the late Deputy in what to modern eyes appears unpardonable treachery ; she received him on his return to England with undiminished confidence, and she allowed him to confirm her in her resolution to spend no more money in the hopeless enterprise of bringing the Irish into order ; while she left Arnold to set the bears and bandogs to tear each other, and watched contentedly the struggle in Ulster between O'Neil and the Scots of the Isles.

The breathing-time would have been used to better advantage had the reform been carried to completeness

which had been commenced with the mutinous miscreants miscalled the English army. But the bands could not be discharged with decency till they had received their wages; without money they could only continue to maintain themselves on the plunder of the farmers of the Pale; and the Queen, provoked with the past expenses to which she had so reluctantly assented, knotted her purse-strings, and seemed determined that Ireland should in future bear the cost of its own misgovernment. The worst peculations of the principal officers were inquired into and punished: Sir Henry Ratcliff, Sussex's brother, was deprived of his command and sent to the castle; but Arnold's vigour was limited by his powers. The paymasters continued to cheat the Government in the returns of the number of their troops; the Government defended themselves by letting the pay run into arrear; the soldiers revenged their ill-usage on the people; and so it came to pass that in O'Neil's country alone in Ireland—defended as it was from attacks from without, and enriched with the plunder of the Pale—were the peasantry prosperous, or life or property secure.

Munster was distracted by the feuds between Ormond and Desmond; while the deep bays and creeks of Cork and Kerry were the nests and hiding-places of English pirates, whose numbers had just received a distinguished addition in the person of Sir Thomas Stukeley, with a barque of four hundred tons and 'a hundred tall soldiers, besides mariners.'

Stukely had been on his way to Florida with a license

from the Crown to make discoveries and to settle there; but he had found a convenient halting-place in an Irish harbour, from which he could issue out and plunder the Spanish galleons.¹ He had taken up his quarters at Kinsale, 'to make the sea his Florida;'² and in anticipation of the terms on which he was likely to find himself with Elizabeth, he contrived to renew an acquaintance which he had commenced in England with Shan O'Neil. The friendship of a buccaneer who was growing rich on Spanish plunder might have seemed inconvenient to a chief who had offered Ireland as a fief to Philip; but Shan was not particular: Philip had as yet shown but a cold interest in Irish rebellion, and Stukely filled his cellars with sherry from Cadiz, amused him with his magniloquence, and was useful to him by his real dexterity and courage. So fond Shan became of him that he had the impertinence to write to Elizabeth in favour 'of that his so dearly loved friend, and her Majesty's worthy subject,' with whom he was grieved to hear that her Majesty was displeased. He could not but believe that she had been misinformed; but if indeed so good and gallant a gentleman had given her cause of offence, Shan entreated that her Majesty, for his sake and in the name of the services which he had himself rendered to England, would graciously pardon him; and he,

¹ 'Stukely's piracies are much railed at here in all parts. I hang down my head with shame. Alas! though it cost the Queen roundly, let him for honour's sake be fetched in. These pardons to such as be *hostes*

humani generis I like not.'—Chaloner to Cecil, Madrid, December 14, 1564: *Spanish MSS. Rolls House.*

² Sir Thomas Wroth to Cecil, November 17: *Irish MSS. Ibid.*

with Stukely for a friend and confidant, would make Ireland such as Ireland never was since the world began.¹

Among so many mischiefs 'religion' was naturally in a bad way. 'The lords and gentlemen of the Pale went habitually to mass.'² The Protestant bishops were chiefly agitated by the vestment controversy. Adam Loftus, the titular Primate, to whom sacked villages, ravished women, and famine-stricken skeletons crawling about the fields were matters of every-day indifference, shook with terror at the mention of a surplice.³ Robert Daly wrote in anguish to Cecil, in dismay at the countenance to 'Papistry,' and at his own inability to prolong a persecution which he had happily commenced.⁴

¹ Shan O'Neil to Elizabeth, June 18, 1565: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Adam Loftus to Elizabeth, May 17: *MS. Ibid.*

³ Adam Loftus to Cecil, July 16: *MS. Ibid.*

'The bruit of the alteration in religion is so talked of here among the Papists, and they so triumph upon the same, it would grieve any good Christian heart to hear of their rejoicing; yea, in so much that my Lord Primate, my Lord of Meath, and I, being the Queen's commissioners in ecclesiastical causes, dare not be so bold now in executing our commissions in ecclesiastical causes as we have been to this time. To what end this talk will grow I am not able to say. I fear it will grow to the great contempt of the Gospel

and of the ministers of the same, except that spark be extinguished before it grow to flame. The occasion is that certain learned men of our religion are put from their livings in England; upon what occasion is not known here as yet. The poor Protestants, amazed at the talk, do often resort to me to learn what the matter means; whom I comfort with the most faithful texts of Scripture that I can find. . . . But I beseech you send me some comfortable words concerning the stablishing of our religion, wherewith I may both confirm the wavering hearts of the doubtful, and suppress the stout brags of the sturdy and proud Papists.'—Robert Daly to Cecil, July 2: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

Some kind of shame was felt by statesmen in
1565. England at the condition in which Ireland continued. Unable to do anything real towards amending it, they sketched out among them about this time a scheme for a more effective government. The idea of the division of the country into separate presidencies lay at the bottom of whatever hopes they felt for an improved order of things. So long as the authority of the sovereign was represented only by a Deputy residing at Dublin, with a few hundred ragged marauders called by courtesy 'the army,' the Irish chiefs would continue, like O'Neil, to be virtually independent; while, by recognizing the reality of a power which could not be taken from them, the English Government could deprive them of their principal motive for repudiating their allegiance.

The aim of the Tudor sovereigns had been from the first to introduce into Ireland the feudal administration of the English counties; they had laboured to persuade the chiefs to hold their lands under the Crown, with the obligations which landed tenures in England were supposed always to carry with them. The large owner of the soil, to the extent that his lordship extended, was in the English theory the ruler of its inhabitants, magistrate from the nature of his position, and representative of the majesty of the Crown. Again and again they had endeavoured to convince the Irish that order was better than anarchy; that their faction fights, their murders, their petty wars and robberies, were a scandal to them; that till they could amend their ways they were no better than savages. Fair measures and foul had

alike failed so far. Once more a project was imagined of some possible reformation, which might succeed at least on paper.

In the system which was at last to bring a golden age to Ireland, the four provinces were to be governed each by a separate president and council. Every county was to have its sheriff; and the Irish noblemen and gentlemen were to become the guardians of the law which they had so long defied. The poor should no longer be oppressed by the great; and the wrongs which they had groaned under so long should be put an end to for ever by their own Parliament. 'No poor persons should be compelled any more to work or labour by the day or otherwise without meat, drink, wages, or some other allowance during the time of their labour;' no 'earth-tillers, nor any others inhabiting a dwelling under any lord, should be distrained or punished in body or goods for the faults of their landlord;' nor any honest man lose life or lands without fair trial, by parliamentary attainder, 'according to the antient laws of England and Ireland.' Noble provisions were pictured out for the rebuilding of the ruined churches at the Queen's expense, with 'twelve free grammar schools,' where the Irish youth should grow into civility, and 'twelve hospitals for aged and impotent folk.' A University should be founded in Elizabeth's name, and endowed with lands at Elizabeth's cost; and the devisers of all these things, warming with their project, conceived the Irish nation accepting willingly a reformed religion, in which there should be no more pluralities, no more abuse of patron-

age, no more neglect, or idleness, or profligacy. The bishops of the Church of Ireland were to be chosen among those who had risen from the Irish schools through the Irish University. The masters of the grammar schools should teach the boys 'the New Testament, Paul's Epistles, and David's Psalms, in Latin, that they being infants might savour of the same in age, as an old cask doth of its first liquor.' In every parish from Cape Clear to the Giant's Causeway, there should be a true servant of God for a pastor, who would bring up the children born in the same in the knowledge of the Creeds, the Lord's Prayer, the Ten Commandments, and the Catechism; 'the children to be brought to the Bishop for confirmation at seven years of age, if they could repeat them, or else to be rejected by the Bishop for the time, with reproach to their parents.'¹

Here was an ideal Ireland, painted on the retina of some worthy English minister; but the real Ireland was still the old place: as it was in the days of Brian Boroihme and the Danes, so it was in the days of Shan O'Neil and Sir Nicholas Arnold; and the Queen who was to found all these fine institutions cared chiefly to burden her exchequer no further in the vain effort to drain the black Irish morass—fed as it was from the perennial fountains of Irish nature.

The Pope might have been better contented with the condition of his children: yet he too had his grounds of disquiet, and was not wholly satisfied with Shan, or

¹ Device for the better government of Ireland: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

with Shan's rough-riding Primate. A nuncio had resided secretly for four years at Limerick, who from time to time sent information of the state of the people to Rome; and at last an aged priest named Creagh, who in past days had known Charles the Fifth, and had been employed by him in relieving English Catholic exiles, went over with letters from the nuncio, recommending the Pope to refuse to recognize the appointment of Terence Daniel to the Primacy, and to substitute Creagh in his place. The old man, according to his own story, was unambitious of dignity, and would have preferred 'to enter religion' and end his days in a monastery. The Pope however decided otherwise. Creagh was consecrated Archbishop of Armagh in the Sistine Chapel, and was sent back 'to serve among those barbarous, wild, uncivil folk,' taking with him a letter from Pius to Shan O'Neil, 'whom he did not know whether to repute for his foe or his friend.'

Thus Ireland had three competing Primates: Adam Loftus, the nominee of Elizabeth; Shan's Archbishop, Terence Daniel; and Creagh, sent by the Pope. The latter however had the misfortune to pass through London on his way home, where Cecil heard of him. He was seized and sent to the Tower, where 'he lay in great misery, cold, and hunger,' 'without a penny,' 'without the means of getting his single shirt washed, and without gown or hose.'

The poor old man petitioned 'to be let go to teach youth.' 'He would do it for nothing,' he said, 'as he had done all the days of his life, never asking a penny

of the Church or any benefice of any man;'¹ and so modest a wish might have been granted with no great difficulty, considering that half the preferments in England were held by men who scarcely affected to conceal that they were still Catholics. Either Creagh however was less simple than he pretended, or Cecil had reason to believe that his presence in Ireland would lead to mischief; he was kept fast in his cage, and would have remained there till he died, had he not contrived one night to glide over the walls upon the Thames.

His imprisonment was perhaps intended as a gratification to Shan O'Neil. No sooner had he escaped than Elizabeth considered that of the two Catholic Archbishops Terence Daniel might be the least dangerous, and that to set Shan against the Pope might be worth a sacrifice of dignity. It was intimated that if Shan would be a good subject he should have his own Primate, and Adam Loftus should be removed to Dublin.² Shan on his part gave the Queen to understand that when Terence was installed at Armagh, and he himself was created Earl of Tyrone, she should have no more trouble; and the events of the spring of 1565 made the English Government more than ever anxious to come to terms with a chieftain whom they were powerless to crush.

Since the defeat of the Earl of Sussex, Shan's influence and strength had been steadily growing. His return unscathed from London, and the fierce attitude

¹ Questions for Creagh, with Creagh's answers, February 22, 1565; Further answers of Creagh, March 17: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Private instructions to Sir Henry Sidney. Cecil's hand, 1565. *MS. Ibid.*

which he assumed on the instant of his reappearance in Ulster, convinced the petty leaders that to resist him longer would only ensure their ruin. O'Donnell was an exile in England, and there remained unsubdued in the north only the Scottish colonies of Antrim, which were soon to follow with the rest. O'Neil lay quiet through the winter. With the spring and the fine weather, when the rivers fell and the ground dried, he roused himself out of his lair, and with his galloglasse and kern, and a few hundred 'harquebussmen,' he dashed suddenly down upon the 'Redshanks,' and broke them utterly to pieces. Six or seven hundred were killed in the field; James M'Connell and his brother Sorleboy¹ were taken prisoners; and for the moment the whole colony was swept away. James M'Connell himself, badly wounded in the action, died a few months later, and Shan was left undisputed sovereign of Ulster.

The facile pen of Terence Daniel was employed to communicate to the Queen this 'glorious victory,' for which 'Shan thanked God first, and next the Queen's Majesty; affirming the same to come of her good fortune.'² The English Government, weary of the ill success which had attended their own dealings with the Scots, were disposed to regard them as a 'malicious and dangerous people, who were gradually fastening on the country;'³ and with some misgivings, they were inclined to accept Shan's account of himself; while Shan, finding

¹ Spelt variously Sorleboy, Sarlebos, Surlebois, and Surlyboy. The word means 'yellow-haired Charley.'

² Terence Daniel to Cecil, June 24: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

³ Opinion of Sir H. Sidney, May 20: *MS. Ibid*.

Elizabeth disinclined to quarrel with him, sent Terence over to her to explain more fully the excellence of his intentions. Sir Thomas Cusack added his own commendations both of Terence and his master, and urged that now was the time to make O'Neil a friend for ever. Sir Nicholas Arnold, with more discrimination, insisted that it was necessary to do one thing or the other, but he too seemed to recommend the Queen, as the least of two evils, to be contented with Shan's nominal allegiance, and to leave him undisturbed.

'If,' he said, 'you use the opportunity to make O'Neil a good subject, he will hardly swerve hereafter. The Pale is poor and unable to defend itself. If he do fall out before the beginning of next summer there is neither outlaw, rebel, murderer, thief, nor any lewd or evil-disposed person—of whom God knoweth there is plenty swarming in every corner amongst the wild Irish, yea, and in our own border too—which would not join to do what mischief they might.'¹

Alas! while Arnold wrote there came news that Shan's ambition was still unsatisfied. He had followed up his successes against the Scotch by seizing the Queen's castles of Newry and Dundrum. Turning west he had marched into Connaught 'to require the tribute due of owld time to them that were kings in that realm.' He had exacted pledges of obedience from the western chiefs, frightened Clanrickard into submission, 'spoiled O'Rourke's country,' and returned to Tyrone driving

¹ Sir T. Cusack to Cecil, August 23; O'Neil to Elizabeth, August 25; Sir N. Arnold to the English Council, August 31: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

before him four thousand head of cattle. Instead of the intended four presidencies in Ireland, there would soon be only one; and Shan O'Neil did not mean to rest till he had revived the throne of his ancestors, and reigned once more in 'Tara's halls.'

'Excuse me for writing plainly what I think,' said Lord Clanrickard to Sir William Fitzwilliam. October. 'I assure you it is an ill likelihood toward—that the realm if it be not speedily looked unto will be at a hazard to come as far out of her Majesty's hands as ever it was out of the hands of any of her predecessors. Look betimes to these things, or they will grow to a worse end.'¹

The evil news reached England at the crisis of the convulsion which had followed the Darnley marriage. The Protestants in Scotland had risen in rebellion, relying on Elizabeth's promises; and Argyle, exasperated at her desertion of Murray, was swearing that he would leave his kinsmen unrevenge, and would become Shan's ally and friend. Mary Stuart was shaking her sword upon the Border at the head of 20,000 men; and Elizabeth, distracted between the shame of leaving her engagements unredeemed or bringing the Irish and Spaniards upon her head, was in no humour to encounter fresh troubles. Shan's words were as smooth as ever; his expedition to Connaught was represented as having been undertaken in the English interest. On his return he sent 'a petition' to have 'his title and rule' deter-

¹ Clanrickard to Fitzwilliam, Oct. 11: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

mined without further delay ; while ‘ in consideration of his good services ’ he begged ‘ to have some augmentation of living granted him in the Pale,’ and ‘ her Majesty to be pleased not to credit any stories which his evil-willers might spread abroad against him.’¹

Elizabeth allowed herself to believe what it was most pleasant to her to hope. ‘ We must allow something,’ she wrote to Sir Henry Sidney, ‘ for his wild bringing up, and not expect from him what we should expect from a perfect subject ; if he mean well he shall have all his reasonable requests granted.’²

But it was impossible to leave Ireland any longer without the presence of a deputy. Sir Nicholas Arnold had gone over with singular and temporary powers ; the administration was out of joint, and the person most fitted for the government by administrative and military capacity was Leicester’s brother-in-law Sir Henry Sidney, President of Wales.

Sidney knew Ireland well from past experience. He had held command there under Sussex himself ; he had seen deputy after deputy depart for Dublin with the belief that he at last was the favoured knight who would break the spell of the enchantment ; and one after another he had seen them return with draggled plumes and broken armour. Gladly would he have declined the offered honour. ‘ If the Queen would but grant him leave to serve her in England, or in any place in the world else saving Ireland, or to live private, it should

¹ Shan O’Neil to Elizabeth, October 27 : *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Elizabeth to Sir H. Sidney, November 11.—*MS Ibid.*

be more joyous to him than to enjoy all the rest and to go thither.' It was idle to think that O'Neil could be really 'reformed' except by force; and 'the Irishry had taken courage through the feeble dealing with him.' If he was to go, Sidney said, he would not go without money. Ten or twelve thousand pounds must be sent immediately to pay the outstanding debts. He must have more and better troops; two hundred horse and five hundred foot at least, in addition to those which were already at Dublin. He would keep his patent as President of Wales; he would have leave to return to England at his discretion if he saw occasion; and for his personal expenses, as he could expect nothing from the Queen, he demanded—strange resource to modern eyes—permission to export six thousand kerseys and clothes free of duty.¹

His requests were made excessive perhaps to ensure their refusal; but the condition of Ireland could not be trifled with any longer, and if he hoped to escape he was disappointed.

'In the matter of Ireland was found such an example as was not to be found again in any place; that a sovereign prince should be owner of such a kingdom, having no cause to fear the invasion of any foreign prince, neither having ever found the same invaded by any foreign power, neither having any power born or resident within that realm that denied or ever had directly or indirectly denied the sovereignty of the Crown to belong

¹ Petition of Sir H. Sidney going to Ireland: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

to her Majesty ; and yet, contrary to all other realms, the realm of Ireland had been and yet continued so chargeable to the Crown of England, and the revenues thereof so mean, and those which were, so decayed and so diminished, that great yearly treasures were carried out of the realm of England to satisfy the stipends of the officers and soldiers required for the governance of the same.’¹

Sir Henry Sidney paid the penalty of his ability in being selected to terminate in some form or other a state of things which could no longer be endured. Again before he would consent he repeated and even exaggerated his conditions. He would not go as others had gone, ‘ fed on the chameleon’s dish,’ to twine ropes of sand and sea-slime to bind the Irish rebels with. He would go with a force to back him, or he would not go at all. He must have power, he said, to raise as many men as the Queen’s service required ; and she must trust his honour to keep them no longer than they were absolutely wanted. No remedial measures could be attempted till anarchy had been trampled down ; and then the country would prosper of itself.

‘ To go to work by force,’ he said, ‘ will be chargeable it is true ; but if you will give the people justice and minister law among them, and exercise the sword of the sovereign, and put away the sword of the subject—omnia hæc adjicientur vobis—you shall drive the now man of war to be an husbandman, and he that now liveth like a

¹ Instructions to Sir H. Sidney, October 5 ; *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

lord to live like a servant; and the money now spent in buying armour and horses and waging of war should be bestowed in building of towns and houses. By ending these incessant wars ere they be aware, you shall bereave them both of force and beggary, and make them weak and wealthy. Then you can convert the military service due from the lords into money; then you can take up the fisheries now left to the French and the Spaniards; then you can open and work your mines, and the people will be able to grant you subsidies.’¹

The first step towards the change was to introduce a better order of government: and relapsing upon the scheme for the division into presidencies, Sidney urged Elizabeth to commence with appointing a President of Munster, where Ormond and Desmond were tearing at each other’s throats. The expense—the first consideration with her—would be moderate. The President would be satisfied with a mark (13s. 4*d.*) a day; fifty men—horse and foot—would suffice for his retinue, with 9*d.* and 8*d.* a day respectively; and he would require two clerks of the signet, with salaries of a hundred pounds a year. The great Munster noblemen—Ormond, Desmond, Thomond, Clancarty, with the Archbishop of Cashel and the Bishops of Cork, Waterford, and Limerick, would form a standing council; and a tribunal would be established where disputes could be heard and justice administered without the perpetual appeal to the sword.²

¹ Opinions of Sir H. Sidney: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² It is noticeable that we find in an arrangement which was intro-

A clause was added to the first sketch in Cecil's hand : 'The Lord President to be careful to observe Divine service and to exhort others to observe it ; and also to keep a preacher who shall be allowed his diet in the household, to whom the said President shall cause due reverence to be given in respect of his office which he shall have for the service of God.'

With an understanding that this arrangement for Munster should be immediately carried out, that the precedent, if successful in the south, should be followed out in the other provinces, and that his other requests should be complied with, Sidney left London for Ireland in

duced as a reform and as a means of justice the following clause :—

'Also it shall be lawful for the President and council or any three of them, the President being one, in cases necessary, upon vehement suspicion and presumption of any great offence in any party committed against the Queen's Majesty, to put the same party to torture as they shall think convenient. — Presidency of Munster, February 1, 1566: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

Even in England torture continued to be freely used. On December 28, 1566, a letter was addressed by the Privy Council to the Attorney-General and others, that :—

'Where they were heretofore appointed to put Clement Fisher, now prisoner in the Tower, in some fear of torture whereby his lewdness and such as he might detect might the better come to light, they are re-

quested, for that the said Fisher is not minded to be plain, as thereby the faults of others might be known, to cause the said Fisher according to their discretion to feel some touch of the rack, for the better boulding out and opening of that which is requisite to be known.'—*Council Register. Elizabeth, MSS.*

And again, January 18, 1567. A letter to the Lieutenant of the Tower :—

'One Rice, a buckler-maker, committed there, is discovered to have been concerned in a robbery of plate four years before ; the lieutenant to examine the said Rice about this robbery, and if they shall perceive him not willing to confess the same then to put him in fear of the torture, and to let him feel some smart of the same whereby he may be the better brought to confess the truth.'—*Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

the beginning of December. Every hour's delay had increased the necessity for his presence. December.

Alarmed at the approach of another deputy, and excited on the other hand by the Queen of Scots' successes, Shan O'Neil had attached himself eagerly to her fortunes. In October he offered to assist her against Argyle, who was then holding out against her in the Western Highlands.¹ His pleasure was as great as his surprise when he found Argyle ready to allow the Western Islanders to join with him to drive the English out of Ireland, and punish Elizabeth for her treachery to Murray. So far Argyle carried his resentment, that he met Shan somewhere in the middle of the winter, and to atone for the disgrace of his half sister, he arranged marriages between a son and daughter which she had borne to Shan, and two children of James M'Connell, whom Shan had killed; O'Neil undertook to settle on them the disputed lands of Antrim, and Argyle consented at last to the close friendship in the interest of the Queen of Scots for which the Irish chief had so long been vainly suing.

No combination could be more ominous to England. Foul weather detained Sidney for six weeks at Holyhead. In the middle of January, but not without 'the loss of all his stuff and horses,' which were wrecked on the coast of Down, he contrived to reach Dublin. The state of things which he discovered on his arrival was worse than the worst which he had looked for. The

¹ Adam Loftus to Leicester, November 20: *Irish MSS Rolls House*.

English Pale he found 'as it were overwhelmed with vagabonds; stealth and spoils daily carried out of it; the people miserable; not two gentlemen in the whole of it able to lend twenty pounds; without horse, armour, apparel, or victual.' 'The soldiers were worse than the people: so beggarlike as it would abhor a General to look on them.' 'Never a married wife among them,' and therefore 'so allied with Irish women,' that they betrayed secrets, and could not be trusted on dangerous service; 'so insolent as to be intolerable; so rooted in idleness as there was no hope by correction to amend them.'

So much for the four shires. 'In Munster,' as the fruit of the Ormond and Desmond wars, 'a man might ride twenty or thirty miles and find no houses standing,' in a county which Sidney had known 'as well inhabited as many counties in England.' Connaught was quiet so far, and Clanrickard was probably loyal; but he was weak and was in constant expectation of being overrun.

1566.
March. 'In Ulster,' Sidney wrote, 'there tyrannizeth the prince of pride; Lucifer was never more puffed up with pride and ambition than that O'Neil is; he is at present the only strong and rich man in Ireland, and he is the dangerousest man and most like to bring the whole estate of this land to subversion and subjugation either to him or to some foreign prince, that ever was in Ireland.'¹

¹ Sidney to Leicester, March 5: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

The Deputy's first step after landing was to ascertain the immediate terms on which the dreaded chief of the North intended to stand towards him. He wrote to desire Shan to come into the Pale to see him, and Shan at first answered with an offer to meet him at Dundalk; but a letter followed in which he subscribed himself as Sidney's 'loving gossip to command,' the contents of which were less promising. For himself, Shan said, he had so much affection and respect for Sir Henry, that he would gladly go to him anywhere; but certain things had happened in past years which had not been wholly forgotten. The Earl of Sussex had twice attempted to assassinate him. Had not the Earl of Kildare interfered, the Earl of Sussex, when he went to Dublin to embark for England, 'would have put a lock upon his hands, and have carried him over as a prisoner.' His 'timorous and mistrustful people' after these experiences would not trust him any more in English hands.¹

All this was unpleasantly true, and did not diminish Sidney's difficulties. It was none the less necessary for him however to learn what he was to expect from Shan. Straining a point at the risk of offending Elizabeth, he accepted the services of Stukely, which gave the latter an opportunity of covering part of his misdoings by an act of good service, and sent him with another gentleman to Shan's castle, 'to discover if possible what he was, and what he was like to attempt.'²

¹ Shan O'Neil to Sidney, February 18: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Sidney to Leicester, March 5: *MS. Ibid.*

A better messenger, supposing him honest, could not have been chosen. Shan was at his ease with a person whose life was as lawless as his own. He had ceased to care for concealment, and spoke out freely. At first 'he was very flexible but very timorous to come to the Deputy, apprehending traitorous practices.' One afternoon 'when the wine was in him,' he put his meaning in plainer language. Stukely had perhaps hinted that there would be no earldom for him unless his doings were more satisfactory. The Irish heart and the Irish tongue ran over.

'I care not,' he said, 'to be made an earl unless I may be better and higher than an earl, for I am in blood and power better than the best of them; and I will give place to none but my cousin of Kildare, for that he is of my house. You have made a wise earl of M'Carty More. I keep as good a man as he. For the Queen I confess she is my Sovereign, but I never made peace with her but by her own seeking. Whom am I to trust? When I came to the Earl of Sussex on safe-conduct he offered me the courtesy of a handlock. When I was with the Queen, she said to me herself that I had, it was true, safe-conduct to come and go, but it was not said when I might go; and they kept me there till I had agreed to things so far against my honour and profit, that I would never perform them while I live. That made me make war, and if it were to do again I would do it. My ancestors were kings of Ulster; and Ulster is mine, and shall be mine. O'Donnell shall never come into his country, nor

Bagenal into Newry, nor Kildare into Dundrum or Lecale. They are now mine. With this sword I won them ; with this sword I will keep them.'

'My Lord,' Sidney wrote to Leicester, 'no Attila nor Totila, no Vandal or Goth that ever was, was more to be doubted for overrunning any part of Christendom than this man is for overrunning and spoiling of Ireland. If it be an angel of heaven that will say that ever O'Neil will be a good subject till he be thoroughly chastised, believe him not, but think him a spirit of error. Surely if the Queen do not chastise him in Ulster, he will chase all hers out of Ireland. Her Majesty must make up her mind to the expense, and chastise this cannibal. She must send money in such sort as I may pay the garrison throughout. The present soldiers, who are idle, treacherous, and incorrigible, must be changed. Better have no soldiers than those that are here now—and the wages must be paid. It must be done at last, and to do it at once will be a saving in the end. My dear Lord, press these things on the Queen. If I have not money, and O'Neil make war, I will not promise to encounter with him till he come to Dublin. Give me money, and though I have but five hundred to his four thousand, I will chase him out of the Pale in forty-eight hours. If I may not have it, for the love you bear me have me home again. I have great confidence in Lord Kildare. As to Sussex and Arnold, it is true that all things are in disorder and decay ; but the fault was not with them—impute it to the iniquity of the times. These

malicious people so hated Sussex as to ruin him they would have ruined all. Arnold has done well and faithfully; and Kildare very well. Remember this, and if possible let him have the next garter that is vacant.’¹

To the long letter to his brother-in-law, Sidney added a few words equally anxious and earnest to Cecil. ‘Ireland,’ he said, ‘would be no small loss to the English Crown, and it was never so like to be lost as now. O’Neil has already all Ulster, and if the French were so eager about Calais, think what the Irish are to recover their whole island. I love no wars; but I had rather die than Ireland should be lost in my government.’²

Evidently, notwithstanding all his urgency before he left England, notwithstanding the promises which he extracted from Elizabeth, the treasury doors were still locked. Months had passed; arrears had continued to grow; the troops had become more disorganized than ever, and the summer was coming, which would bring O’Neil and his galloglasse into the Pale, while the one indispensable step was still untaken which must precede all preparations to meet him. Nor did these most pressing letters work any speedy change.

March went by and April came; and the
April. smacks from Holyhead sailed up the Liffey, but they brought no money for Sidney and no despatches. At length, unable to bear his suspense and

¹ Sidney to Leicester, March 5 (condensed): *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Sidney to Cecil, March, 1566: *MS. Ibid.*

disappointment longer, he wrote again to Leicester :—

‘ My Lord, if I be not speedier advertised of her Highness’s pleasure than hitherto I have been, all will come to naught here, and before God and the world I will lay the fault on England, for there is none here By force or by fair means the Queen may have anything that she will in this country if she will minister means accordingly, and with no great charge. If she will resolve of nothing, for her Majesty’s advantage and for the benefit of this miserable country, persuade her Highness to withdraw me, and pay and discharge this garrison. As I am, and as this garrison is paid, I undo myself; the country is spoiled by the soldiers, and in no point defended. Help it, my Lord, for the honour of God one way or the other.’¹

Two days later a London post came in, and with it letters from the council. The help would have been sent long since had it rested with them. On the receipt of his first letter, they had agreed unanimously that every wish should be complied with. Money, troops, discretionary power—all should have been his—‘so much was every man’s mind inclined to the extirpation of that proud rebel, Shan.’ The Munster council, which had hung fire also, should have been set on foot without a day’s delay; and Sir Warham St Leger, according to Sidney’s recommendation, would have been appointed the first President. Elizabeth only had fallen into one of her periodic fits of ill-humour and irresolution, and

¹ Sidney to Leicester, April 13: *Irish MSS. Roll’s House*.

would neither consent nor refuse. She had not questioned the justice of Sidney's report; she was 'heated and provoked with the monster' who was the cause of so much difficulty. Yet to ask her for money was to ask her for her heart's blood. 'Your lordship's experience of negotiation here in such affairs with her Majesty,' wrote Cecil, 'can move you to bear patiently some storms in the expedition;' 'the charge was the hindrance;' and while she could not deny that it was necessary, she could not forgive the plainness with which the necessity had been forced upon her.

She quarrelled in detail with everything which Sidney did; she disapproved of the Munster council because Ireland could not pay for it; and it was useless to tell her that Ireland must be first brought into obedience. She was irritated because Sidney, unable to see with sufficient plainness the faults of Desmond and the exclusive virtues of Ormond, had refused to adjudicate without the help of English lawyers, in a quarrel which he did not understand. She disapproved of Sir Warham St Leger because his father Sir Anthony had been on bad terms with the father of Ormond; she insisted that Sidney should show favour to Ormond, 'in memory of his education with that holy young Solomon King Edward;'¹ and she complained bitterly of the employment of Stukely.

It was not till April was far advanced that the

¹ Cecil to Sidney, March 27: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

council forced her by repeated importunities to consent that 'Shan should be extirpated;' and even then she would send only half of what was wanted to pay the arrears of the troops. 'Considering the great sums of money demanded and required of her in Ireland and elsewhere, she would be most glad that for reformation of the rebel any other way might be devised,' and she affronted the Deputy by sending Sir Francis Knowles to control his expenditure. If force could not be dispensed with, Sir Francis might devise an economical campaign. 'The cost of levying troops in England was four times as great as it used to be;' and it would be enough, she thought, if five or six hundred men were employed for a few weeks in the summer. O'Donnell, O'Reilly, and M'Guyre might be restored to their castles, and they could then be disbanded.¹ Such, at least, was her own opinion; should those however who had better means of knowing the truth conclude that the war so conducted would be barren of result, she agreed with a sigh that they must have their way. She desired only that the cost might be as small as possible; 'the fortification of Berwick and the payment of our foreign debts falling very heavily on her.'²

Such was ever Elizabeth's character. She had received the crown encumbered with a debt which with self-denying thrift she was laboriously reducing, and she

¹ Instructions to Sir F. Knowles. By the Queen, April 18: *Irish MSS Rolls House*.

² *Ibid*.

had her own reasons for disliking over-frequent sessions of Parliament. At the last extremity she would yield usually to what the public service demanded, but she gave with grudging hand and irritated temper; and while she admitted the truth, she quarrelled with those who brought it home to her.

Shan meanwhile was preparing for war. He doubted his ability to overreach Elizabeth any more by words and promises, while the growth of the party of the Queen of Scots, his own connection with her, and the Catholic reaction in England and Scotland, encouraged him to drop even the faint disguise behind which he had affected to shield himself. He mounted brass 'artillery' in Dundrum Castle, and in Lifford at the head of Lough Foyle. The friendship with Argyle grew closer, and another wonderful marriage scheme was in progress for the alliance between the Houses of M'Callum-More and O'Neil. 'The Countess' was to be sent away, and Shan was to marry the widow of James M'Connell whom he had killed—who was another half-sister of Argyle, and whose daughter he had married already and divorced. This business 'was said to be the Earl's practice.'¹ The Irish chiefs, it seemed, three thousand years behind the world, retained the habits and the moralities of the Greek princes in the tale of Troy, when the bride of the slaughtered husband was the willing prize of the conqueror; and when only a rare Andromache was found to envy the fate of a sister

¹ Sidney to the English Council, April 15: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

‘Who had escaped the bed of some victorious lord.’

Aware that Sidney’s first effort would be the restoration of O’Donnell, O’Neil commenced the campaign with a fresh invasion of Tyrconnell, where O’Donnell’s brother still held out for England; he swept round by Lough Erne, swooped on the remaining cattle of M’Guyre, and ‘struck terror and admiration into the Irishry.’¹ Then stretching out his hands for foreign help, he wrote in the style of a king to Charles the Ninth of France.

‘Your Majesty’s father, King Henry, in
times past required the Lords of Ireland to May.
join with him against the heretic Saxon, the enemies of
Almighty God, the enemies of the Holy Church of Rome,
your Majesty’s enemies and mine.² God would not per-
mit that alliance to be completed, notwithstanding the
hatred borne to England by all of Irish blood, until
your Majesty had become King in France, and I was
Lord of Ireland. The time is come however when we
all are confederates in a common bond to drive the in-
vader from our shores; and we now beseech your Ma-
jesty to send us six thousand well-armed men. If you
will grant our request there will soon be no Englishman
left alive among us, and we will be your Majesty’s sub-
jects evermore. Help us, we implore you, to expel the
heretics and schismatics, and to bring back our country
to the holy Roman See.’³

¹ The Bishop of Meath to Sussex, April 27, 1566: WRIGHT, vol. i.

² ‘Vestræ Majestatis et nostræ simul inimicos.’

³ O’Neil to Charles IX. 1566: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

The letter never reached its destination ; it fell into English hands. Yet in the 'tickle' state of Europe and with the progress made by Mary Stuart, French interference was an alarming possibility. More anxious and more disturbed than ever, Elizabeth made Sidney her scapegoat. Lord Sussex, ill repaying Sir Henry's generous palliation of his own shortcomings, envious of the ability of Leicester's brother-in-law, and wishing to escape the charge which he had so well deserved of being the cause of Shan's 'greatness,' whispered in her ear that in times past Sidney had been thought to favour 'that great rebel;' that he had addressed him long before in a letter by the disputed title of 'O'Neil,' and was perhaps his secret ally.

Elizabeth did not seriously believe this preposterous story ; but it suited her humour to listen to a suspicion which she could catch at as an excuse for economy. The preparations for war were suspended, and instead of receiving supplies, Sidney learnt only that the Queen had spoken unworthy words of him.

Sidney's blood was hot ; he was made of bad materials for a courtier. He wrote at once to Elizabeth herself, 'declaring his special grief at hearing that he was fallen from her favour,' and 'that she had given credit to that improbable slander raised upon him by the Earl of Sussex.' He wrote to the council, entreating them not to allow these idle stories to relax their energies in suppressing the rebellion ; but he begged them at the same time to consider his own 'unaptness to reside any longer in Ireland, or to be an actor in the war.' The words

which the Queen had used of him were gone abroad in the world. 'He could find no obedience.' 'His credit being gone, his power to be of service was gone also.' He therefore demanded his immediate recall 'that he might preserve the small remnant of his patrimony already much diminished by his coming to Ireland.' As for the charge brought against him by the Earl of Sussex, he would reply with his sword and body 'against an accusation concealed hitherto he knew not with what duty, and uttered at last with impudency and unshamefastness.'¹

But Elizabeth meant nothing less than to recall Sidney. She neither distrusted his loyalty nor questioned his talents; she chose merely to find fault with him while she made use of his services. It was her habit towards those among her subjects whom she particularly valued. Sir Francis Knowles when he arrived at Dublin could report only that Sidney had gained the love and the admiration of every one; and that his plan for proceeding against O'Neil was the first which had ever promised real success. Campaigns in Ireland had hitherto been no more than summer forays—mere inroads of devastation during the few dry weeks of August and September. Sidney proposed to commence at the end of the harvest, when the corn was gathered in, and could either be seized or destroyed; and to keep the field through the winter and spring. It would be expensive; but money well laid out was the best economy in the

¹ Sidney to the English Council, May 18: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

end, and Sidney undertook, if he was allowed as many men as he thought requisite, and was not interfered with, 'to subdue, kill, or expel Shan, and reduce Ulster to as good order as any part of Ireland.'¹

At first Elizabeth would not hear of it; she would not ruin herself for any such harebrained madness. The Deputy must defend the Pale through the summer, and the attack on O'Neil, if attempted at all, should be delayed till the spring ensuing. But Sir Francis, who was sent to prevent expense, was the foremost to insist on the necessity of it. He explained that in the cold Irish springs the fields were bare, the cattle were lean, and the weather was so uncertain, that neither man nor horse could bear it; whereas in August food everywhere was abundant, and the soldiers would have time to become hardened to their work. They could winter somewhere on the Bann, harry Tyrone night and day without remission, and so break Shan to the ground and ruin him. Two brigantines would accompany the army with supplies, and control the passage between Antrim and the Western Isles; and beyond all, Knowles echoed what Sidney had said before him on the necessity of paying wages to the troops instead of leaving them to pay themselves at the expense of the people. Nothing was really saved, for the debts would have eventually to be paid, and paid with interest—while meanwhile the 'inhabitants of the Pale were growing hostile to the English rule.'²

¹ Sidney to Cecil, April 17: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² Sir F. Knowles to Cecil, May 19: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

The danger to the State could hardly be exaggerated. M'Guyre had come into Dublin, with his last cottage in ashes, and his last cow driven over the hills into Shan's country; Argyle, with the whole disposable force of the Western Isles, was expected in person in Ulster in the summer.

Elizabeth's irritation had been unable to wait till she had received Knowles's letters. She made herself a judge of Sidney's projects; she listened to Sussex who told her that they were wild and impossible. Whether Sussex was right or Sidney was right, she was called upon to spend money; and while she knew that she would have to do it, she continued to delay and make difficulties, and to vex Sidney with her letters.

His temper boiled over again.

'I testify to God, to her Highness, and to June.
you,' he wrote on the 3rd of June to Cecil,
'that all the charge is lost that she is at with this manner of proceeding. O'Neil will be tyrant of all Ireland if he be not speedily withstood. He hath, as I hear, won the rest of O'Donnell's castles; he hath confederated with the Scots; he is now in M'Guyre's country. All this summer he will spend in Connaught; next winter in the English Pale. It may please the Queen to appoint some order for Munster—for it will be a mad Munster in haste else. I will give you all my land in Rutlandshire to get me leave to go into Hungary, and think myself bound to you while I live. I trust there to do my country some honour: here I do neither good to the Queen, to the country, nor myself. I take my

leave in haste, as a thrall forced to live in loathsomeness of life.’¹

The council, finding Sidney’s views accepted and endorsed by Knowles, united to recommend them; a schedule was drawn out of the men, money, and stores which would be required; a thousand of the best troops in Berwick, with eight hundred Irish, was the increase estimated as necessary for the army; and the wages of eighteen hundred men for six months would amount to ten thousand four hundred and eighty pounds. Sixteen thousand pounds was already due to the Irish garrison. The provisions, arms, clothes, and ammunition would cost four thousand five hundred pounds; and four thousand pounds in addition would be wanted for miscellaneous services.²

The reluctance of Elizabeth to engage in an Irish campaign was not diminished by a demand for thirty-four thousand nine hundred pounds. Sussex continued malignant and mischievous, and there was many a Catholic about the Court who secretly wished O’Neil to succeed. ‘The Court,’ wrote Cecil to Sidney, ‘is not free from many troubles—amongst others none worse than emulations, disdains, backbitings, and such like, whereof I see small hope of diminution.’

The Queen at the beginning refused to allow more than six hundred men to be sent from England or more than four hundred to be raised in Ireland. To no purpose Cecil insisted; in vain Leicester challenged Sussex

¹ Sidney to Cecil, June 3. *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² Notes for the army in Ireland, May 30. In Cecil’s hand: *MS. Ibid.*

and implored his mistress to give way. 'Her Majesty was absolutely determined.' The Ormond business had created fresh exasperation. Sir Henry, though admiring and valuing the Earl of Ormond's high qualities, had persisted in declaring himself unable to decide the litigated questions between the house of Butler and the Desmonds. Archbishop Kirwan, the Irish Chancellor, was old and incapable; the Deputy had begged for the assistance of some English lawyers; 'but such evil report had Ireland that no English lawyer would go there.'¹ The Queen flew off from the campaign to the less expensive question. Lawyer or no lawyer, she insisted that judgment should be given in Ormond's favour. She complained that the Deputy was partial to Desmond, and—especially wounding Sidney, whose chief success had been in the equity of his administration, and whose first object had been to check the tyrannical exactions of the Irish noblemen—she required him to make an exception in Ormond's favour, and permit 'coyn and livery,' the most mischievous of all the Irish imposts, to be continued in Kilkenny.

'I am extremely sorry,' Sidney replied to Cecil, when the order reached him; 'I am extremely sorry to receive her Majesty's command to permit the Earl of Ormond to exercise coyn and livery, which have been the curse of this country, and which I hoped to have ended wholly. I would write more, if I did not hope to have my recall by the next east wind. Only weigh what I have said.

¹ Cecil to Sidney, June 16: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

Whatever becomes of me you will have as woeful a business here as you had in Calais if you do not look to it in time.’¹

Elizabeth was not contented till she had written out her passion to Sidney with her own hand. She told him that she disapproved of all that he was doing. If he chose to persist, she would give him half the men that he required, and with those he might do what he could on his own responsibility.² It seemed however that she had relieved her feelings as soon as she had expressed them. A week later she yielded to all that was required of her. Cecil soothed Sidney’s anger with a gracious message;³ Sidney, since she was pleased to have it so, consented to remain and do his duty; and thus, after two months had been consumed in quarrels, the preparations for the war began in earnest.

The troops from England were to go direct to Lough Foyle; to land at the head of the lake and to move up to Lifford, where they were to entrench themselves and wait for the Deputy, who would advance from the Pale to join them. The command was given to Colonel Edward Randolph, an extremely able officer who had served at Havre; and the men were marched as fast as they could be raised to Bristol, the port from which the expedition was to sail, while Sidney was setting a rare example in Dublin, and spending the time till he could take the field ‘in hearing the people’s causes.’

¹ Sidney to Cecil, June 24: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*

² Elizabeth to Sidney, June 15: *MS. Ibid.*

³ Cecil to Sidney, June 24: *MS. Ibid*

Shan O'Neil finding that no help was to be looked for from France, and that mischief July.
 was seriously intended against him, tried a stroke of treachery. He wrote to Sidney to say that he wished to meet him, and a spot near Dundalk being chosen for a conference, he filled the woods in the neighbourhood with his people and intended to carry off the Deputy as a prize. Sir Henry was too wary to be caught. He came to the Border on the 25th of July; but he came in sufficient strength to defend himself; Shan did not appear, and waiting till Sidney had returned to Dublin, made a sudden attempt on the 29th to seize Dundalk. Young Fitzwilliam, who was in command of the English garrison there, was on the alert. The surprise failed. The Irish tried an assault but were beaten back, and eighteen heads were left behind to grin hideously over the gates. Shan himself drew back into Tyrone: to prevent a second occupation of Armagh Cathedral by an English garrison, he burnt it to the ground; and sent a swift messenger to Desmond to urge him to rise in Munster. 'Now was the time or never to set upon the enemies of Ireland. If Desmond failed or turned against his country, God would avenge it on him.'¹

Had Sidney allowed himself to be forced September.
 into the precipitate decision which Elizabeth had urged upon him, the Geraldines would have made common cause with O'Neil. But so long as the English Government was just, Desmond did not care to carve

¹ Commendation from O'Neil to John of Desmond, September 9: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

a throne for a Celtic chief; he replied with sending an offer to the Deputy 'to go against the rebel with all his power.' Still more opportunely the Earl of Murray at the last moment detached Argyle from the pernicious and monstrous alliance into which he had been led by his vindictiveness against Elizabeth. The Scots of the Isles, freed from the commands of their feudal sovereign, resumed their old attitude of fear and hatred. Shan offered them all Antrim to join him, all the cattle in the country and the release of Surlyboy from captivity; but Antrim and its cattle they believed that they could recover for themselves, and James M'Connell had left a brother Allaster who was watching with eager eyes for an opportunity to revenge the death of his kinsman and the dishonour with which Shan had stained his race.

The Scots, though still few in number, hung as a cloud over the north-east. Dropping boat-loads of Highlanders from the Isles were guided to the coast by the beacon-fires which blazed nightly over the giant columns of Fairhead. Allaster M'Connell offered his services to Sidney as soon as the game should begin; and Shan, after all, instead of conquering Ireland might have enough to do to hold his own. The weather was unfavourable and the summer was wet and wild with westerly gales. Sir Edward Horsey, who was sent with money from London, was detained half August at Holyhead; Colonel Randolph and his thousand men were chafing for thirty days at Bristol, 'fearing that their enemies the winds would let them that they should not

help Shan to gather his harvest ;¹ and Sidney as from time to time some fresh ungracious letter came from Elizabeth would break into a rage again and press Cecil 'for his recall from that accursed country.'² Otherwise however the prospects grew brighter with the autumn. In the second week in September the Bristol transports were seen passing into the North Channel with a leading breeze. Horsey came over with the money ; the troops of the Pale with the long due arrears paid up were ordered to Drogheda ; and on the 17th, assured that by that time Randolph was in Lough Foyle, the Deputy, accompanied by Kildare, the old O'Donnell, Shan M'Guyre, and another dispossessed chief O'Dogherty, took the field.

Passing Armagh, which they found a mere heap of blackened stones, they reached the Blackwater on the 23rd. On an island in a lake near the river there stood one of those many robber castles which lend in their ruin such romantic beauty to the inland waters of Ireland. Report said that within its walls Shan had stored much of his treasure, and the troops were eager to take it. Sidney selected from among the many volunteers such only as were able to swim, and a bridge was extemporized with brushwood floated upon barrels. The army was without artillery ; it had been found impracticable to carry a single cannon over roadless bog and mountain, and the storming party started with hand-

¹ Edward Randolph to Cecil from Bristol, September 3 : *Irish MSS Rolls House*.

² Sidney to Cecil, September 10 : *MS. Ibid.*

grenades to throw over the walls. The bridge proved too slight for its work ; slipping and splashing through the water the men got over, but their ' fireworks ' were wetted in the passage and they found themselves at the foot of thirty feet of solid masonry without ladders and with no weapons but their bows and battle-axes. ' The place was better defended and more strongly fortified ' than Sidney had supposed. Several of the English were killed and many more were wounded ; and the Deputy had the prudence to waste no more valuable lives or equally valuable days upon an enterprise which when accomplished would be barren of result. On the 24th the army crossed the river into Shan's own country. The Irish hung on their skirts but did not venture to molest them, and they marched without obstruction to Benbrook, one of O'Neil's best and largest houses, which they found ' utterly burnt and razed to the ground.' From Benbrook they went on towards Clogher, through pleasant fields and villages ' so well inhabited as no Irish county in the realm was like it : ' it was the very park or preserve into which the plunder of Ulster had been gathered ; where the people enjoyed the profits of unlimited pillage from which till then they had been themselves exempt. The Bishop of Clogher was a ' rebel,' and was out with Shan in the field ; his well-fattened flock were devoured by Sidney's men as by a flight of Egyptian locusts. ' There we stayed,' said Sidney, ' to destroy the corn ; we burned the country for twenty-four miles' compass, and we found by experience that now was the time of the year to do the rebel most hurt.'

Here died M'Guyre at the monastery of Omagh within sight of the home to which he was returning by the pleasant shores of Lough Erne. Here too the Earl of Kildare nearly escaped being taken prisoner: he was surprised with a small party in a wood, attacked with 'harquebusses and Scottish arrows,' and hardly cut his way through.

Detained longer than he intended by foul weather, Sidney broke up from Omagh on the October. 2nd of October, crossed 'the dangerous and swift river there,' 'and rested that night on a neck of land near a broken castle of Tirlogh Lenogh, called the Salmon Castle.' On the 3rd he was over the Derry, and by the evening he had reached Lifford, where he expected to find Randolph and the English army.

At Lifford however no English were to be discovered, but only news of them.

Randolph, to whose discretion the ultimate choice of his quarters had been committed, had been struck as he came up Lough Foyle with the situation of Derry. Nothing then stood on the site of the present city save a decrepit and deserted monastery of Augustine monks, which was said to have been built in the time of St Columba; but the eye of the English commander saw in the form of the ground, in the magnificent lake, and the splendid tide river, a site for the foundation of a powerful colony suited alike for a military station and a commercial and agricultural town. There therefore Colonel Randolph had landed his men, and there Sidney joined him, and after a careful survey entirely

approved his judgment. The monastery with a few sheds attached to it provided shelter. The English troops had not been idle, and had already entrenched themselves 'in a very warlike manner.' O'Donnell, O'Dogherty, and the other friends of England 'agreed all of them that it was the very best spot in the northern counties to build a city.'

At all events for present purposes the northern force was to remain there during the winter. Sidney stayed a few days at Derry, and then leaving Randolph with 650 men, 350 pioneers, and provisions for two months, continued his own march. His object was to replace O'Donnell in possession of his own country and castles, restore O'Dogherty and the other chiefs and commit them to the protection of Randolph, while he himself would sweep through the whole northern province, encourage the loyal clans to return to their allegiance, and show the people generally that there was no part of Ireland to which the arm of the Deputy could not reach to reward the faithful and punish the rebellious.

Donegal was his next point after leaving Lough Foyle—once a thriving town inhabited by English colonists—at the time of Sidney's arrival a pile of ruins, in the midst of which, like a wild beast's den strewn round with mangled bones, rose 'the largest and strongest castle which he had seen in Ireland.' It was held by one of O'Donnell's kinsmen, to whom Shan—to attach him to his cause—had given his sister for a wife. At the appearance of the old chief with the English army it was immediately surrendered. O'Don-

nell was at last rewarded for his fidelity and sufferings, and the whole tribe with eager protestations of allegiance gave sureties for their future loyalty.

Leaving O'Donnell in possession, and scarcely pausing to rest his troops, Sidney again went forward. On the 19th he was at Ballyshannon; on the 22nd at Sligo; on the 24th he passed over the bogs and mountains of Mayo into Roscommon; and then, 'leaving behind them as fruitful a country as was in England or Ireland all utterly waste,' the army turned their faces homewards, waded the Shannon at Athlone for lack of a bridge on the 26th, and so back to the Pale. Twenty castles had been taken as they went along, and left in hands that could be trusted. 'In all that long and painful journey,' Sidney was able to say that 'there had not died of sickness but three persons;' men and horses were brought back in full health and strength, while 'her Majesty's honour was re-established among the Irishry and grown to no small veneration'¹—an expedition 'comparable only to Alexander's journey into Bactria,' wrote an admirer of Sidney to Cecil—revealing what to Irish eyes appeared the magnitude of the difficulty, and forming a measure of the effect which it produced. The English Deputy had bearded Shan in his stronghold, burnt his houses, pillaged his people, and had fastened a body of police in the midst of them to keep them waking in the winter nights. He had penetrated the hitherto impregnable fortresses of moun-

¹ Sir H. Sidney and the Earl of Kildare to Elizabeth, November 12: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

tain and morass. The Irish, who had been faithful to England, were again in safe possession of their lands and homes. The weakest, maddest, and wildest Celts were made aware that when the English were once roused to effort, they could crush them as the lion crushes the jackal.

Meantime Lord Ormond had carried his complaints to London, and the letter which Sidney found waiting his return was not what a successful commander might have expected from his sovereign. Before he started he had repeated his refusal to determine a cause which he did not understand without the help of lawyers. There was no one in Ireland of whom he thought more highly than of Lord Ormond; there was none that he would more gladly help; but disputed and complicated titles to estates were questions which he was unable to enter into. He could do nothing till the cause had been properly heard; and in the existing humour of the country it would have been mere madness to have led Desmond to doubt the equity of the English Government. But Sidney's modest and firm defence found no favour with Elizabeth. While he was absent in the North, she wrote to Sir Edward Horsey desiring him to tell the Deputy that she was ill satisfied with his proceedings; he had allowed himself to be guided by Irish advisers; he had been partial to Desmond; 'he that had least deserved favour had been most borne withal.' While, in fact, he had done more for Ireland in the eight months of his government than any English ruler since Sir Edward Bellingham, the Queen insisted that he had attended to none of her wishes and

had occupied himself wholly with matters of no importance.

Most likely she did not believe what she said; but Sidney was costing her money and she relieved herself by finding fault.

‘My good Lord,’ Cecil was obliged to write to him to prevent an explosion, ‘next to my most hearty commendations I do with all my heart condole and take part of sorrow to see your burden of government so great, and your comfort from hence so uncertain. I feel by myself—being also here wrapped in miseries, and tossed, with my small vessel of wit and means, in a sea swelling with storms of envy, malice, disdain, and suspicion—what discomfort they commonly have that mean to deserve best of their country. And though I confess myself unable to give you advice, and being almost desperate myself of well-doing, yet for the present I think it best for you to run still an even course in government, with indifferency in case of justice to all persons, and in case of favour, to let them which do well find their comfort by you; and in other causes in your choice to prefer them whom you find the Prince most disposed to have favoured. My Lord of Ormond doth take this commodity by being here to declare his own griefs; I see the Queen’s Majesty so much misliking of the Earl of Desmond as surely I think it needful for you to be very circumspect in ordering of the complaints exhibited against him.’¹

¹ Cecil to Sidney, October 20: *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

It must be admitted that Elizabeth's letter to Horsey was written at the crisis of the succession quarrel in Parliament, and that her not unprovoked ill-humour was merely venting itself upon the first object which came across her: nor had she at that time heard of Sidney's successes in Ulster, and probably she despaired of ever hearing of successes. Yet when she did hear, the tone of her letters was scarcely altered; she alluded to his services only to reiterate her complaints; and she would not have gone through the form of thanking him, had not Cecil inserted a few words of acknowledgment in the draft of her despatch.¹ Sidney's patience was exhausted. Copies of the Queen's disparaging letters were circulated privately in Dublin, obtained he knew not how, but with fatal effect upon his influence. He had borne Elizabeth's caprices long enough. 'For God's sake,' he wrote angrily on the 15th of November in answer to Cecil's letter, November. 'for God's sake get my recall; the people here know what the Queen thinks of me, and I can do no good.'²

From these unprofitable bickerings the story must return to Colonel Randolph and the garrison of Derry. For some weeks after Sidney's departure all had gone on prosperously. The country people, though well paid for everything, were slow to bring in provisions; the bread ran short; and the men had been sent out poorly pro-

¹ The words 'for which we are bound to thank you' are inserted in Cecil's hand.—The Queen to Sidney, November, 1566.

² *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

vided with shoes or tools or clothes. But foraging parties drove in sufficient beef to keep them in fresh meat. Randolph, who seems to have been a man of fine foresight, had sent to the English Pale for a supply of forage before the winter set in; he had written to England 'for shirts, kerseys, canvas, and leather;' he kept Cecil constantly informed of the welfare and wants of the troops;¹ and for some time they were healthy and in high spirits, and either worked steadily at the fortress or were doing good service in the field.

While Sidney was in Connaught, Shan, who had followed him to Lifford, turned back upon the Pale, expecting to find it undefended. He was encountered by Sir Warham St Leger, lost two hundred men, and was at first hunted back over the Border. He again returned however with 'a main army,' burnt several villages, and in a second fight with St Leger was more successful; the English were obliged to retire 'for lack of more aid;' but they held together in good order, and Shan with the Derry garrison in his rear durst not follow far from home in pursuit. Before he could revenge himself on Sidney, before he could stir against the Scots, before he could strike a blow at O'Donnell, he must pluck out the barbed dart which was fastened in his unguarded side.

Knowing that he would find it no easy task, he was hovering cautiously in the neighbourhood of Lough Foyle, when Randolph fell upon him by surprise on the 12th of November. The O'Neils fled after a short, sharp

¹ Edward Randolph to Cecil, October 27: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

action. O'Dogherty with his Irish horse chased the flying crowd, killing every man he caught, and Shan recovered himself to find he had lost four hundred men of the bravest of his followers. More fatal overthrow neither he nor any other Irish chief had yet received at English hands. But the success was dearly bought ; Colonel Randolph himself leading the pursuit was struck by a random shot and fell dead from his horse. The Irish had fortunately suffered too severely to profit by his loss. Shan's motley army, held together as it was by the hope of easily-bought plunder, scattered when the service became dangerous. Sidney, allowing him no rest, struck in again beyond Dundalk, burning his farms and capturing his castles.¹ The Scots came in over the Bann, wasting the country all along the river side. Allaster M'Connell, like some chief of Sioux Indians, sent to the Captain of Knockfergus an account of the cattle that he had driven, and 'the wives and bairns' that he had slain.² Like swarms of angry hornets these avenging savages drove their stings into the now maddened and desperate Shan, on every point where they could fasten ; while in December the old O'Donnell came out
December. over the mountains from Donegal, and paid back O'Neil with interest for his stolen wife, his pillaged country, and his own long imprisonment and exile. The tide of fortune had turned too late for his own revenge :

¹ Sidney to the Lords of the Council, December 12 : *Irish MSS. Rolls House*.

² Allaster M'Connell to the Captain of Knockfergus ; enclosed in a letter of R. Piers to Sir H. Sidney, December 15 : *MS. Ibid.*

worn out with his long sufferings he fell from his horse at the head of his people with the stroke of death upon him ; but before he died he called his kinsmen about him and prayed them to be true to England and their Queen, and Hugh O'Donnell, who succeeded to his father's command, went straight to Derry and swore allegiance to the English Crown.

Tyrone was now smitten in all its borders. Magennis was the last powerful chief who still adhered to Shan's fortunes ; the last week in the year Sidney carried fire and sword through his country and left him not a hoof remaining. It was to no purpose that Shan, bewildered by the rapidity with which disasters were piling themselves upon him, cried out now for pardon and peace, the Deputy would not answer his letter, and 'nothing was talked of but his extirpation by war only.'¹

A singular tragedy interrupted for a time the tide of English success, although the first blows had been struck by so strong a hand that Shan could not rally from them. The death of Randolph had left the garrison at Derry as—in the words of one of them—a headless people.² Food and clothing fell short, and there was no longer foresight to anticipate or authority to remedy the common wants of troops on active service. Sickness set in. By the middle of November 'the flux was reigning among them wonderfully.'³ Strong men soon after were struck suddenly dead by a mysterious disorder

¹ Sidney to the English Council, January 18: *Irish MSS. Rolls Houst.*

² Geoffrey Vaughan to Admiral Winter, December 18: *MS. Ibid.*

³ Wilfred to Cecil, November 15: *MS. Ibid.*

which no medicine would cure and no precaution would prevent. It appeared at last that either in ignorance or carelessness they had built their sleeping quarters over the burial-ground of the Abbey, and the clammy vapour had stolen into their lungs and poisoned them. As soon as their distress was known, supplies in abundance were sent from England; but the vices of modern administration had already infected the public service, and a cargo of meal destined for the garrison of Derry went astray to Florida. No subordinate officer ventured to take the vacant command. 'Many of our best men,' Captain Vaughan wrote a few days before Christmas, 'go away because there is none to stay them; many have died; God comfort us!'¹

1567. Colonel St Loo came at last in the beginning February. of the new year. The pestilence for a time abated, and the spirits of the men revived. St Loo, to quicken their blood, let them at once into the enemy's country; they returned after a foray of a few days driving before them seven hundred horses and a thousand cattle;² and the Colonel wrote to Sidney to say that with three hundred additional men 'he could so hunt the rebel that ere May was past he should not show his face in Ulster.'

Harder pressed than ever, Shan O'Neil, about the time when the Queen of Scots was bringing her matri-

¹ Vaughan to Winter, December 18: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² St Loo in his despatch says 10,000. He must have added one cipher at least.—St Loo to Sidney, February 8: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

³ *Ibid.*

monial difficulties to their last settlement, made one more effort to gain allies in France. This time he wrote, not to the King, but to the Cardinals of Lorraine and Guise, imploring them, in the name of their great brother the Duke, who had raised the cross out of the dust where the unbelieving Huguenots were trampling it, to bring the fleur-de-lys to the rescue of Ireland from the grasp of the ungodly English. 'Help us!' he cried, blending—Irish like—flattery with entreaty. 'When I was in England I saw your noble brother the Marquis d'Elbœuf transfix two stags with a single arrow. If the Most Christian King will not help us, move the Pope to help us. I alone in this land sustain his cause.'¹

As the ship laboured in the gale the unprofitable cargo was thrown overboard. Terence Daniel, relieved of his crozier, went back to his place among the troopers; Creagh was accepted in his place, and taken into confidence and into Shan's household; all was done to deserve favour in earth and heaven, but all was useless. The Pope sat silent, or muttering his anathemas with bated breath; the Guises had too much work on hand at home to heed the Irish wolf, whom the English having in vain attempted to trap or poison, were driving to bay with more lawful weapons.

Success or failure however was alike to the doomed garrison of Derry. The black ^{March.} death came back among them after a brief respite, and to the reeking vapour of the charnel-house it was indif-

¹ Shan O'Neil to the Cardinals of Lorraine and Guise, 1567: *MS.* Ibid

ferent whether its victims returned in triumph from a stricken field, or were cooped within their walls by hordes of savage enemies. By the middle of March there were left out of eleven hundred men but three hundred available to fight. Reinforcements had been raised at Liverpool, but they were countermanded when on the point of sailing: it was thought idle to send them to inevitable death. The English council was discussing the propriety of removing the colony to the Bann, when accident finished the work which the plague had begun, and spared them the trouble of deliberation. The huts and sheds round the monastery had been huddled together for the convenience of fortification. At the end of April, probably after a drying east wind, a fire broke out in a blacksmith's forge, which spread irresistibly through the entire range of buildings. The flames at last reached the powder magazine; thirty men were blown in pieces by the explosion; and the rest, paralyzed by this last addition to their misfortunes, made no more effort to extinguish the conflagration. St Loo, with all that remained of that ill-fated party, watched from their provision boats in the river the utter destruction of the settlement which had begun so happily, and then sailed drearily away to find a refuge in Knockfergus.

Such was the fate of the first effort for the building of Londonderry; and below its later glories, as so often happens in this world, lay the bones of many a hundred gallant men who lost their lives in laying its foundations. Elizabeth, who in the immediate pressure of calamity resumed at once her nobler nature, 'perceiv-

ing the misfortune not to come of treason but of God's ordinance, bore it well ;' 'she was willing to do that which should be wanting to repair the loss ;'¹ and Cecil was able to write cheerfully to Sidney, telling him to make the best of the accident, and let it stimulate him to fresh exertions.²

Happily the essential work had been done already, and the ruin of Derry came too late to profit Shan. His own people, divided and dispirited, were mutinying against a leader who no longer commanded success. In May a joint movement was concerted between Sidney and the O'Donnells, and while the Deputy with the light horse of the Pale overran Tyrone and carried off three thousand cattle, Hugh O'Donnell came down on Shan on the river which runs into Lough Foyle. The spot where the supremacy of Ulster was snatched decisively from the ambition of the O'Neils, is called in the despatches Gaviston. The situation is now difficult to identify. It was somewhere perhaps between Lifford and Londonderry, on the west side of the river

Conscious that he was playing his last card, Shan had gathered together the whole of his remaining force, and had still nearly three thousand men with him. The O'Donnells were fewer in number ; but victory, as generally happens, followed the tide in which events were setting. After a brief fight the O'Neils broke and fled ; the enemy was behind them, the river was in front ; and when the Irish battle-cries had died away over moor and

¹ Cecil to Leicester, May, 1567 : *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

² 'Et contra audentior ito.'—Cecil to Sidney, May 13 : *MS. Ibid.*

mountain, but two hundred survived of those fierce troopers who were to have cleared Ireland for ever from the presence of the Saxons. For the rest, the wolves were snarling over their bodies, and the sea-gulls wheeling over them with scream and cry as they floated down to their last resting-place beneath the quiet waters of Lough Foyle. Shan's 'foster-brethren,' faithful to the last, were all killed; he himself, with half a dozen comrades, rode for his life, pursued by the avenging furies; his first desperate intention was to throw himself at Sidney's feet, with a slave's collar upon his neck; but his secretary, Neil M'Kevin, persuaded him that his cause was not yet absolutely without hope.

Surlyboy was still a prisoner in the castle at Lough Neagh; 'the Countess of Argyle' had remained with her ravisher through his shifting fortunes, had continued to bear him children, and notwithstanding his many infidelities, was still attached to him. M'Kevin told him that for their sakes, or at their intercession, he might find shelter and perhaps help among the kindred of the M'Connells.¹

In the far extremity of Antrim, beside the falls of Isnaleara, where the black valley of Glenariff opens out into Red Bay, sheltered among the hills and close upon the sea, lay the camp of Allaster M'Connell and his nephew Gillespie. Here on Saturday, the last of May, appeared Shan O'Neil, with M'Kevin and some fifty men. He had brought the Countess and his prisoner as

¹ Attainder of Shan O'Neil: *Irish Statute Book*, 11 Elizabeth.

peace offerings : he alighted at Allaster's tent, and threw himself on his hospitality ; and though the blood of the M'Connells was fresh on his hands he was received ' with dissembled gratulatory words.' The feud seemed to be buried in the restoration of Surlyboy ; an alliance was again talked of, and for two days all went well. But the death of their leaders in the field was not the only wrong which Shan had offered to the Western Islanders : he had divorced James M'Connell's daughter ; he had kept a high-born Scottish lady with him as his mistress ; and last of all, after killing M'Connell, he had asked Argyle to give him M'Connell's widow for a wife. The lady herself, to escape the dishonour, had remained in concealment in Edinburgh ; but the mention of it had been taken as a mortal insult by her family.

The third evening, Monday the 2nd of June.
June, after supper, when the wine and the whisky had gone freely round, and the blood in Shan's veins had warmed again, Gillespie M'Connell, who had watched him from the first with an ill-boding eye, turned round upon M'Kevin and asked scornfully ' whether it was he who had bruited abroad that the lady his aunt did offer to come from Scotland to Ireland to marry with his master ? '

M'Kevin, meeting scorn with scorn, said ' that if his aunt was Queen of Scotland she might be proud to match the O'Neil.'

' It is false ! ' the fierce Scot shouted ; ' my aunt is too honest a woman to match with her husband's murderer.'

Shan, who was perhaps drunk, heard the words and forgetting where he was, flung back the lie in Gillespie's throat. Gillespie sprung to his feet, ran out of the tent, and raised the slogan of the Isles. A hundred dirks flashed into the moonlight, and the Irish wherever they could be found were struck down and stabbed. Some two or three found their horses and escaped; all the rest were murdered; and Shan himself, gashed with fifty wounds, was 'wrapped in a kern's old shirt' and flung into a pit dug hastily among the ruined arches of Glenarm.

Even there what was left of him was not allowed to rest; four days later Piers, the captain of Knockfergus, hacked the head from the body, and carried it on a spear's point through Drogheda to Dublin, where staked upon a spike it bleached on the battlements of the castle, a symbol to the Irish world of the fate of Celtic heroes.¹

So died Shan O'Neil, one of those champions of Irish nationality, who under varying features have repeated themselves in the history of that country with periodic regularity. At once a drunken ruffian and a keen and fiery patriot, the representative in his birth of the line of the ancient kings, the ideal in his character of all which Irishmen most admired, regardless in his actions of the laws of God and man, yet the devoted subject in his creed of the Holy Catholic Church; with an eye

¹ Sir William Fitzwilliam to Cecil, June 10: *Irish MSS. Rolls House.*

which could see far beyond the limits of his own island, and a tongue which could touch the most passionate chords of the Irish heart ; the like of him has been seen many times in that island, and the like of him may be seen many times again, 'till the Ethiopian has changed his skin and the leopard his spots.'

Many of his letters remain, to the Queen, to Sussex, to Sidney, to Cecil, and to foreign princes ; far-reaching, full of pleasant flattery and promises which cost him nothing ; but showing true ability and insight. Sinner though he was, he too in his turn was sinned against ; in the stained page of Irish misrule there is no second instance in which an English ruler stooped to treachery or to the infamy of attempted assassination ; and it is not to be forgotten that Lord Sussex, who has left under his own hand the evidence of his own baseness, continued a trusted and favoured councillor of Elizabeth, while Sidney, who fought Shan and conquered him in the open field, found only suspicion and hard words.

How just Sidney's calculations had been, how ably his plans were conceived, how bravely they were carried out, was proved by their entire success, notwithstanding the unforeseen and unlikely calamity at Londonderry. In one season Ireland was reduced for the first time to universal peace and submission. While the world was full of Sidney's praises Elizabeth persevered in writing letters to him which Cecil in his own name and the name of the council was obliged to disclaim. But

at last the Queen too became gradually gracious ; she condescended to acknowledge that he had recovered Ireland for her crown, and thanked him for his services.

END OF VOL. VII.

